

[12/13, 14:18] Zozaness: The villagegirl an the
playboy: arranged marriage

introduction

- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .

welcome everyone

my name is Nompilo (Teslyn) Nhlapo, i am 16 years of age... i am not in school, due to the fact that i had to drop out to take care of my sick grandmother, my grandfather had long passed away.. i have 2 siblings, both girls, Nonhlanhla (Kiara) Nhlapo {12 years} and the other one is mbali (Tione) Nhlapo {10 years}, we live with our grandmother. i left school when i was in

standard 9, grade 11, actually i didnt even go to grade 11, immediatly when i passed grade 10 i never went back to school.

my aunt (Lindiwe nhlapo) does come now and again to check on things, but she comes after a long time, no different from my parents..

i know you wondering "why doesnt your aunt take care of your grandmother?" good question, hope you ask her that.. my aunt never liked my grandmother due to the fact that my grandmother loved my mother more than her, well i knew that because she told us, and she also said that she doesnt like us... we never bothered telling my grandmother, and since she started getting sick, i took responsibility... she always would get angry that am dropping out, but i promised that when she gets better i will go back to school...

the last time i saw mom and dad was when i was 11 years. they had come to drop mbali to stay with us and gogo, then after that they never appeared. they do call and check up on us, but after a long while. the last time they called was 2 weeks ago, wishing

gogo a speady recovery...

about my parents..

my mother's name is sbongile nhlapo and my dad's name is kevin pieterse. yes my father is coloured. i have no idea how my mom got herself a coloured man, but i think it was because she attended varsity in gauteng..

my mom and dad are not married, thats why we still use my mom's surname, but damages were paid (so they say)..

about myself

i am very different from my siblings, more like weired.. i am a little bit tall, i am dark skin, i have greyish eyes (that was caused by the deafect i got from birth), i have very dark black hair, but my hair is very soft, long, and curly.. i think its because my dad is coloured..

i wear reading glasses (my eyes are really weak), i am very thin, sometimes i get questions like "are you sick??" or "do you eat??" like yes i eat and no am not sick, its just how i am.. even tights look like

trackpants.. lol..

now that you know a little about me, lets get into the story....

i hope you all enjoy, and take this journey with me.

[12/13, 14:18] Zozaness: The villagegirl an the playboy: arranged marriage

1

i woke up very early in the morning, at around 4am, as usual.. i took a 20 litre bucket and went to the water hole (sidiba) . i got there and filled my bucket, then i went back home.. i then opened the gas (we use gas stoves), then switched the gas stove on and lit it up with a fire... then i filled our big pot with water and placed it on the heated stove.. then i went back with another bucket for more water, i went 3 times to fill the buckets..

when i was done, i made herbal tea for my grandma and took it to her..

me : gogo, vuka (wake up), i brought you tea..

her : mhm, (coughing), thanks baby..

i gave her the tea and woke up my siblings, it was now around to 5am. we sleep on the floor, in the same room (we live in a 2 room RDP and there is a hut outside and a huge field with trata around), the hut was used by my grandmother and grandfather before he passed away.. ever since he passed away, she has kept the hut locked.....

me : its a pleasure

my siblings woke up and went to bath in the bedroom.. i then went to "thoba" my grannys feet because they were getting swollen..

i then helped her lay again and made everyone one porridge... when i was done i gave my granny her porridge and my siblings ate in the kitchen.. i then washed the dishes and my siblings left... i cleaned the house, swept the field and got done...

i was bathing when i heard a knock on the door.. luckily i had just started so i had just washed my upper body.. i wore a shirt and went to open.. it was my aunt...

me : sanbonani aunt Lindiwe

her : yebo nompilo...

she got in and i immediately put the kettle on and made her tea.. then i also made her bread and butter.. so we only have bread mostly for visitors or for sunday mornings...

i gave her the food and tea...

me : i am going to finish bathing now aunt Lindiwe, granny is in the bedroom..

her : right like i care...

i went to finish bathing then i threw the water out in the toilet. i got dressed in the bathroom and got out wearing my long dress and a doek on my head (dont bite me, my hair is weird, its not like the hair of all the girls in this village. their hair is strong and thick, like how black hair should be. as for me, my hair is thickfluffy, like the indian people just more thicker, i always cut it short so that i can wear my doek because at school other kids used to laugh at me, because of my hair being different and my body being very thin, my eyes being grey and me wearing glasses. plus thats another reason i wanted to drop

out and help my granny. i have asked my granny why i have this kind of hair and she said because my father is coloured, and as for my eyes, its from a defect and thats causing me not to see properly. my siblings also have the same hair, but their hair is straight and more softer then mine, but they also get mocked because of their hair..)

my aunt was still in the kitchen when came out..

i then went to check on my granny..

me : gogo, are you owk

her : (caughing) am owk nana..

me : aunt is in the kitchen..

her : owk.. why d..dont you go pl...pl...play with your friends..

me : gogo, have you forgotten that its a school day, everyone is at school...

her : exept for you.

me : gogo, am going back to school next year i swear..

her : dreams huh..(coughs)

i was confused as why she would think am dreaming about going back to school..

i was about to ask her when my aunt came in the room..

her : nompilo, can i speak to your granny??

me : owk.

i got out and went outside to play "diketo" stone game (lol) were you throw a stone up pick another stone and then catch the stone that you threw up with the one you picked in your hand.. its nice when you play with someone, but i played alone pretending theres someone else..

i played there for a while then i saw some men coming in the house, they were 3 men and one woman.. one of them looked like the king of some place, because he had traditional wear and the woman also had traditional wear so she should be the wife.. the 2 men had black suits..

i ran in the house and called for my granny..

i knocked on the bedroom door because it was closed..

gogo : ngena

me : gogo, theres 3 men and a woman outside.. one men and the woman are wearing traditional wear...

gogo : ohhh no, must be the chief..

aunt : help gogo up and take her to the kitchen bench and i will attend to them..

she went out and i helped gogo out to the kitchen bench..

i found them sitting already and i helped my granny sit then i made tea for everyone and gave them, then i went to play outside..

they were really taking time. after a while my siblings came back...

mbali : nompilo (shouting)

i looked up and it was mbali from the corner..

i smiled and ran to them..

i got there and took their bags..

nonhlanhla : so how was your day sisi

me : like all the other days

mbali : unjani ugogo?

me : shes doing owk..

we got in the yard...

me : oh mbali, nonhlanhla, we cant go in the house..

nonhlanhla : is there visitors??

me : yes..

mbali : owk, i see you were playing "diketo"

me : yah.. alone

they laughed..

nonhlanhla : lets play then, while we wait.. 1st

me & mbali : 2nd, 2nd, 2nd

nonhlanhla : shhh, yall making noise.. i will hide the stone and whoever finds it will be second..

she did just that then came..

nonhlanhla : choose..

mbali : right

me : left

she opened her hands and mbali won..

me : mxm..

she laughed..

we played, then later, the visitors left and we went in the house...

i made porridge again because i couldnt cook pap due to the visitors long stay..

we ate, then i helped my siblings with homework.. then later cooked pap and cabbage then when i was done, i dished up and ate...

nonhlanhla washed the dishes while mbali whiped them and packed them.. then we sat and watched tv.. after few minutes we made the mattresses and made our beds (on the floor) then we played on our blanckets, after a while we all slept...

[12/13, 14:19] Zozaness: 2

3 weeks passed and it was the same routine..

the only difference was that today apparently my parents are coming...

i woke up did the deeds and got done with everything then my siblings and i waited impatiently for my parents..

my granny was not getting any better so mabye thats why they are coming, to help out...

my parents finally arrived and we all ran to them...

we went in the house, i was holding some of my mothers bags and mbali was holding some as well and nonhlanhla was holding dads suitcase...

we went in the house and took the bags in the bedroom...

****GRANNY****

i was slowly getting worse and worse, and it was time i really break the news down to sbongile and kevin...

when my grandkids were done putting the bags in the bedroom i told them to go play outside and they left...

me : sbongile, kevin, please sit...

kevin fetched the bentch in the kitchen and brought it in the bedroom and they sat on it..

her : how u mama??

me : my days are limited, i dreamed about your father yesterday night.. its time i told you the truth..

her : what truth mama??

me : you have a brother

her : i know mama, its bandile and themba

me : no another brother..

her : what?? you mean we are 5 children not 4??

me : yes..

her : huh!! owk... so... where is he??

me : he is here in kzn

her : owk... so how old is he??

me : 37

her : but am 37?? how come??

me : he's your twin brother

her : whattttt?? i have a twin brother??

me : yes..

her : why did you hide him away from us??

me : my father owned a herd of cows and sheeps and goats, so in todays words you would say he was rich.. he had only 4 kids, me, my sister and 2 brothers.. i was the last born... the chief got to know that there was a man who has cows, sheeps and goats, and also learned that he is really making money selling the animals slowly to farmers and milk to stores.. he paid him a visit and requested that he either moves out of the village or pay for the stay of the animals for 3 years, R5 000 a month...you would say that it wasnt much but that time it was really alot.. so he took a week thinking about it and realised that if he agrees, by the time its after 3 years it might happen that he wont have anymore animals or have baby animals whitch will take another 3 years to rebuiled, so he came up with a plan.. he told the chief that he promises to hand his

first daughter to his son and in that way he can use his families connections to his benefit, and be even more respected because everyone will know that he is family with the family that supports agriculture, and that would open doors for him since he is a chief...

her : he agreed??

me : yes... my sister was then born and the chief finally was happy that this is happening.. they waited 21 years for her, in the meantime the word was sent that the chief is family and that he is apart of this family.. so the chief was receiving all that he ever wanted and so did my father, my father got to be given an agricultural company, it was making millions.. i was 16 when my sister was 19, and it was revealed that she was pregnant..the chief was really angry, but was told to relax because i am 5 years away from marriage so they will watch me and take care of me... he agreed..

her : so my father is the chiefs son, and my twin brother was separated to be a chief?? is that it??

me : no.. when i was 16, i met your father, and when i was 18 i became pragnant... i told my dad not thinking it would be a problem.. when i did he became very angry and talked about this being a curse... he later explained everything and i felt really bad.. when the chief heard he told us that if my child is a boy, he is gonna take him to slave for him untill a couple is married from my family and his...

her : so my twin brother is a slave to the chief??

me : yes, but hes a slave to the late chiefs son..

her : does the new chief know??

me : yes, his father told him...

her : so we never gonna see him till he dies, or we die??

me : i have asked to see him, but not as his mother but as someone that knew his mother..

her : what??

me : atleast i will see him, thats what matters.. but theres another thing...

her : yes??

me : all the businesses and moneys of my father will be released to us when one of my grandkids or kids marry the new chief or the chiefs son... your sisters disappointed us as well as you.. so we now depend on the grandkids

her : whatt?? so saying grandkids you mean my children??

me : yes, when your grandfather died they were going to take all his moneys and animals as a score settler.. so i told them that they should give us one last chance..

her : but my sisters also have kids moss..

me : they older then the chiefs son, others are boys..

her : mama!!! let them take everything, i will take care of my kids..

me : really, am dying soon, will you take them and let them live with you??

she looked at kevin and back at me..

her : mama you know that i am stamped right now..

me : let nompilo marry the new chiefs son and she

will not lack anything, you will receive your father's monies and take care of the other 2.. you will never lack anything.. plus you get to know your twin brother..

her : mamma, you want me to sell my daughter??

me : not sell your daughter, but give her the life you can't give her...

her : i don't know mama..

me : you better think fast because in 2 weeks they are coming to collect her..

her : haibo, come to collect??

me : yah, they don't want her to be pregnant so they want to marry her before she turns 17..

her : lobola??

me : on the day they collect her..

her : mama mara..

[12/13, 14:21] Zozaness: The village girl and the playboy: arranged marriage

1 week passed..

****sbongile****

i have been thinking about this... i mean i cant take care of my kids, and i cant give them the life the chief is going to give them, so i need to think for them...

i was in the kitchen, kevin was bathing and the kids were playing outside..

kevin got done and sat with me in the kitchen..

him : i swear i feel like i will leave this place..

me : its only one more week then we gone,..

him : so you decided on giving the chief your our daughter??

me : come on kevin, you know that we live on a tight budget and lie about it to our family saying we working hard for the future but you know that we actually working too many jobs to live.. i mean how we gonna take care of the kids when my mother passes on?? you then said that your family wont suport you because you dating a black girl...

him : baby, i told you that i will always fight for you..

me : you think i will be a bad mother to send my baby away??

him : we have already spent too much time without them, nompilo can be much better with them, she will get everything she wants.. if this son treats her like trash then we will be there for her, but i doubt he will..

me : i guess..

him : so when you gonna let her know??

me : now!! we both telling her...

him : what??

me : yes, we only have 1 week left...

him : ****sigh**** right..

me : nompilo!!!!, nompilo!!

she came running in....

her : ma..

me : lets go to mama, theres somthing you must

know...

we took the bench and went to sit in the bedroom..

mama : manje??

me : i agree ma, now its time to tell her..

mama : you serious my child??

me : yes mama..

mama : nompilo?? you know we love you right??

her : yes gogo

mama : my baby we want to give you the best life
owk.

her : owk gogo..

mama : so, the chief is gonna give you the best life
owk??

her : the chief??

me : yes baby, you are going to marry the chiefs son..

her : but am i not too little to get married..??

me : no baby, you actually getting married next week..

her : what about nonhlanhla no mbali?? whos gonna take care of them??

me : we will take care of them, they still in school..

her : i am also going back to school next year mama..

mama : yes, but you going to have a better life.

me : baby, if you miss this marriage you wont ever get married..

her : but i have not seen anyone my age get married before..

me : thats because they dont tell you, you can be married and still go to school and do anything you want..

her : so being married is still like you not married, the only difference is that you are labelled married??

me : yes..

her : but...

mama : no buts baby, you will be fine...

nompilo

so my family really thinks am stupid.. i mean i know what goes down when you married to someone, you bound to have sex with them, you bound to be kissing them.. eww, imagine me and the so called chiefs son in bed making yuk....

so am sitting here listening to all these people, who say they care about me sell me off, i wonder whats in store for them... but i grew up being a respectful girl.. gogo may leave us soon, well she said that herself, and we will be left with our aunt and she wont treat us fair, so i have to be there for my siblings.. cause if i dont, my parents will sell them too..

we have been silent for long now, am sure they wondering what am thinking...

me : can i go play outside??

mom : but baby..

me : thanks mom for finally selling me, thanks dad for saying nothing.. i cant believe we were such burdans to yall.. is that why yall never visit?? this time yall visit and already you came with a price tag

huh??

gogo : nompilo!!

me : no gogo, i went to school everyday, children laughing about how weird my hair looks, how skinny i am, how my eyes are, that i wear glasses, its not owk..

gogo : nompilo, thats not how to talk to us..

me : (crying) sorry gogo, but i have dreams too, i wanna be work on cruise ships, air planes, hotels, restaurants and lodges, gueshouses and all those places..(sniff) mom, dad, did yall know that?? no.. yet you still want to shatter my dreams before they start.. (crying very painful) do yall even love us??

mom : we do nana, we want whats best for yall..

dad : plus all the dreams you have will come true when you have the right people supporting you, and the chief and his family are the right people..

i looked down..

me : may i go play outside gogo??

gogo : owk..

i left..

[12/13, 14:21] Zozaness: The villagegirl an the
playboy: arranged marriage

4

its now time for my lobola nigotiations, and if they
go well i am leaving with them today.. wish i had the
gut to say no, wish i could just dissapear, but i cant...

i sat in the bedroom room as they were busy talking...
i was with mbali and nonhlanhla..

mbali : so you leaving today??

me : yes

mbali : so whos gonna take care of gogo??

me : i dont know baba.

my tears were fighting to rush out but i was keeping
strong.. mbali dropped tears..

mbali : whos going to take care of us??

i looked at her and tears rushed down her cheek and
i also gave in.. we all cried and huged.. after a while
my aunt came..

her : nompilo, come..'

i followed and got to the kitchen, then i was told to bow down and bow my head..

voice : is this umakoti??

dad : yes, this is the golden flower...

voice : thank you....

i was told to go back to the bedroom..

i got in, layed on the bed with my siblings in my arms.. laying in silence, surely they were broken by this sudden go away....

we layed there till the negotiations ended and my aunt fetched me and accompanied me to the car...

i got in the car and looked at my family for the last time...

the car drove of...

there were 3 cars.. 1 was driven by a guared with the chief and the uncles, the other one was the one i was in, it was filled with guards.. and the last on also filled with guards.. so many guards?? jho....

we got to the royal yard, i say yard because there were like 3 houses in that yard... i concluded that the middle house is the chiefs house because it was the biggest house...

we got out of the car and was taken to a house that was the second biggest.. this was amazing.. such big houses?? jho....

i went in and i heard one of the guards calling another guard to tell the chief that his son is not home..

i stood there waiting for instructions...

the guard told me to feel at home as my husband will be here anytime... i placed my bags on the couch and started cleaning... i was used to the cleaning and i loved a clean space..

hours later and still my so called husband is still not around.. i decide to wear my old tights and tshirt to go to sleep.. i took my bags and went to the bedroom, there were 3 bedrooms, they were all big but i took the one which was empty, that didnt have any clothing or anything...

i went in and slept..

later i heard sounds.. it seemed like i was in a wrong house, there was a voice of a woman and a man laughing and talking... i ignored it and went back to sleep...

[12/13, 14:22] Zozaness: 5

i naturally woke up very early in the morning... i got up and wore my long dress, wrapped a doek on my head and wore my snickers, then i wrapped a towel around my waist...i started cleaning... when i was done i went to the kitchen.. i didnt know were the maize meal was so that i can make porridge... then it hit me that yesterday i heard voices, that means i must have been taken to a wrong house...

so i sat down on the coach and waited till someone showed up..

just after a few minutes, i heard voices again.. finally... they came down and saw me sitting on the coach.. i immediatly stood up and looked down when they approached..

her : siyabonga!! whats this thin granny doing here??

him : i dont know... sorry sisi, what you doing here again??

i stayed looking down because firstly i was afraid for them to see my eyes and 2nd i was showing respect..

me : good morning sir, good morning mam.....

her : good morning good morning se foot, what you doing here??

me : i was brought by the chief..

her : to do what??

me : to.....

him : ohhh shes my new maid....

her : lol, maid?? ohhh.. mxm no wonder the house so clean, early in the morning...

him : yah.....

her : great.. bye skinny granny maid take good care of my hubby owk..

i just looked down, never said a word... i felt really bad for crashing in someones house.. i must be looking stupid... mabye this is the brother of my so

called husband..

he took this girl out and later came back...

me : am sorry sir, i didnt know that i was in a wrong house.. the chief directed the guards to bring me here, i didnt.....

him : you in the right house...

me : no sir, you dont understand i.....

him : you were brought here to be the chiefs son's wife right??

me : yes sir..

him : i am the chief's son, my name is siyabonga..

me : sorry to ask sir, but why did you say that i am your maid?? and who is that lady??

him : listen, ohh thats just a friend, we were from a party so she couldnt go home, so i helped her with a place to sleep.. and the reason i said you a maid was because i had asked my father to get me a maid and he said owk..

me : oh owk

him : what are you doing up at 6AM...

me : i had to clean the house sir..

him : and what time did you wake up??

me : i really dont know, i just woke up..

him : what?? you didnt set an alarm to wake you up??

me : no, i dont have an alarm sir..

him : phone??

me : no sir...

him : owk..

me : may i please know where the maiz meal is??

him : for??

me : porridge..

him : LOL.. what??

me : i want to make porridge sir...

him : you must be a real village girl, listen i dont have maiz meal... and i dont eat porridge for breakfast, its eather cereal or english breakfast..

me : ceee...cee

him : CEREAL!!

me : i dont know what that is sir...

him : they always say alot of pap makes one fat, but i cant say the same for you though..

here is it again, people wont just stop making fun of my skinny body.. am glad he cant see my hair, since am wearing a doek or else, and my eyes since am looking down and avoiding eye contact.. i wasnt going to hear the end of it...

i kept quite...

him : why are you looking down, please look at me..

ohhhh no!!

i looked at him and he stared at my eyes, i moved them looking somewere else...

he snapped out of it..

him : are those your eyes or you have contact eyes??

me : my eyes..

him : mhm, owk, listen i know you came here as my wife, so you can forfil your duties, cook, clean, wash and all that owk?

me : yes sir...

he went back to his room...

this is gonna be a hard life... plus i miss my siblings

[12/13, 14:23] Zoaness: The villagegirl an the playboy: arranged marriage

6

so i didnt get to make him breakfast because he made his owk food, as for me i took bread and butter and made tea.. the best thing is that i get to eat bread with butter every day... jho something i never experienced...

its now passed 12pm, i looked at the kitchen clock.. its a good thing that we learned about this clock at school, but never had one at home...

so siyabonga went to his father for some meeting and i was left alone in the house....

i was happy that i would be eating bread again, i

made bread with butter and made tea.. then i sat down and ate.. after eating i went to open the tv and it went blue..

i switched it off and just went to do the laundry.. i washed with my hands.. just when i was about to go out and hang the laundry, i heard someone calling siyabonga, it was a female voice.. i figured its the lady that was here in the morning.. but whats wrong with her voice now?? it burned?

i went to attend to her and i was wrong, it was another lady... haibo is this his ather friend????

as i approached she looked at me..

me : saubona sisi..

her : saubona, can i ask is siyabonga around??

me : he has went to his father, but will be back soon..

her : how soon??

me : i dont know..

her : owk, i shall wait for him.

me : owk, please have a seat.. would you like some

tea??

her : yes, make yourself usefull

me : owk..

i went and made her tea.. i didnt put sugar just the tea bag then i took it out.. i went to her with a tray of the cup with tea, sugar and milk for her to put it for herself.. she did and i took the tray back at the kitchen..

i went back in the bathroom and took all the laundry to go hang them outside...

as i was outside, i saw a guard pulling siyabonga to tell him something.. i bet hes telling him about the lady in the house..

i got done and went in the house.. they were now were to be found..the cup was on the table..i went t wash it then i just sat on the couch and wondered if it would be appropriate for me to go outside look for stones and play the stone game...

later as i was just sitting there really bored, i saw siyabonga coming down with the lady.. they were

laughing.. he took the girl out and came back.. this time i managed to see that he was actually paying the guard in a handshake style to take her out...

kanti isnt he supposed to bring friends to his house?? and siyabonga with female friends, is he gay?? unless siyabonga is actually sleeping with these ladies, that would explain going to his room, why not sit here and chat here?? such behaviour...

i wonder why i got married to this guy who has no respect.. why would my granny and parents marry me to this guy and say that i will be well off... i mean i would rather stay poor with my siblings, laughing and doing anything together other than me marrying some rich man who doesnt even love me ... jho nah...

he came back...

him : didnt you have a tv at your home??

me : i did..

him : so why you not watching it??

me : i dont know how to open it, when i do it becomes blue.

him : ohhh yah, this is a dstv... let me help you..

ohh i shouldv known, i have heard about this dstv before.. how stupid can i be..

he opened the tv for me and showed me how to operate it.. he left it on mzanzi bioskop, i was watching kasi stories so it was great..

later i made dinner... i cooked rice, chicken and some beef stew.. this was my siblings favorit dish.. we had this dish like once in a month and when we do, we would want to repeat ourselves... i so miss my siblings...

after i cooked i went to call him.. i stood at the door of his bedroom...

me : sir!! dinner is ready....

there was no answer...

me : sir?? sir?? sir??

he came out halve naked (no shirt and a towel wrapped around his waist).. i quickly turned around

me : sorry sir

him : its not a problem, its not like anything might happen, am not feeling you..

ouch... i wonder what that means, but it surely sounded hush...

me : dinner is ready..

him : thanks..

i went down to dish up.. then he came down looking all fresh like some rich kid... like the nicly dressed guys i see on tv, but not the once with the suit and stuff... i was busy in my thoughts not knowing that i was starying...

him : hello!!

me : yes?

him : you starying...

me : huh!! sorry...

him : anyway, wont be able to have dinner with you tonight, i am going somewhere and will be back on tuesday...

me : right.. owk...

him : great... bye.

he left and i was left alone in such a big house..

i went to lock the doors and close all windows then i ate my food and went to bed...

i dont know if this is how marrage is.. am sure it is.. i mean my mom and dad are not married and they look happy together..

[12/13, 14:25] Zozaness: The villagegirl an the playboy: arranged marriage

7

its tuesday morning... 3 days without my so called husband.. i went to clean the whole house.. i got done cleaning the whole house and hesitated cleaning my husbands room, i have not cleaned it before...

i thought it through and came to a conclution that i will clean it.. i mean i know hes busy with other girls and i know that we both forced to this so nothing is going to amaze me...

i went into the room and started cleaning.. i felt bad

at first but ended up just doing it,....

as i was done cleaning and packing things, i bumped into his drawer and the books that was on his drawer fell down.. i picked them up and noticed one book written "to myself" ..

i opened it thinking it was a reading book or something, but it was his diary...

i was tempted to read it but i thought its wrong... but as curiosity killed the cat, it was also killing me..

i opened to the last page and read it... i so wish i had not read it..

the page wrote about how he doesnt know why he cant seem to love "palesa" because she loves him and that she is a very nice girl and doesnt know why hes just not falling for her..

i was actually smiling alone and sad at the same time that a girl loves him and hes not interested... but atleast he wants to be..

i went back few pages and noticed a page written "????"

it wrote..

a skinny, shapeless, no fun, unattractive girl, with nice eyes, mouth and an innocent look with a lot of respect... i dont love this girl, i dont have no feelings for her or do i??? i mean whenever i see her something in me moves, but it doesnt stick.. or is it that i am inlove with her just the thought of being seen with a skinny, shapeless girl is getting to me?? nah, i dont love her... i only tollerate her because of tradition.. in the next months am marrying a second wife, the one i will be madly inlove with, and i hope its PALESA..

dad has really dissapointed me....(sad face) i was hoping he would get me married to a fine fit girl that would really stand out.. no kidding this girl is cute but she doesnt come out, shes very low then the people i ride with... imagin..

as i read this, tears dropped down my cheek.. i felt like i was back at school being teased by all the children.. bet if he saw my hair and knew that i wear glasses (4 eyes) it would be worse...

i quickly packed the books away and headed down.. i asked one guard to take me to the chief.. and he did...

i got to the chief, i sat down and looked down in respect of an elder.. he was with his wife..

him : good morning makoti..

me : good morning my elders.

her : morning koti

him : how has your stay being??

me : its been great baba, thanks for asking..

her : what brings you here my darling?? everything owk??

me : yes ma, everything is fine, i just came to ask the chief and his wife to please let me go see my family today..

him : but makoti, you only have been here for 6/7 days

me : i know baba, i just miss them..

her : why not call them??

me : i would, but i dont have a phone..

him : well you can use mine..

me : ohhh, thank you..

her : its only been a week, we cant let you go back yet, its very still soon, but you could call them as much as you want..

me : thank you, but do i need to come to the chiefs wifes everytime i wanna make a call??

him : we will get you a phone, but for today please use mine... do you know your moms number??

me : no, but i know my grannys number, i always crammed it just incase of an emegency..

her : here, use mine..

me : could i go talk to them at your sons house, i just need a little privacy??

him : speaking of my son, vele why didnt you ask him to borrow you his phone??

me : he left 3 days ago.

him : going were??

me : i dont know...

her : its owk, the guard will bring it back to me once you done..

me : thank you..

him : no actually wait... GIFT!!!!

gift : yes chief?

him : please hand your phone to ms nhlapo over here, whenever she request to make a call to her family...

gift : yes sir..

him : change shifts with BONGANI, i want you to stick to mrs nhlapo and help her with anything owk??

gift : yes sir..

him : nompilo, its all sorted now.... gift will help you with anything you require..

me : thanks..

him : take care

i went out with gift following me.. i asked for a

phone and he borrowed me, i went in the house and made that call...

my granny answered on the third ring...

her : hello.

me : saobona gogo..

her : (caugh) who am i talking to??

me : its me gogo, nompilo..

her : hao nompilo mtanami, unjani??

me : (starts crying) i wanna come home gogo..

her : whats wrong my child??

me : i miss mbali and nonhlanhla, and i miss you gogo, plus i dont want a husband anymore..

her : what do you mean nana, i thought you would be happy that you would live a life we couldnt give you..

me : you mean the fancy house?? the nice food?? the big tv that shows many shows and many storys?? no gogo, i rather live in a small house, eat porridge in the morning everyday and eat bread on special days, i rather watch the small tv, with only little shows and

stories, i rather take care of you gogo then to live my life with a so called husband that thinks that am skinny, ugly, shapeless and unattractive, a man who treats me like a maid, stays out for i dont know how long with who knows who... no gogo

her : siyabonga does that??

me : gogo, i just want to go back to school and learn, if i will never get married than its owk..

her : am sorry babe, i will speak to the chief to speak to siyabonga..

me : no gogo, please dont tell the chief..

her : i have to nompilo, i cant have you living like a slave..

me : you always said that woman should deal with their problems head on, so i will deal with it gogo...

her : ohh nana, am really sorry...

me : can i speak to mbali and nonhlanhla please..

her : owk...

i heard my granny call for them, she wasnt loud

enough, she kept calling them countless times, she would also cough now and again, that made me even more sad because i really wouldve been carying for her instead of being here doing nothing... they finally came and gogo handed them the phone, and we spoke...

****siyabonga****

when i came in i realised that gift was standing in the possition of bongani.. mabye bongani has asked gift to stand in for him as he goes somewere.. good thing i didnt bring any of my girls...

i headed to the house...

[12/13, 14:26] Zozaness: The villagegirl an the playboy: arranged marriage

8

i made my way to the house and i realised that the door was not closed properly, i got in and heard nompilo talking to someone on the phone.. i wonder were she got the phone from, and who shes talking to?? i then decided to earsdrop...

as time went, i realised that she was speaking to her granny about me... the things i heard made my heart break... i never realised i hurt her so much, i mean i thought we both cool with the situation... not that anything is going on..

wait!! she read my diary.. OMG!! she read my diary.. why would she mara?? i was angry that she went through my stuff but also sorry about what i said in that diary..

i got in without her hearing me and stood behind her while she spoke more in her tears.. she then spoke to her little sisters.. after she wrapped up her call and said goodbye..

as she was about to turn around to call gift, she saw me and looked shocked....

her : how, how long have you been standing there??

me : long enough...

her : ohh... SIR!!!!

gift : yes mam..

her : thanks for the phone..

gift : its a pleasure mam..

he left and she went to the kitchen like nothing is wrong..

me : hello!!

her : yes!!

me : did you go through my stuff?? actually did you enter my room??

her : yes, i wanted to clean it, and guess what? i bumped into your books and saw a diary.. am sorry i opened it, guess i got what i deserved...

me : look.....

her : no sir, its owk.. actually i cant be here 24/7 cleaning and watching tv.. i would like to go back to school..

me : huh??

her : that way you can do what ever you want and i would focus on my business... no one hurting anyone and this skinny, ugly, unattractive girl would be out of your face most of the time..

me : its not what i meant..

her : then what did you mean??

me : **silence**

her : great, so i would like to start school next year, going to school is free so its owk, i just need help with registrations..

me : **sigh** i guess thats what i owe you for not being able to being a great husband to be...

her : thanks, registrations are already open, so can we go tommorow??

me : do you have everything??

her : what do you mean??

me : birth certificate, tranfer??

her : yah i got everything??

me : owk, will go tomorrow..

her : thanks

she then continued making lunch and not minding me.. i guess i really hurt her, but at least am doing

something that will make her happy..

i went to my room, took a shower and changed my clothing, then went downstairs....

she had made us some bread with butter and palony.. i actually laughed.. i know i dont love her and i dont have no feelings for her but that time i was really feeling something.. a strange feeling that i didnt understand myself... mind you, i have never loved a girl, like never... i mean i play it safe...

her : why you laughing??

me : bread, butter and palony??? is that your idea of lunch??

her : do you know i would die to eat this everyday??

me : really??

her : yes..

me : have you tasted a nice mag and cheese??

her : mag and what??

me : its like macaronni and cheese, but with some mince and all nice stuff....

her : do you know i have never had macaroni and cheese, and the last time i had mince was on my grandfathers funeral..

me : wow.. let me make some for us owk..

her : what about the food??

me : we can eat it and eat the mag and cheese..

her : we get to eat that much in one go?? what about tommorow??

me : theres enough for everyday, nomather how much we eat a day...

her : really??

me : yes, now lets eat and then after i can make the mag and cheese for you...

we ate and then i went to make the food for her.. actually it was like i was showing her because she was looking at me while i was cooking it..

after we ate and i tell you, she was making all sounds and enjoying her food.. her facial reaction was priceless.. my eyes was fixed at her reaction and her eyes, i was smiling alone... it was like me

looking at everything she was doing, every reaction as if it was on slow motion with a slow song playing at the background...

me : so, do you enjoy it??

her : its amazing!! i have never had such diliciouse food...but that doesnt mean i forgive you for calling me names.

me : am really sorry..

her : its owk sir, it was a diary afterall, we wright our inner feelings right?? so i am sorry for reading it.. plus its not something new, i get mocked everyday for my eyes, body, hair, and that i wear glasses..

me : hair?? hows your hair??

her : you dont want to know..

me : and your eyes??

her : yah

me : but your eyes look beautiful and unique.

her : really??

me : yes, i really love them

her : thank you, you actually the first person to tell me that..

me : so were you born like that??

her : yes, its from a deafect i got from birth.

me : ohh i see..hai, i naver got to know your name..

her : its nompilo sir.

me : please dont call me sir, call me siyabonga..

her : oh owk sir.. i mean siyabonga....the food is really nice.

me : theres more...

her : listen, you dont have to be nice just because you feel guilty.. i know am skinny and all that and am cool with it.. just continue living you, and am gonna live me.. you continue doing what you do, just dont get caught.. lol..

i smiled but for the first time those words really cut me deep.. why?? could it be that its guilt??

she left to wash the dishes and i stood up to her..

me : use the machine..

her : i cant.

me : let me show you..

i showed her and she looked.. then she tried it and tried using it... she did it wrong...

me : nompilo! no!!

she jumped up like a baby, opened her eyes wide open and bit her nails as in fear and formed her face as if she was scared and didnt know what to do...

me : hahah, you turn this, not that...

her : ohhhhhh

she then let go of her nails and bit her lips... and forming her face like she was sorry...

she tried it again then got it right.. she got excited..

her : yebo, i did it.. whoop whoop

she did some silly moves then stoped and acted innocent as if she was not doing anything,

i laughed so hard that my stomache was really paining.. she pulled her face not to laugh but she wanted to.. then we both laughed as she threw some

hands playfully on me for laughing at her...

me : why you hitting me??

her : you were laughing at me.. **pouted**

me : owk owk, sorry...

her : not accepted..

me : what!! **shocked**

her : your reaction!!

she laughed as i just smiled at her...

me : am sorry...

her : huh??

me : am sorry, really i am.

her : its owk, we can be friends... and fake married couples..

me : how??

her : well indoors we just friends, you can bring your girl here and do anything you want, but she must understand that it will be a secret untill you are allowed to take a second wife...

me : ohhh, besty..

we went on with our day and caught up on each other.. even though we dont see each other on the dating level, we get along great being friends...

[12/13, 14:29] Zozaness: The villagegirl an the playboy: arranged marriage

9

****3 WEEKS LATER****

nompilo

me : siya!! its been 3 weeks now and i still havnt registered at a school..

him : i cant register you here nompilo, i told you we going to port elizabeth..

me : when?? i want to start school next year bruh..

him : owk owk,we leaving in 2 weeks...

me : so, is school free that side??

him : no!!

i opened my mouth in shock..

him : dont worry, i will pay....

me : you not my father..

him : yes, but am your husband to be..

me : no you not.

him : listen, even if its fake indoors, we still gonna get married for real, so i dont understand why we saying its fake... its real, you can say we in an open relationship... we will only be married by paper and name but not by action, you get me...

me : lol, true..

we went on about the day... everyday was a normal day.. be home the whole day, bath, clean.. the only difference is that siya is actually teaching me some "morden technology" since he also wants to buy me a phone...

siya has dumped all his chicks.. palesa, mbali and kutlwano... he said he didnt love them, plus hes moving so he wont see them anymore, he doesnt do long distance.. i asked him about palesa and he said he feels bad that hes ending it because palesa really

loves him but he just cant... he never dives in a serious relationship.. hes not about serious stuff..

so days passed, weeks passed and the day to leave for port elizabeth came... our parents were aware and we had all blessings.. plus siya had to move because of business...

we packed everything and left to port elizabeth..

****couple of hours later****

we got to the house and it was huge... like really huge... we got in and i litteraly took the whole day going room to room looking at everything...

i took my things to a room that was big, and siya took his bags to the biggest room.. yes we slept in different rooms, i mean we not really married, so? yah we married but we not dating.. does that makes sense??

there was a pool, big enough like the once on tv.... i was even scared to look inside because i thought i would fall in... i also saw a room with some gym stuff, things for men... there was alot of different rooms... very big house and big and nice...

what a great day we had...

****2 weeks later****

in 2 weeks we went to a near by school and i went to register.. i applied and they said if i am accepted i will recieve a phone call.. yes siya had bought me a phone (huaweii).. i chose it because i loved how it looked...

i was so exited that i would be back at school...

we got home and i was back at cooking classes...

after cooking we went to relax before having dinner..

me : i cant believe i will be back at school...

him : so what subjects were you doing??

me : i was doing maths, physics, Acc, bus, life science, zulu, LO and english

him : such a mix??

me : yah, i wish this school offers something more nice...

him : like??

me : i dont know..

him : so what do you want to become??

me : i want to work in hotels, restaurants, cruise ships, aeroplanes and things like that..

him : you want to do hospitality..

me : is that what its called??

him : yes..

me : then yes..

we spoke more and more then dished up and ate, then we left and went to sleep... i went to my room, took a shower and then went to sleep..

[12/13, 14:31] Zoaness: The villagegirl an the playboy: arranged marriage

10

early in the morning i woke up, i woke up 30 minutes before the alarm would go off... i went to the bathroom with a big smile on... GOING BACK TO SCHOOL....

i washed my face, took out my sleeping cap and put

on my shower cap.. i went in the shower and showered. i got done and dried myself, lotioned myself and put on my uniform.. the uniform was rather cute, it was grey, black and maroon.. we had a school binny so i was sorted...

i then combed my hair up... it stretched till the ponytail then it made curls... i then made a braid with my ponytail and made a bun... i then put on my school binny and went downstairs..

siya had hired a maid, we called her mrs khaya... well shes not quite old, she is in her late 20s, so i call her mrs out of respect and that i respect her..

she thinks me and siya are brothers and sisters, and i have seen that she has an eye for siya..

i found her making breakfast..

me : morning mrs khaya.

her : morning nompilo

i sat at the table as i poured milk in my cereals..

her : you got done really early hai.. you excited for school??

me : yes, very..

her : woow, you better study and work hard so that you can make your parents proud, expecially your brother..

me : yah.. i will..

siya came down looking all fresh and clean... he had a nice suit...

him : morning ladies..

Her : morning sir..

me : morning siya..

him : i see you all ready..

me : yah, cant wait...

i stood up to wash my bowl.. and siya started eating his breakfast..

him : why dont you just leave mrs khaya do her job??

me : helping is not killing..

him : woow..

mrs khaya laughed.. siya got done and we left..

him : you do realise that its too hot for the binny
right??

me : i dont want to show my hair..

him : why??

me : i dont wanna be mocked..

him : why would you be mocked??

me : my hair is really weired..

him : well cant say much since you never wanted me
to see it...

we got to school and he dropped me off and waited
till i was in the school yard...

i got in school and mrs donald was waiting at the
gate for me..

****siya****

i was watching her as she went in the school yard,
she didnt even turn to say goodbye when she got in...

its really hard to believe that this girl is actually my
wife to be.. like really just think about it... i mean
shes only 16 going to 17 this year and mina am 25..

like look at the age gap, worsed part shes in grade 11 and mina am working, this looks very wrong...lol...

everyone that knows us think that we brothers and sisters.. we didnt feel comfortable telling people that we actually engaged..

i got to work, so i know you wondering, "what work do you work?" well i am a owner of a car dealership (international cars)... so its not just one spicific car brand but its a multipple car brands but the common thing is they are only international cars.. meaning they are sports cars, big cars, family cars that are made in big countries overseas... so what we do is, you order then we deliver.. the main office is in cape town, mauritius, johannesburg but i have other offices in port elizabeth, durban, johannesburg, swizaland and many more overseas...

i also manage my fathers agricultural company...

so i got to the office..

i greeted my receptionist and went to my office.. i have quite a collection of car toys from overseas, they are very expensive... but i had collected a few,

and have posters too...

after a while of working my call rang...

me : mr xulu speaking, how can i help you??

voice : good morning sir, theres a client wanting to see you...

me : bring them in...

voice : thank you sir...

i cleared my table and prepared myself...

few minutes later, the receptionist came with a very young lady.. beautiful, independent and nice body...

i thank the receptionist and she left... mind you i was already having a thing going on with the receptionist, her name is bongie, we vowed to keep it low...

i stood up to greet her..

me : welcome mrs?

her : ms ndimande...

me : welcome ms ndimande..

i then kissed her back hand..

i showed her the seat and i also sat down.. we were sitting in opposites..

me : how can i help you my lady??

her : more like how can we help you..

me : excuse me??

her : i am a representative of the german car ship, we interested in your service..

me : wow, great, it would be a pleasure..

her : great, so my team will be down in 2 weeks, we expect a bomb presentation..

me : no problem at all, prepare to be amazed..]

her : i'm already amazed..

she was giving me seductive eyes..

me : really??

i returned the look...

she got up, locked the door and came to my side, swang the chair and sat on me... i was so weak and hard as ever...

her : i did my research mr xulu and saw what a fine men you are.. i asked to come here alone because i had personal issues to settle..

me : witch are??

her : to feel you..

i breathed harder and got even harder, i think she felt it because she would even shake a bum while sitting on me..

me : if you continued like this, you might as well be prepared to be punished..

her : i love punishments...

i picked her up to stand.. uped her skirt, made her sit on me and started kissing her.. she responded then i layed her on the table.. i lowered her tights and panty and lossened my belt..

i took MR out and inserted him in her.. then i rode her.. she made sounds and moaned and that made me go even faster.. i turned her around and made her stand and lay with her stomache on the table.. then i did it from behind...

i rode really fast and held on her then i came..

i took tissues that were on the table and wiped MR,
then i got dressed, she also got up and got dressed..

she wrote something on a paper and left it on the
table... then she smiled..

her : i will surely be back, lover boy..

me : will be waiting..

she smiled and left...

i took a deep breather and fixed my office.. the office
wasnt bad at all because the air freshner was on... i
looked at the paper she wrote on and it was her
numbers with hearts around... now this i could live
for, food for MR that just comes on a silver platter...

ofcause i wont marry her, she looks like a thotiana,
not a wafiana....

i then started gathering the team for the upcoming
presentation...

[12/13, 14:35] Zoaness: The villagegirl an the
playboy: arranged marriage

11

its been a month now and i cant really say that i enjoy going to that school.. but i must say that its better then my previous school... i mean they dont laugh at me because of my eyes or the fact that i wear glasses but they laugh at me because of how skinny i am..

i was in my room, sitting on the bed crying my head out.... it was a friday morning and it was dressing up at school.. the kids at school had made a bet that today i am gonna go to school with a binny on and looking like a granny plus a skinny granny... thats why i had said to not go to school...

it was 7am and am still in my room... siya knocked and knocked and i whiped my tears and went to the bathroom.. i took a hairdriyer and hairdried my forehead so that it would be hot.. then i rubbed my nose so hard that it looked like i had a cold.. i even rubed my eyes very hard they turned red...

i then went to open the door...

siya : haibo, and then??

me : am sick!!

he looked at me as i looked in his eyes, he felt my forehead....

siya : yho, it looks bad hay...

me : yah, i feel like dying...

him : owk, i will let your teacher know owk??

me : thanks

him : should i take you to the hospital??

me : no i will be fine..

him : bro, your eyes are red, you look like you have a fever..

me : owk i will take a taxi to the hospital later..

him : owk..

he left and i went back to crying and eventually slept in my tears...

****siya****

i was feeling bad for nompilo.. i asked mrs khaya to look after her and i left to work...

after hours of working, i packed my stuff and got ready to leave my office to go home, then bongie came in..

her : hay stranger..

me : hay babe...

her : off already?

me : yah, my lil sis is sick so i gotta go check on her...

it has become easy calling nompilo my lil sis.. i have become used to it.. sometimes i ask myself if she really is my wife to be..

her : shame.. well i wish her speedy recovery..

me : thanks.

her : when will i get to meet her though??

me : meet her??

her : yes, am your girlfriend arnt i?? and we serious so i better start bonding with my lil sis in law...

me : huh, mhm.. yah, yah, most definatly...

i walked to her and kissed her...

me : let me go and check on my baby owk...

her : are you coming in tommorow??

me : nah, am only coming in on wednesday...

her : am gonna miss you..

me : me too..

she kissed me again..

her : how about a little satisfyry

i looked at her body up and down then suddenly i felt her hand on my MR on my pants.. i gave an erection then she went to lock my office door...

she then came towards me picking her skirt up... i then loosened my belt, loosen my button and picked her up as she wrapped her legs around my waist.. i then placed her on the table and lowered her underwear.. i then inserted my MR in her and she gave moans..

i penetrated her and moved faster as she gave more

moans and calling my name... i fucked her good
yes... after a while i came and fell on her... dont
worry we used protection... am always carefull ...
she didnt have enough so we opted for round 2...

just as we were in the middle of coming, we heard a
knock on the door... we kept quite and continued but
the knock was pesistant...

voice : siya, its me nompilo...

i quickly froze and quickly got dressed... bongie also
quickly got dressed...

me : thats my lil sis...

her : great, now you can introduce me

me : not today, we have a small family issue to worry
about, lets just chill for now..

her : oh owk...

me : dont say anything just flow with what i say.

we placed everything in order and bongie pretended
to be busy working on papers and i went to open the
door...

her : hao kanti wh..... ohh i didnt know you had company...

me : yah, we didnt want to be disturbed, we have a project to finish..

her : ow..k

me : you look better, did you go to the doctor??

her : no, i just got myself pills at the chemist..

me : ohh, should have thought of that..

her : well i was bored at home i thought i should come see you work, but seems you busy...

me : no its fine, anything for my lil sis... bongie, we will finish later..

bongie : yes sir..

she left..

nompilo : isnt she your receptionist??

me : yes she is..

her : so what does she know about projects..??

me : you might be suprised..

her : right...

she stayed for a while and watched me work, actually we were looking at youtube videos, laughing, making jokes about each other and all that.. then we ordered food and ate.... she would say she wants to feed me but once close to my mouth she would move the hand and feed herself then laugh herself down...

i would watch her laugh, her laugh is contagious, she has a beautiful smile and pretty teeth..

we stayed till late then decided that we would go to a restaurant to have dinner.. yah we were at the office till late at night...

me : its late, lets go grab dinner and go home..

her : owk..

we packed..

her : oh and siya..

me : yes??

her : when you do nasty things with people, please be extra careful, you dont want your workers to

disrespect you..

me : what do you mean?? i dont do nasty things..

her : bongies panties.... (pointing close to the bin under the table) imagin if a cleaner found that...

i went embarrassed and picked it up to place it in my drawer then i looked at her with the guilty, embarrassed look...

her : go wash your hands mahn...'

she then laughed.. i joined in laughing as well.. damn, how could i be so stupid...

we left and got ourself dinner....

later as we went back home, i found 4 cars parked outside and they looked like my fathers cars...

what would my father want from me now??

[12/13, 14:36] Zozaness: The villagegirl an the playboy: arranged marriage

continuation

we got in the house and saw that mrs khaya has already was serving them as they waited for us...

me : sanibona bantu abadala..

nompilo : sanibonani bantu abadala...

dad : sanibona bantwana bam...

mom :yebo bantwana bam...

we went to sit down an here what this was about..

dad : were have yall been?? we have been waiting since 3pm...

me : am sorry dad, we were at the office and later went to have dinner at the restaurant..

mom : i told you baba, that these romoures are all lies..

me : what romours ma??

dad : we heard that you keep telling everyone that you guys are siblings, and i also heard that nompilo is going to school...

me : ohh

dad : so is it true??

mom : hao baba, you can see that they just went out for dinner..

dad : am asking about the school story..

me : yes its true baba..

dad : siyabonga?? hini!!

me : baba, nompilo wanted to finish school and as her husband to be i need to make sure she is happy..

dad : nompilo??

nompilo : baba.

dad : do you even forfil your duties??

nompilo : **silent**

me : baba, with all due respect, nompilo is my wife not my maid...

mom : we see that you got a maid to do a wifes job, you might as well marry her..

me : better!! i mean no..

dad : nonsense... nompilo stop this schooling thing

of yours and start fulfilling your duties, we didn't choose you to be the lazy wife..

nompilo : ngiyaxolisa baba, but i can't leave school.

dad : nompilo!!

me : dad please.. are you not happy that we together and willing to get married??

dad : what if she messes up like all the others??

nompilo : what does baba mean??

me : no baba, she's in good hands, besides i don't think anyone would be interested...

****nompilo****

i was sitting thinking of what siya kept saying... first he implies that it's better to marry Mrs Khaya our maid than me (he probably thinks i didn't hear that "better") then he says no one would be interested in me...

i really thought we were cool, i mean we have agreed to be friends then married.. even though we will be married but we will be married by words and outside but indoors we would be friends.. then after our

wedding he could marry his true love as his second wife but indoors she would be his only wife.... but still he talks me dirty...

after the talk, his father accepted that i go to school and siya managed to convince him that the romour that we keep saying we siblings is a lie, even though its true...

they left and we were left alone.. mrs khaya left the minute we arrived, one of his fathers guards took her home because it was late...

after they left, i went straight to my bedroom... after a while siya called me..

him : mpilo!! mpilo!!! nompi!!

i kept quite, i wasnt in the mood for him...

he ended up knocking on my bedroom door and coming in.. i was halve in tears...

him : why wasnt you answering ??

me : i didnt want to...

him : are you crying??

me : no!!

him : brah, i can hear in your voice..

me : **silence**

him : listen if this is about what my father said, am sorry..

me : **silence**

him : nompilo??

me : siya, i dont want to talk to you right now, please leave..

him : what did i do??

me : siya, please leave..

him : am not going anywere untill you tell me what i did..

me : suite yourself..

i stood up to leave then he held me tight.. i then cried hitting him with fists on his chest but he kept holding me by hugging me.. strangly i felt safe in his arms, i felt like he would hold me this tight forever... i didnt understand the feeling but i didnt want it to stop...

him : nompilo talk to me..

me : siya leave me (crying heavily)

him : nompilo!!

me : siya!! you said that you would marry mrs khaya over me, then you said no one would be interested in me, what does that mean siya.. huh??

him : nompilo am sorry..

me : no siya, i thought we were friends... i thought we were cool.

him : am really sorry, i didnt mean that..

i hit him again on his chest and he just pulled me in tighter that i couldnt move..

him : please forgive me nompilo...

me : leave siya..

he then let me go and i went back to bed...

****siya****

i was really upset that i made nompilo feel the way shes feeling... i dont know why i felt this way but i

was really upset.. i feel dump for having to say those things.. i gotta learn to love her and respect her as my friend, actually i should be trying to help her and make her feel good about herself but here i am terring her apart.. i lay on my bed struggling to sleep...

[12/13, 14:36] Zozaness: The villagegirl an the playboy: arranged marriage

12

the next day i woke up and realised that i was still full kit.. seems i slept like this...

immediatly i thought of nompilo then i quickly got up to check on her... i went to his room and didnt find her there.. i wonder were she went..

i went downstairs and i saw her having breakfast alone... i went to her..

me : nompilo??

her : siya??

me : how are you??

her : am thin and unattractive..

me : nompilo!!

her : what??

me : **sigh** listen am sorry...

her : right!!

me : seriously am sorry..

her : its owk siya, its really owk..

we sat like that for a few minutes without talking.
just her munching on her food and me soaping in my
thoughts... then finally she broke the silence...

her : want breakfast??

me : you wanna poison me??

her : WHAT??

me : i mean, you were just mad at me minutes ago??

i gave a smirk so that she gets that its a joke, then
she coughed up and giggled and she playfully hit my
shoulder with her fist..

her : mxm, shut up mahn..

me : bro, you hit like a just born baby..

she attempted to hitting me harder but i ran away from her...

her : owk mr, will see were you will get your breakfast..

me : i will wait for mrs khaya..

her : mrs khaya your wife is not coming today, remember, its saturday..

me : shucks.. wait, so this is the day were we have to do cleaning ourselves??

her : yes!!

she seemed like she had also forgotten, (having a helper)..

she then went and made me breakfast...

me : so you going to watch me eat??

her : yes!! i have never seen a cow eat...

me : you have never seen a cow eat?? hows that relevent to you watching me..... ohh hell nah, you calling me a cow??

she laughed and immediatly ran away from me, i

didnt even chase her because i was eating...

she then came back without me realising, and hugged me from the back while i was still eating..

her : am kidding, you not a cow... your a lion..

me : yah i know, and your a pig, now pig, lets go clean..

i stood up, leaving her standing still not knowing what to say. (we play to much, thats why i like her so much, shes a best friend material)

her : owk, am not gonna say anything cause it wont end well, lets just get to it...

so we have agreed to do rock, paper, sissicors 3* and whoever gets 2 wins gets to choose the 6 spaces they will clean, YES, we have 13 spaces in the house discluding bathrooms in the rooms, its not a luxury house, were theres theaters and all that nice stuff.. its a thriple story

now let me break down the house for you and you will understand why we dont like it when this day comes for us to clean (we spring clean once a

month)

theres a kitchen, dining room and living room in the first floor.. theres 2 bedrooms (main and guest, but it will be like a nursery for my kids oneday) , a mini toilet, and a gym on the second floor and a balcony that shows the view of our pool, vollyball beach setup and mini outside dinning setting, then last floor is the 2 guestrooms, a mini toilet again and a unknown room (the way they build it, i cant figure what it was used for) then balcony again, but this one is longer.. it goes around the house that you see the view of our basketball court, far left from the pool...

we did the game and i won.. she lost, but i came up with a good strategy..

me : let me do the 1st floor, you do the second and we both do the 3rd and the carage together..

her : you so generous, you giving me all the bedrooms arnt you??

me : except for mine, yes..

her : i knew it.. owk deal..

we cleaned, literally the whole day...

we started at 8am, and ended at around 4pm.. thats how big this house is.. but atleast we done spring cleaning for the month...

it took longer cause we would stop to take breaks and snack to hold our hunger then go back again, plus cleaning together was rather a completely wrong idea, we just couldnt stop fooling around...

we got done, through ourselves on the couch and looked up..

me : we did this shawty..

her : yah we did, like we always do..

we fist bump and headed to go shower (eash in his/her room)..

nompilo

i got done, got dressed (i had a hipster jean and a blouse) with my head wraped... i went downstairs and got some snacks while i wait for siya, so that we can order, am starving..

he came out looking fresh, as always..

him : you done already??

me : yah!! you be bathing like a pregnant lady..

him : dude, it took me less then an hour..

me : great, it took me less the 40 minutes..

him : i wanna ask though, you never let your hair out, why??

me : well, i just dont..

him : would you??

me : mabye, in meer future..

him : come on, we friends arnt we, so can i see??

me : nah!!

him : please!!

me : no!! now can you order something am starving..

him : show me your hair first then we will talk..

me : i rather starve..

i sat down folded my arms and stared in space, then i remembered, why am i begging this dude, i got my own phone.. but as i thought of it he acted on it.. he

ran to my phone (which was on the charger and took it.. i acted mad.. i didnt want to show him my hair like, nooooo...

him : am waiting.,..

me : kill me..

him : that bad??

me : yes..

him : let me take you to the salon then we can get it fixed...

me : no am good like this.

him : you cant keep wearing hoodies..

me : i will go tommorow..

him : owk..

he finally ordered

[12/13, 14:41] Zozaness: The villagegirl an the playboy: arranged marriage

13

siya

it was very late, nompilo and i departed to sleep at around 8pm. we dont normally slep that early but she was realy tired from all the cleaning..

i on the other hand was laying on my bed, looking at pictures on my phone..

heres a little secret.. so since 2 weeks ago, i have been secretly taking pics of nompilo, like i would pretend to be on my phone but actually be taking pictures an videos..

they not clear cute pics, well they pics of her doing things, laughing, just sitting watching tv and all that.. so here i am, busy looking at the pictures and videos..

no games yall, but she cute, nice smile, nice teeth, nice eyes.. she even looks cuter when she has to read then she puts on glasses... imagine the greyish eyes in glasses...

i kept scrolling up and down till i finally fell asleep...

3 days later

****siya****

its 10am and i am at work... i just had a meeting, so now am kind of wrapping my files so that i could head home.. its really boring when i have to go home and be alone or with mrs khaya... even though shes all sexy and stuff but nompilos freely spirit is what i mostly need...

i got done and headed out.. when i got to reception, bongie gave me a "and then??" look.. so i went to her desk first..

me : baby, look am heading home now, see you tommorrow..

her : but baby..

me : shh relax, tomorrow is few hours from now, besides i want you to come to my house nextweek monday.. so you can finally meet my lil sis...

i actually said that so that she can relax and come.. and on that day nompilo is at school so she wont really see her... not that i dont love bongie, well also i

dont love her, am not really sure if shes the one to marry, shes not there yet... dont get me wrong, shes very cute, sexy and all that but i dont see myself waking up next to her everymorning and living with her forever.. NOP...

her : really??

me : you know i love you bae, so anything for you...

her : i love you more..

i would have kissed her but proffesionality comes first.. plus i dont want alot of people knowing that am dating her...

i went home and found mrs khaya busy in the kitchen..

me : morning mrs khaya..

her : morning sir, you came preddy early today..

me : yah, i wanna work from home..

her : owk sir..

me : call me siya..

her : owk sir... siya

i smiled and made my way to the living room, sat there and started working..

after a while, i was bored and needed company..so i called mrs khaya..

her : yes sir

me : siya

her : sorry...

me : would you spare a moment with me please.

her : huh, huh, owk siya..

she sat down and i faced her..

me : please dont be scared, i just want to know more about my worker you know??

her : oh owk..

me : so, whats your name?

her : khanyi khaya

me : KK??

i then bursted out laughter and she laughed too so hard.. i think she caught on that i am refering to kk in

muvhango

her : woooooow, nice siya..

me : am kidding bruh, so khanyi it is..

her : yah.

so we spoke more and more..

mrs khaya

i was very suprised, but at the same time happy... i wished for this moment for so long.. if he never lived with his lil sister i would have acted long ago, but since he lives with his lil sister i need to have respect and gain her love...

so now that i have an opportunity, i think i need to act now and make him my man before anybody does...

siya

we were talking and talking and laughing... i then quickly went to use the bathroom and came back.. she really kept me busy, and unbored, she is a very nice company..

later in the conversation, the conversation became weird.,...

her : so, siya, do you have a girlfriend??

me : huh, no...

her : what?? a handsome, beast like you with no girlfriend??

me : beast? lol well yah..

her : is it because you not looking or you just picky??

me : huh, i dont know, mabye its because i am too busy working to be going out.. plus i need to make sure i choose a good girl, cant be introducing chancers to my baby...

her : baby??

me : lil sister....

her : ohhhhhh, am sure theres cute girls at work?

me : there are but i dont really put my energy in that...

her : so how long you have been single??

me : huh!! long enough...

her : so you havnt had satisfactory for long enough??

huh, wow, did she just ask me that?? yoh, i didnt know mrs khaya can be this naughty... i think am about to smack that ass...

me : satisfactory??

her : yah like bedroom satisfactory??

me : oh, nah, not really...

her : dont you desire it sometimes??

me : mhm, listen khanyi, am going to be frank with you because i respect you.. talks like this dont end well, so lets drop this topic, unless you wanna see yourself in my bedroom and living the rest of the day not knowing how to look at me or nompilo..

she stood up and came to sit on me..

me : khanyi!! what are you doing??

her : the way you say my name sounds so sexy..

me : really??

her : how about we take it to the bedroom...

me : how about here in the living room.??

her : great

me : get to it girl...

she leaned in and we kissed then we started undressing and getting to business.. she was really a tiger with it yall, like she had some real experience...

****nompilo****

so we kinda came out early today because teachers were attending workshops.. so i called siya to pick me up since he does the dropping off and picking ups but he didnt know that we coming out early nither did i...

i called mutiple times but still he didnt answer.. then one of my friends brenda came to me..

her : nompilo!! waiting for your brother??

me : cant get ahold of him, guess i will have to sit here till passed 2pm cause thats his usuall time to fech me...

her : but thats like 1 and a halve hours from now...

me : dont have another choice..

her : hai, i could ask my dad to give you a lift..

me : oh really??

her : unless you wanna stay here alone..

me : hell no, thank you..

her : cool he should be here anyminute..

me : wont he say no??

her : when i ask, he just says owk..

i laughed... we sat there for few minutes more and indeed his father came... he agreed to giving me a lift, i asked to be dropped off at the freedom park... everyone knows the park, plus its 10 minutes away from where i stay...

we drove and got there.. i got off, gave thanks and waved goodbye...

i then walked home with my earphones on and got home..

i went in and as i entered the house, thinking siya was still at work. i thought mrs khaya was upstairs

or busy with something so i decided to take my yogurt in the fridge and went to the living room, i still had my earphones on...

as i entered in the living room, i froze and dropped my yogurt..

mrs khaya wrapped her body with her hands, looked down embarassed... siya just sat up and looked at me shocked...

me : huh, sorry, am sorry, am sorry..

i kept saying am sorry, as i picked my yougurt that spilled out, then i ran to fetch a cloth in the toilet upstairs and came running down to wipe the yougurt, as i came to wipe mrs khaya was now dressing and siya just standing looking defeated....

i then went to my room and just brought myself into really trying to understand, how can siya do that... am not mad that hes busy with girls but, MRS KHAYA????

[12/13, 14:42] Zozaness: The villagegirl an the playboy: arranged marriage

14

nompilo

i was in my room thinking about what i have just seen, i just couldnt believe it... i mean i am not mad, am just embarrassed that i saw what i saw...

i was debating in my thoughts when i slightly heard a knock on the door... i knew it was siya, i wonder what hes gonna say...

me : come in

he came in, looked at me, closed the door and leaned on the door taking out a huge sigh, then he dropped his head down and stayed in that position for a little while..

i wanted to laugh but i knew that, it was not the time to laugh at this moment, but i couldnt hold myself... i bursterd out laughing and siya quickly looked at me with a confused facial expression...

him : what you laughing at??

me : (slowly stops laughing) am sorry (attempts not to laugh) am really sorry, but i cant hold myself..

(laughs again)

he came near and sat on my bed...

him : owk, tell me when you done...

i tried stopping but couldnt.. after a while i managed to calm down... i was really teary from laughing and my stomache was really painful...

me : owk am sorry, am done...

him : you really find this funny??

me : no its just that i feel stupid and to think its ms khaya you were with just makes it more awkward...

him : tell me about it... velevele, how did you get home?? i thought i was your only transport home...

me : we came out early from school, so i tried calling you but you wouldnt respond.. i was going to wait 1 and 1/2 hour for you but my friend felt sorry for me and spoke to her father for me...

him : how did they know were to drop you because you dont know the way??

me : just because am a village girl doesnt mean am

stupid....

him : i didnt say you stupid.. so you knew the way??

me : not exactly, i just know that we always pass the freedom park so i asked them if they know the freedom park and they said yes, so they drooped me off at the freedom park...

him : ohh, then you walked here??

me : yes...

him : now i wish i saw your calls...

me : lol.. so did she go home??

him : yes, she will resume next week...

me : so, shes not coming in this week from tommorow??

him : yes, shes very embarrassed, she is really embarrassed... she fears what you will say or how you will act around her when you see her, and how she will deal with having to see you...

me : why is she so worried about what i do or say??

him : shes under the impression that you my lil sister

and if she is going to ride with me she has to be seen as respectable and kind by you...

me : really???

him : yah..

me : so vele, how long has this been going on??

him : well, it started today..

me : yall start dating today and already you showing skin??

him : well, to save her from more embarrassment, i am not going to tell you how it lead there...

me : owk... so are there more??

him : more what??

me : more hidden girls i need to know off as a "little sister"..

him : nompilo mara?? no..

me : owk, well i was hoping there was another one who would be more self loving and kind, mabye someone like palesa...

him : why someone like palesa??

me : well shes kind, respecting, lovely..

him : how do you know??

me : firstly, she never wanted to come to your house, out of respect... secondly, she loved you very much, you said that yourself, you just didnt love her, i dont know why, even though she wouldve made a great wife...

him : nah, she crazy, like shes a phyco...

me : literaly or ??

him : when i told her that its over, she literaly went crazy, she started screaming, crying saying that i am confused and that she will make me realise that shes the only one for me...

me : thats crazy...

him : yah, but she calmed down and accepted...

me : oh, mabye she was acting crazy beause she was losing what she loved...

him : yah, i dont blame her, i really did her dirty... but

what was i to do, i didnt love her..

me : why did you date all those girls if you didnt love them, and why alot of girls in one go??

him : am not ready to be steady so am playing around...

me : siya you old for that...

him : i know, which is why i have finally decided to settle down...

me : great, hope you find what you looking for....

him : i already found it...

me : ms khaya??

him : nop

me : bongie??

him : nop

me : who?? you said there is no hidden girls mos??

him : thats because i dont have her yet...

me : then make her yours...

him : shes not that kind that am used to, shes

different, and for me to make her mine i need to step out of my comfort zone..

me : you would do that to get her???

him : yes, i would do that...

me : whats her name??

him : mihlali...

me : well, if you really want to win her, you better stop being busy with girls...

him : yah, i guess i will try...

me : so mihlali is going to be the wife.. i cant wait to meet her...

him : you will, soon...

siya was starying in space when he was talking about this girl and i would look at his eyes.. i have never seen siya so ..\$@#\$%^&*(^*&)*(^%\$%#@#... am sorry yall, i just cant explain it..

its like the guys in the movies that really love a girl and then they talk about them or to them... its really different, i have not seen siya speak like that about

any girl...

me : you better act fast before someone does..

him : i wont allow her to slip away from me....

me : well, i can help...

him : how??

me : i know i dont know nothing about love and morden things, but i can still try.. i mean am a girl and i watch alot of movies so i have some few advices...

him : huh....

me : if you dont trust me its owk...

him : nah, its owk, i would appreciate that...

me : owk...

him : ****SIGH**** i wanna go watch a movie, coming??

me : great idea, but we watching it in here....

him : what??

me : well its warm in here and am comfortable here, plus the living room has memories...

him : lol... nompilo!!

me : what??

he shook his head and went to fetch his laptop and get snacks... he later came and sat on the bed and looked for a movie... i was in the sheets, it was abit chilly...

him : so what we watching??

me : i dont really know movies by their names, i just watch them...

him : owk i will choose my movie then after i will explain all the chickflicks i have and you will choose the one that sounds nice...

me : what are chickflacks??

him : chick flicks not flacks...

me : owk, what are those??

him : movies for girls basically...

me : oh...

he chose a movie and i loved it very much, the movie was called the equilizer, with denzil washington as

the main character, damn i was hooked...

the movie ended..

him : wooooow, i love this movie...

me : it was great.. i enjoyed it so much..

him : you did??

me : yes...

him : dont lie??

me : am serious...

him : owk, now your turn..

he explained the movies and i was listening, and he spoke about the one that sounded like cinderella but this one was different...

me : what is that one called...

him : another cinderella story...

me : lets watch that one..

we watched it and siya was actually sleeping through the movie.. halve way through the movie i saw that siya wants to sleep but hes fighting it, so i

looked at him and wispered (just give in, sleep).. he looked at me, smiled and layed down and slept.. i then took my earphones and watched the movie alone...

after the movie (which was very beautiful) i went back and saw that he really has alot of movies... but i was tired.. plus seeing siya sleep just made me also want to sleep...

i placed the laptop on the drawer next to the bed and the snacks on the laptop then i also dived in to sleep.....

[12/13, 14:44] Zoaness: 15

months later**

****nompilo***

it has been weeks since the school has closed for june, my exams were great and i swear i nailed them...

so we have been busy with operation impress mihlali.. i have advised siya on things he could do and improve to impress a girl..

i have adviced him firstly to cut ties with all his play girls, become more responsible and be himself.. he thought to impress a girl he needs to change his way of dressing or way of style but i just told him to be him....

secondly i adviced him to be honest about his feelings and make sure that the girl is the one.. he really is inlove with mihlali, non jokes..

so today is D day.. and he is inviting her to dinner.. so after dinner i get to see her, thats if she accepts my bro... but he told me that they have been talking and he is preddy sure that she might say yes because they are already bestfriends.... i dont know from when but i am just happy that he is finally growing up...

so i was sitting in the living room watching movies, siya came down wearing his comfortable wear.. he was wearing a swag short, ankle soacks and a vest...

me : haibo siya, arnt you going to work??

him : why should I??

me : you supposed to go ask mihlahli to dinner...

him : mihlali??

me : yah!! dude, dont tell me that you dont love her anymore..

him : ohhhh, mihlali... yah!!!

me : well??

him : huh, before i answer you, i need a last favour from you..

me : you dodging the question huh!! anyway, shoot....

him : lol, i need you to go with me to the dinner with mihlali...

me : why?? isnt it your day to be alone with her and confess your feelings to her??

him : yes it is, but with you as a lil sister will be more special, plus i want to let her know about us, so that she knows what shes getting herself into..

me : as in like let her know what is really happening??

him : yes....

me : *sigh* oh alright...

him : great, so please dont be mad, but i had already bought a dress, pumps, and called in the makeover team..

me : what?? what if i wouldve said no??

him : then i would tell you, then you would feel guilty and eventually agree..

me : so it was your way of manipulating me to agree??

him : yes, so you not mad right??...

me : not yet, but once this whole situation is done, then remind me to be mad...

him : lol, will do....so, better get ready, they coming at 2pm..

me : thats 5 hours away so let me be...

him : lazy lazy....

me : lol...

we chilled around, watched tv, chatted more about how nervouse he is and telling me how to behave around his girl... mxm siya....

after some time siya chased me out of the living room and told me to go get ready...

i went to get ready and at 2pm the makeover team came...

it was lola and tshepo (gay)..

tshepo : ohhh gal, you must be nompilo, the one getting the makeover right??

me : yah... its me..

tshepo : well, judging from the doek, i take a guess that its rough in there??

me : well...!!

siya : cant wait to finally see...

tshepo : owk, i will take that... but facewise, you looking good, so there wont be much of a job...

i sat on the chair and they started.....

thsepo : owk, before we start, can you please remove your contacts..

me : excuse me??

tshepo : your eye contacts!! phela we want to see your real beauty..

siya : thats her eyes, her natural eyes..

tshepo : unamanga!! (shocked), is it true nompi??

me : yes, i was born like this..

tshepo : you so lucky, but why are they not fully grey, thats unnormal..??

me : they are greyish because i have a eye deafect, it affects my eyes, hence i wear glasses...

tshepo : oh, but you so lucky mahn, i mean it makes you look beautifull...

me : ohh thank you, but only if you knew what i have to go through...

tshepo : shame, owk lets get to it...

he took out my doek and all i could do was hide my face...

tshepo : nompilo?? are you an alien??

OHWK, lets face the ,music and dance..

me : please dont laugh at me, i mean you can fix it right??

siya : nompilo?? is that your real hair??

me : y....ye....yes...

tshepo, lola and siya kept brushing my hair with their fingers..

siya : she even has grey hair...

tshepo : you are one girl with the most rarest things...

me : what do you mean??

tshepo : firstly your eyes, they greyish (black to grey) with a very dark skin tone.. then its your hair, its not african hair, even though you african..

me : what do you mean??

tshepo : its like an african person, zulu peson with indian hair, does that makes sense??

me : well i have seen that my hair is very different, its indianish, colouredish and a little africanish because its dark black and has grey hair...

siya : does it run in the family??

tshepo : how are you going to ask that when she is your lil sister??

siya : mxm, sorry i even forgot its nompilo, am far in thoughts..

tshepo : yaz hin gal, you got the most attractive eyes, even though they are like this because of a defect but they are really rare.. and you have dark skin tone and still rock it, lastly your hair is long and rare for a fully black woman, but that is all your advantage to looking amazing...

me : thank you..

tshepo : i wont lie though, you are preddy skinny, but that is no problem because once you start going on a "gaining weight" diet and start hitting the gym, you will look bomb and have all men eating in your hands...

me : really???

tshepo : yes...

siya : oh please tshepo, just stop feeding nompilo junk and start on the operation..

lola is not the speaking type, she mostly just nod her head to agree or shake her head to disagree, or get busy setting up...

after a while i was done and siya was upstairs getting ready... i then went to get dressed and looked myself in the mirror.. tshepo was right, i should start my gaining weight journey and start gyming...

plus theres this guy named romeo, he is a very handsome guy but he is a leader that leads the kids from my school to bully me about being a granny... i remember on valentines we were supposed to send cards to one another but anonymously, the teachers thought it would be a good idea.. and yes it was but not for me..

i got an anonymous letter saying that mabye if i stopped being a granny i would finally get my first kiss...

i was shatterd that i even cried, the teacher asked what was wrong and i gave her the letter.. ofcause noone admitted to writing that letter but later that

month, romeo said the same thing to me at the sports ground in front of everyone... thats when i knew it was him...

but apart from all the bullying i still find him attractive and since theres a way out of being a granny and being what guys will be crying aporn, then am in.... after today, i am going to start working on myself and hope that romeo notices me...

i was done with everything... its now around 6pm and time for me to finally see my sister wife.. and ohh tshepo and lola left immediatly after they got done with my makeup....

my hair was in my face, i had to move it out of my face for the 100th time in 1 hour....

i went downstairs and siya was waiting for me...

i head down and siya is suprised.. i see it because hes literaly opening his mouth showing shock but at the same time smiling...

guys, this dress is supposed to be a tightfit, but its loose like its a towel... but it is not bad, atleast my face is lit up...

me : i think you got me a big size...

him : i see.. but you still look good though..

me : yah, i really dont understand why i am all maked up when i am just going to be a guest

him : an important guest...

me : whatever.. so are you going to fetch her first??

him : i arranged transport for her already..

me : oh owk... lets go then...

when we got to the restaurant it was empty, but it was really romantic and beautifull... mihlali must be really special...

we got in an immediatly they played my favourit song...

me : thats my favourit song playing...

him : really?? you and mihlali must be having common likes...

me : i like her already....

we went to sit down and as we sat, we were served

with a cup ice cream (chocolate and vanilla)

me : why are eating before she comes??

him : shes a "always late" person so am just munching on sweet stuff...

me : lol, mhm, you really had to choose chocolate and vanilla!! why??

him : well i like it..

me : i have something in common with mihlali and something in common with you.. am a great middle person.. we are going to make a great team...

him : oh please...lol...

we ate as we waited and as i was having my ice cream i accidentally put something in my mouth...

i took it out and saw that it was a ring.. a very expensive looking ring... exactly the one i always drooled over...

me : siya!! did you mean to put this for mihlali to find??

him : yes..

me : well ask the waiter to take it and put it in her drink or her ice cream so that when she comes its ready...

he was just looking at me...

me : hurry before she comes...

him : shes already here..

i quickly hid the ring and looked around to check were she was, but i couldnt see no one...

me : siya, were is she kanti??

him : right infront of me, looking into my eyes...

me : siya quit playing mahn...

him : am serious..

he stood up and came to my side and knelt down...

him : nompilo, actually there is no mihlali, there was never a mihlali.. i couldnt tell you how i felt at that moment so i staged a name.. i used all the advises and classes to be around you and have more time with you.. actually you are the girl that stole my heart, that i would live with all my life, nompilo.. I LOVE

YOU..

me : ****silence****

i am shocked, speechless and shaking... what is happening yall, am i dreaming.....

[12/13, 14:45] Zozaness: The villagegirl an the playboy: arranged marriage

crop top

16

****NOMPILO*****

me : siya!! siya what??

him : i know this might come as a shock, but am serious nompilo..

me : siya, how, when, am lost..

him : the moment i became close to you, a bond builded up, i really wanted to tell you the day i was with mrs khaya, but ms khaya and i happened.. that was the reason why i staged a name for my true love, but truley it was you...

me : siya, i... i.. i cant, i am now used to you as a

friend, as a brother, am sorry siya but i really cant, i dont see you in that way..

he got up and went to sit on his seat.. he looked dissapointed and i was feeling bad..

have i made a good decition?? or has my friendship with him blinded me...??

we were siting there in silence and he kept playing around with his ice cream...

i decided to break the silence...

me : siya..??

him : nompilo??

me : please dont be mad..

him : i am not...

me : please dont be dissapointed..

him : i am not.

me : i know you siya, you cant fool me..

him : yet you dont see when i am truley saying the truth or fooling around..

me : i can see you are serious..

him : then whats the matter??

i stayed silent...

him : i think we need to go home..

he called the waiter and called the rest of the plan off, i cant believe he had so much going on...

he then stood up and left, i just followed, (then he says he is not angry...)

we got in the car and he drove off..

we got home.. he went straight upstairs, i quickly asked him if he wants food but he just said no and went to his room...

i gave a huge sigh and followed... i actually went to knock on his bedroom door, i know its really not ideal but i was really feeling guilty..

so i went and knocked...

i knocked for a long time then finally he opened up...

his eyes were red like he was crying but he was putting a straight face..

me : are you owk??

him : stupid question...

me : sorry..

him : are you done??

me : let me leave you..

he closed the door and locked it..

i know really feel bad...

****siya****

i guess its the tast of my own medicine.. i have been playing girls not thinking about their feelings, now its my tiurn..

i guess i deserve it...

[12/13, 14:46] Zozaness: 17

****siya*****

i woke up and realised that it was still early.. it was still 4:30 am.. well i wasnt sleepy so i decided to wake up...

i did my bed and cleaned my room.. then when i was

done i took my diary that i came with, the one nompilo read and got upset... i took it and sat on my bed re-reading everything i ever written about nompilo...

when i was done reading i then realised that nompilo has the right to reject me, i illtreated her when she first arrived, i mean i came with another girl instead of spending nompilos first night with her, yet i let her spend many nights alone...

secondly i always used to emfasise on how thin, unattractive and old fashioned she looked.. and in all the matters she didnt hate on me or hold a grudge on me... she still became a friend to me and supported me in all the wrongs i was doing...

thirdly she was cool with me dating ather girls, she didnt complain or step back, she just helped me figure myself out and instead of telling my dad or mom, she just let me be and just advised me like she was my big sister...

i think thats the reason i felt inlove with her, actually i started getting these feelings when we were still at

my dad's palace.. after i saw her crying and telling her grandmom about what was happening, i got touched in a very sensitive way.. i didn't understand why but i had that feeling...

then time passed and the feelings became worse.. i remember the day she came in the launch and found me watching tv..i had my gown and pjs under.. she came to ask me if i had any laundry for her to wash, so i went up to fetch the laundry and then i told her that i want to give her my gown aswell.. she quickly turned around and hid his face, i smiled alone and in my mind i was actually re-playing the moment over and over again...

nompilo has been nothing but a blessing in my life and i have been hell in her life..

i sat there and just smiled alone recalling all the moments..

i know we married but that's not enough...

i want it to be as natural as possible, i mean we are already in the thought that we will get married and be known as husband and wife but indoors we will

just be friends.. so we will go dinner dates and romantic night outs and be all jolly jolly outside but indoors we just friends, so no jolly jolly indoors..

now i want to change that, i want us to be a couple because i am not going to get a second wife, never, she will be my one and only wife... i dont even feel like getting a side dish or be a playboy anymore...

so i know you wondering what happened to ms khaya, ms ndimande and bongie.. well they are all still around..

the only thing that changed is that i have been avoiding them...

ms ndimande yena she tried her luck on presentation day but i pretended to be too busy to notice her...

bongie, the same thing, too busy to have time for her.. and as for ms khaya, she know were we stand... but i see her eyes sometimes but i play too dumb to notice...

nompilo knows about this, i have told her, she once made a joke saying " if only they knew that am your

wife not your lil sister, i will punch them if they dont leave you" then she laughed, then she added and said "am joking mahn, i will never punch them, its not their fault that you are hungry like a lion" we laughed together and her last words, which are the words that cut me was when she said " siya, you are lucky we not a couple, or else i was going to slice you for dating all those girls" i said " huh, i would never cheat on you" and she said " you already are, with 3 girls" ... she laughed about it but i took it in another way.. even though she said she was joking, but it hit home...

nompilo, nompilo, nompilo... apart from been skinny and not the "IT" girl, she has things that "IT" girls dont have..

she has respect, a good personality and a great sense of humour...

i got back to earth and went to the kitchen to make breakfast.. well i was planning something...

i quickly went to the shop to buy maize meal.. i tell yall i am about to really come out of my comfort

zone, just to win nompilos heart over...

i got the maize meal and came back.. i dont know how to cook porridge so i am going to ask youtube and see....

i checked the tutorial and started on the porridge..

i boiled water in the pot and added salt..

i then poured maize meal in a bowl and added tap water..

i mixed the maize meal with the water to make a little paste..

then i poured the mixer in the pot..

i then stired untill it started boiling..

i closed the pot and took a look at the mess i did on the stove and around the pot... and it was starting to smell like something was burning..

later i stired again and this porridge kept popping out and its popping on my hand and burning me so i had to stire it quick and closed it...

after i switched it off, took the pot off the stove and

placed it on the pot stand... then cleaned the stove and the pot outside...

after a while i went to change since i had maize meal everywhere my clothing and some porridge...

i changed and threw my clothing in the basket then went to nompilos room....

i knocked for a liitle while...

her : am coming...

she came and opened the door...

such beauty when she has just woken up...

me : good morning nompilo..

her : good morning siya, how are you today??

me : am great, listen i...

her : its owk siya, you dont have to appologise, i am the one to appologise...

me : oh please, who said i was going to appologise??
i was going to say that i cooked breakfast....

i wanted to laugh but i kept a seriouse face... as for

her she held her chest in shock and said "OUCH"
then i bursted in laughter and she laughed too...

me : hai mara wena..

her : you started.. lol.. so i take it you really owk...

me : yah am great, actually i really wanted to say am
sorry, i know...

her : siya??

me : no let me finish... it is going to take a while but i
will prove to you how much i love you..

her : **smiles**

me : i dont know why am even stressing because in
the eyes of the world we will be seen as married..

her : huh!! lol... but in my eyes and yours we just
friends..

me : just for now...

her : mxm, siya...

me : am just joking but am serious..

she hit me on the shoulder and laughed...

her : you said something about breakfast..

me : yes, get ready..

her : right on it..

she then closed the door and went, and i went downstairs and chilled waiting for her...

after a while she came down, well lucky because the porridge was now warm...

she came and came to me looking confused..

her : siya, weres breakfast??

me : good you done, start making one..

her : siya mara!!

me : am serious, i have been waiting for you...

her : mxm, i will make myself cereal, wena uzoz bona...

she attempted to leave.

me : am joking, sit down..

her : siya you joke to much..

me : i know, go to the dinning room..

she sat down at the dinning table..

me : i will come with breakfast..

i went to the kitchen and dished up the porridge and took it to her...

i then placed it on the table and she looked suprised and shocked and smiling...

her : you made porridge??

me : yes my lady...

her : oh my word, i wonder how it tastes...

me : it tastes amazing...

i sat down and duck in, actually she looked at me and told me to take the first taste...

i tasted it, oh yuk, i am not going to enjoy this, its tasteless.. but i pretended it was owk..

me : mhm, its great..

she lauughed at me and stood up to go to the kitchen...

i sat there dissapointed..

she came back holding sugar, butter and milk...

me : and then??

her : porridge is not porridge without these..

me : oh, so my porridge is not terrible??

her : i dont know, we will see after all ingrediants are in..

me : oh, silly me...

she laughed and added the ingrediants... then mixed it and gave me my porridge... i tasted again with fear this time...

woooooow, it was delicious...

we ate and enjoyed ourselves, mind you, no one told me that i am missing out yall....

[12/13, 14:47] Zozaness: crop top

18

****nompilo****

these past days have been nothing great days for us, siya is all chilled now and living and mina am also

doing great...

so today i woke up to these words (the gay makeover artist) "get into a gaining weight diet and tone up" so i decided to wear my old tights and a tshirt...

then i went downstairs, siya had already left for work...

i went in the kitchen and looked for something to eat.. damn me, i dont even know what to eat to gain weight, wait, let me google..

so i googled and i looked for best breakfasts to eat to gain weight...

i found a simple breakfast and made it and ate it.. then i went into the gym room where i have never entered...

i went in there and saw completely strange machines... how do i even use this??

i tried the running machine, i have seen it on tv and on youtube so it should be easy to manage it, i mean i just have to read and press right...

i went in with my earphones on and stood on the machine... i then pressed power and it switched on, then i pressed start, i didnt check other informations...

it started moving fast and i was running out of speed.. i tried stopping it but before i could even press the power off i triped and fell, then next thing black out...

siya

i was busy at work when bongie walked in..

her : siya, what is going on??

me : its mr xulu, and you dont speak like that with your bosses..

her : what?? since when??

me : bongie, how may i help you??

she just looked at me confused and shocked then left...

i went back to work and later, i mean really later, i decided to call nompilo, i have missed her..

i called her and she didnt pick up, i called again and still havent picked up..

i thought mabye shes busy so i let her be...

after an hour or so i decided to call again and someone picked up..

voice : siya...

me : hay, whose this and were is nompilo..

voice : its mrs khanyi, nompilo is in hospital..

me : what??

voice : nompilo is in hospital, she had a bad accident..

me : will she be owk??

.....

me : hello, hello...

shoot, she hung up, i quickly ran out....

[12/13, 14:48] Zozaness: The villagegirl an the playboy: arranged marriage

****siya****

i got to the hospital and asked to see nompilo.. the nurses were wasting my time asking alot of questions about my relation to nosipho, and me without thinking just blubbed out that shes my wife...

i then was sent to the ward were nompilo was.. i wasnt really worried about the nurses knowing that she is my wife...

when i got in to the ward i saw nompilo sitting up straight and talking to mrs khaya..

me : nompilo!! what happened??

her : siya!

i went to her and hugged her and she hugged me tight too... then after a while we broke the huge...

ms khaya : i will give yall privacy..

me : so, what happened??

her : i wanted to start with my gaining weight journey...

me : huh??

her : i wanted to start gyming, so i went to use your gym stuff but as i started pressing the running machine went fast and i triped and fell..

i laughed... and she looked at me with a kitty face...

me : am sorry... the reason why the machine was fast is because i was using it before i went to work...

her : how does that involve....

me : well i didnt reset it, i just switched it off...

her : siya...

she hit me then took a pillow that was at her back and threw me with it.....

me : lol, nompilo...

she also laughed...

then later the nurse came with mrs khaya and a doctor...

nurse : good afternoon sir, i see our patient is feeling owk..

nompi : well who wouldnt be owk with a besty like this man..

nurse : well its a very great thing i see here, a husband as a bestfriend.. not many couples are like that...

i looked at nompilo and at ms khaya and ms khaya seemed to be a bit confused..

ms khaya : husband??

nurse : yes, this is the patients husband..

ms khaya : oh, right... i need to go, get well soon nompilo..

she left quickly and swifly....

i looked at nompilo and ran after ms khaya...

me : khanyi

her : siya

me : please dont tell anyone..

her : why is it a secret??

me : we not yet ready to announce it??

her : how did this happen?? whas it before or after we mhm...

me : can we talk about this when we get home please...

her : can i resume work tomorrow sir..

me : owk, no problem..

her : thank you sir..

she left and i went back to nompilo...

her : how is she ??

me : she seeks explanation..

her : i guess we owe her that much..

the nurse came again and told us that nompilo can go home, but must take the pills accordingly and intime after meals.. she did mention that she shouldnt mix alcohol with pills.. but knowing nompilo she doesnt drink so thats owk...

i then helped her pack and took her home...

we got home and i instructed her to sleep...

then as i went down my phone rang...

i checked the caller ID and it was my dad....

me : baba..

him : mtwanami, how are you??

me : am fine baba..

him : how is things going on with you and makoti??

me : things are great baba..

him : great, listen boy, we have to make the wedding sooner..

me : baba??

him : the wedding can not wait till nompilo is done with school, its going to have to happen this year..

me : but theres only few months left..

him : yes we know, you have 2 months to wrap around whatever you have there..

me : but baba, that cant happen, its still too soon, nompilo is still schooling..

i was busy arguing with my dad, that i didnt hear nompilo coming down...

she came infront of me and signaled me to not

shout or speak up but calm down...

so i calmed down and wrapped up my call with my dad...

me : owk baba, i will see..

him : do just that son..

i hung up...

her : thats not how you speak to your dad siya..

me : i know but dad is really pushing it...

her : but still, hes still a grown up..

me : owk whatever... i have bad news...

her : from your father?? owk, what is it..??

me : dad wants us to get married this year, so that means you are going to attend grade 12 as a married person, officially...

her : what?? thats like calling more bullying to my side...

me : you wont get bullied..

her : siya, no!!

me : am sorry..

she was really stressed and wondering around...

me : calm down, remember you need to slow down...

she sat down and i gave her a massage...

****nompilo****

i am speechless and dont know whats wrong now...

its not enough to be called granny at school but now i will be called a married skinny granny, woowoow just woowoow....

[12/13, 14:49] Zozaness: crop top

20

****gogo****

it has been a long time since nompilo went into marriage and i hope that she is doing well.. after the call that i got from her i am really stressed and worried about her..

she does call and let me know that shes ok but i have my doubts..

today for the first time bongani (sbongiles twin brother) is coming to visit, well the chief has let us see him.. i really cant wait to see my son..

we cleaned and prepared for the big day...

me : nonhlanhla!! mbali!!

them : gogo!!

they came rushing in..these kids can be playfull...

me : how many times did (caughing) did i tell you to stop running in the house??

mbali : sorry gogo..

nonhlanhla : sorry gogo...

me : good, nonhlanhla, please make me herbal tea..

nonhlanhla : owk gogo

she left..

me : mbali, please can you help tuck in gogo..

mbali : owk gogo..she tucked me in and went to play... then later nonhlanhla brought my herbal tea... i drank and layed down waiting for my son to

arrive.....

later i heard nonhlanhla calling me .

me : yes baby..

her : there are adults looking for you gogo..

me : please lead them to my direction..

her : owk gogo..

she went to call them and they came into the bedroom... it was the 2 guards and a man.. am guessing thats my son...

as he came in i started crying, i cryied that i couldnt cry any longer... the man just stood there not aware that his mother is sheding tears for him...

i called him and he came close to me..

me : what (cough) what are you looking for??

him : my chief said i should come here, but never mensioned why...

me : were are your parents??

him : i was told that i am an orphan...'

me : i have something to tell you...(starts crying)

him : yes mam...

me : i.....i..... i am your mother...

he looked shocked and stepped back... i just held his hand...

me : you also have a twin sister..

him : no,no..

me : listen.. i am dying and i needed to tell you this before i left...

sbongile came in and she was also crying.. she came in and sat with us..

we all cried and cried..

i started to feel my heart getting strings and couldnt breath....

i started breathing heavy...

sbongile : mama!! mama!!

bongani : ma!!

then suddenly their voices faded and i blacked out..

[12/13, 14:50] Zozaness: The villagegirl an the
playboy: arranged marriage

21

nompilo

i was just chilling in my room, thinking about this
situation, i was not really happy about this decition,
but what can i say, nothing...

later siya came into my room..

him : hay

me : hay

him : hows you??

me : ask no question, hear no lie...

him : bad huh!!

me : yes...

him : i know that this is very hard for you and trust
me if i could change the dates i would...

me : its not your fault...

him : but i feel responsible...

me : dont bury yourself, its all owk...

him : **sigh**

then there was a long silence...

him : nompilo, could i ask you something??

me : yes, shoot...

him : what on earth were you thinking??

me : about??

him : going on the threadmill..

me : is that what its called??

him : yes..

me : well, i wanted to run, gym..

him : for what purpose??

me : to gain weight...

him : but to gain weight is more about what you eat..

me : i have been eating alot but still stayed the same..

him : its not about eating alot, but eating the right

nutritious....

me : huh??

him : its about eating the right foods...

me : but people always say "dont eat alot you will be fat" to people who have a big body, why wont it work for me since am thin??

him : its a whole science thing..

me : cant i just eat oily stuff only?

him : you will gain weight, but you will be unhealthy...

me : haibo, kanti what am i supposed to eat??

him : owk, lets do this, i will buy all that you need and guide you into how and when you will eat it..

me : so am back to being a baby again??

him : my baby yes....

me : mxm.. if its not the wedding being months away, its you treating me like a baby....

sbongile

i dont know what happened with my mom, she just

fainted or blacked out.. am panicking, bongani is also crying and trying to wake umama..

he quickly calms down and checks her pulse and finds that its still beating, so i quickly call the ambulance... in about a while the ambulance came and bongani and i went with her...

we got to the hospital and we were told to stay out..

we waited there and all i thought about was nompilo and how she will take this.. mbali and nonhlanhla were already cramped on the floor clueless.. they only started crying when the ambulance came and all they would do was pull my dress asking me what was going on...

their cries and words are stuck in my mind and that just makes me wanna cry even more...

we stood there for about a few minutes then the doctors came.....

me : doctor, hows my mom??

her : she is going to be owk, for now..

me : for now??

her : are you relatives of the patient??

me : yes, we are her kids..

her : please follow me..

we followed her till we got in a room were my mom was held..

she then closed the door and looked at us and sighed.. i could smell bad news...

her : ms nhlapo, your mom has a rare condition, therefor only has a few months to live..

him : what?? but i just found her...

me : what does that mean doc??

her : she has a heart failer, and even though we have a heart doner, shes very old....

i couldnt say a word, i was strangled by words on my neck and tears faught to drop down my cheek, i dared to not cry but i failed....

[12/13, 14:51] Zozaness: The villagegirl an the playboy: arranged marriage

****gogo****

its been weeks since i have been sleeping in the hospital being taken care of...

sbongile and bongani came to fetch me today...

we got home and in this long road i had my eyes on bongani, observing his skin, face, eyes, everything.. and he had a spit image of my late husband...

they took me to the bedroom and came along.. mbali and nonhlanhla were told to wait outside since we needed to talk...

me : thank you my children....

i looked at bongani and it seemed like he was longing for answers and i had to let him know before i leave this world..

me : may i speak to bongani, alone..

they all stood up and left and bongani remained seated...

me : bongani mtanam..

him : ma!!

me : i know this is probably the worst thing happening to you.. i mean you find out that i am your mother then i faint and now you find out that i have limited time to live, all in one time..

him : it has been nothing but a hell feeling..

me : am sorry my child, you dont deserve this..

him : what i dont understand is why you sold me for slavery??

me : we didnt my baby, we didnt have a choice in the matter..

him : what do you mean??

me : **sigh**

i explained everything to him, from my father being the man of the village to being on the chiefs mercy and finally struggling to get a wife to marry the family to him being taken for slavery...

him : ***silence***

me : say something my baby...

him : what can i say?? that i understand?? because i

dont... mama its still no reason... you couldve let them take all the money they needed but you didnt... you let them take me instead...

me : am sorry, i know it all looks wrong but i swear my baby, we had no choice..

him : theres no use holding on the past, its done its done..

me : thank you..

him : so, since am out of slavery, that means someone got married to the chiefs son right??

me : yes..

him : who??

me : my granddaughter, sibongiles first daughter....

him : ohh, how old is she??

me : shes 16 going to 17..

him : so young??

me : yes, it had to be done....

him : how is she??

me : i guess shes owk, because everytime she calls me she tells me shes owk...

him : no mama, she can never be owk, the chiefs son is not a marrieg type..

me : what do you mean??

him : siyabonga is nothing but a playboy..

me : ini??

him : since i have been a servant there, i have seen girls coming in and out of his house..

me : really??

him : yes, i used to be the one he paid to escort or bring them in...

me : wait, what??

him : is it nompilo??

me : yes it is...

him : i remember her, even on her first days, girls were still coming in.. am really sorry, i didnt know that she would happen to be my own sisters child...

me : bongani, even though its not your relatives, you cant be promoting such behaviour..

him : i know, at first i didnt want, but when it came to him paying me, i took the opportunity...

me : but its owk my boy, whats important now is me getting to know you...

him : me too mama..

we talked more then i called for sbongile...

me : sbongile mtanam, am really sorry. i know i wasnt supposed to hide your brother...

her : its owk mama, i understand...

me : i am so glad that finally i see my babies together...

i spent some time with them and all that i felt was love. i wasnt bothered about my time being limited, i just lived the moment...

later mbali and nonhlahla came and spent some time with me, asking questions and laughing with me...

we spoke all day and later i then thought of nompilo, i wasnt sure whether to tell her what happened or let her be so i took a real moment to think, i then came to a conclusion that am not gonna tell her, because that might just make her worried....

nompilo

i was busy chasing siya with a cloth, this guy woke me up with yogurt on my face....

hes standing at the tree and am a few feet away from him...

me : siya, so you think this is funny??

him : no, its not..

me : why did you do that mara??

him : because its my birthday...

me : haibo, since its your birthday why did you smash yogurt on my face?? i should put yogurt on your face...

him : nah, i just felt silly so i did it..

me : i will get you siya...

i went back in the house and went to clean my face...
i then took a shower and came down...

siya was in his room, am sure he was bathing...

and please dont mind him when he said it was his
birthday, its not... i know his birthday....

i prepared some flour and placed it under the table..

later he came down..

him : what are we having??

me : huh??

him : breakfast??

me : cereal..

him : owk..

we sat ate and went to watch tv while we laughed
and made jokes... i had forgotten that i had a plan...

hours later theres no interesting movies to watch, so
we dip into sleeping...

i woke up wanting the bathroom, but thats when i
remembered that knonje i had a plan..

i went to the toilet and came back, i took the flour that i placed under the table and went to him slowly..

i then poured the flour on siya as he was sleeping and he woke up like a flying machine...

him : nompilo are you crazy...

me : love you..

i ran, because i knew he was coming for me..

him : what??

me : what??

he was now standing there smiling, i was confused as to why hes smiling and not trying to kill me..

him : so you love me huh??

me : as a friend..

him : dont lie..

me : mxm..

him : you my lady are going to clean this mess including me..

me : huh!!

him : i showered and you made me dirty so you will clean me...

haibo this guy..

i laughed so hard that i didnt see him approach me..

as i looked up i just saw him close and he hugged me..
i fell in the moment...

he then leaned in and kissed me.. his mouth had flour but at that moment i didnt mind..

i wont lie, i have been falling for the new siya... him leaving those girls infront of me made me have that strange feeling...

we stayed in the moment till i pulled out..

him : sorry!!

me : its owk, i love you siya..

he looked at me and said nothing... i wonder whats running in his mind....

[12/13, 14:51] Zozaness: The villagegirl an the playboy: arranged marriage

continuation

siya has been staring at me for a good minute...

me : siya!!

he attempted to speak but no word came out..

i looked down in shame and moved down, but before i could get passed him, he held my arm..

him : nompilo are you serious??

me : yes siya..

him : i dont believe this, wait a minute, am i hearing correctly??

me : **giggle**

him : nompilo, am i dreaming??

me : hai skat, you not dreaming babe....

him : oh my word.. i have been waiting for this moment my whole life....

her : mxm..your whole life?? You just knew me this year...

Him : mxm you know what I mean...

i smiled as i moved to try and pass him, but he

picked me up and ran around with me on his shoulder...

he then spun me around and finally placed me down looking into my eyes....

him : you will not regret this, i swear.....

me : i hope so...

he then leaned in and kissed me and i responded...

chief

i was so happy about the wedding.. we have been trying to get the two families together but failed for many years now i need to make sure that they get married...

the reason why we moved the wedding to august this year is so that they can quickly get them married and i can be respected again...

the agricultural business will give recommendation and i will be seen as true chief that supports agriculture...

i was sitting on my chair in the house, thinking about this and busy hoping that nompilo is behaving..

then later my wife entered...

her : baba..

me : maxulu

her : njani??

me : ngiyaphila maxulu, its just that am pretty worried about this wedding of my son..

her : why baba..

me : i just wish that, that girl doesnt mess up like all the passed ofspring...

her : she wont, shes very young, and imature, she wont think of that..

me : but this thing of nompilo going to school, makes me more uneasy..

her : yah, uqinisile baba, that part i also dont like, but you heard what siya said..

me : i dont care what siya said, he knows nothing..

her : manje baba, what can we do??

me : we need to make the wedding more sooner..

her : baba, you already fought with your son because of the wedding moving to august, now, you will make things worse..

me : but what do we do now...??

her : let them be, siya promised that he will take care of nompilo, so trust them..

me : i guess you right maxulu..

her : i know baba, let me go make you something to eat..

me : thank you maxulu..

she went out..

i still wasnt having it, but theres not much i can say...

***** 3 weeks later*****

nompilo

1 month and 2 weeks left before the wedding.. well am not worried or scared because siya and i get along very well...

i have been on this gaining weight diet for 2-3 weeks now and theres not much of a change yet, but

patience...

siya is also on some diet as to motivate me and to help me to not fall out of my diet..

for me to eat junk is not much of a problem, but he still tells me to stay away..

so the gaining weight plan is on a go..

so today is friday and i am running late to school..

i know you probably wondering how was my first day, in second term with my hair out and no binny..

well, i was still a skinny granny, but i had amazed alot of kids with how my hair looks.. some say that i have extentions, some say its perfect fake hair and am trying to "fitin", some say it looks great on me...

most kids dont believe that my eyes and hair are my real eyes and hair, they say they just perfectly placed...

anyway that was my first day experience in the second term...

i went down running to siyas car..

him : hao, mama, i have been waiting for some time now, what kept you??

me : sorry, i woke up late.

him : hurry, get in the car...

i got in the car and he drove away.. we were talking and laughing and listening to music in the car...

we got to the school gate..

me : ohh shucks, theres no one at the gate, am really late..

him : mama, relax, should i walk you in??

me : no, no need, whenever theres no one at the gate, you wont be asked questions but the problem is the class teacher..

him : i could speak to the teacher..

me : no siya, dont worry, if they send me back home i will call you, owk??

him : owk, mama... see you later, or now now..

me : thats if i get sent back...

him : lol...

i gave him a kiss and quickly got out of the car..

i want aware that i wasnt the only one late..

apparently 3 other girls were also late..

good news is that am not the only one late, so my fears has dropped a little, plus am a first time late comer so they can forgive.. as for them, its their routin..

well, i know them, 1 is in my class, the most bossy one that always starts me.. she was the beginner of "skinny granny with a binny" and her netball crew followed then the whole school followed, well almost the whole school...

bad news is that, i think they saw me kissing siya and that means more bullying because, everyone thought siya is my brother and i have never corrected anyone, due to fear.. but i guess today's is my unfortunate day.. i just hope maybe they didnt see because its going to get heated...

i walk in the school hurrying up and went to class, luckily the teacher was not there so i just walked in

and went straight to my desk. i sit next to my best friend...

me : morning.

her : morning mpilo, why you late today??

me : woke up late..

her : shm, sorry..

we then went on with our day.....

[12/13, 14:54] Zoaness: The villagegirl an the playboy: arranged marriage

23

****nompilo****

it was now break, so brenda, lucy and i went to our usual tree and sat there enjoying our lunch...

not much later, the 3 girls that came late with me in the morning, came to us...

i just knew that trouble was approaching..

the bossy one goes by the name lisa, then its amanda and lizzy...

lisa : well well well, if it isnt the witch itself..

i wasnt really worried so i just kept quite...

lisa : so, skinny granny, since you couldnt find a guy, you saw that its fit to date your brother??

me : **silence**

lisa : am talking to you...

me : **silence**

amanda : she doesnt seem to know what to say..

lisa : so you think just because you put eye contacts and extentions, you think you beautifull?? be you girl, be the skinny granny you are...

amanda : hay lisa, how about we make her natural, and reveal who she really is??

lisa : good idea, invite the soccer boys and girls and the netball girls.. the others who come will be bonus....

i was now scared, i didnt know what she was talking about, but i feared for my life.....

i saw some pupuls approaching and we stood up

from under the tree.. but as i stood up lisa came to me, pulled me by my hair to be seen...

lisa : ladies and gentlemen, i present the real skinny granny, with no fake hair and no eye contacts... you ready??

some pupuls : yebo..

brenda : who said that nompilos eyes are fake nor her hair..

lisa : its not possible that they could be real..

lizzy : hay lisa, should i expose this witch??

lisa : go ahead then i will expose this grannies real fake beauty..

lizzy : well everyone, it has apeared that the person we all know as grannys brother, is actually her lover...

pupuls : yhoooooo

lisa : no, hes not her lover, hes just under her spell..

i was really hurt, i didnt know what was going on.. tears flowed down, i was really hurt...

lisa : the time is here..

she pulled my hair for my face to look up, and the sun flushed my eyes, that moment my eyes began to sting.. then i remembered that i shouldnt look at the son directly..

lisa : amanda, take out the eye contacts..

amanda came and started busy trying to prickle my eyes, i tried to tell them that if they carry on i might end up bling but they didnt care...

i cried and cried... brenda and lucy couldnt do anything so did i...

with amamda busy in my eyes, my eyes started stinging even worse that i started seeing everything blurry...

amanda : lisa, these dont look like contacts...

lisa : what?? lets see the hair..

they started fidgiting on my hair and pulling it..

but i didnt care much, i was worried because i couldnt see correctly now, everything is blurry..

then i heard mrs thando yelling from a distance for the kids to stop.. but the kids actually spread out and

ran when mr belon appeared.. even lisa,lizzy and amanda left me there and ran away, warning me to not say a word..

i fell on my knees, brenda and lucy came to comfort me, the teacher then came to me and picked me up to take me to the principals office...

mrs thando : are you owk nompilo??

me : yes mam, i just cant see properly..

i then got to the principals office.. with brenda and lucy..

principal : what happened??

i looked down thinking whether i should tell the truth or leave lisa and them out of the story am about to tell... but i dont have time to talk, my eyes are stinging preddy hard and its becoming worse...

me : sir, i cant really talk right now, my eyes are stinging, and i think am gonna go bling because right now am seeing blurry...

him : do you have a private ophthalmologist??

me : whats that??

him : an eye doctor??

me : no, i go to a public doctor...

him : owk, lets get you to the hospital..

brenda and lucy carried me to the principals car because i couldnt see.. and the principal drove me to the hospital, with lucy and brenda..

i got to the hospital and taken to the doctors room, they said it was an emergency.. but the others staid there to fill in the forms for me...

i was now in the room, laying on the bed facing up, still crying because i couldnt see properly..

the doctor came..

her : good morning mam, am doc luthando, how are you??

me : am not owk, my eyes are stinging very badly and i see everything blurry..

her : before i start, is there someone to pay for your medical treatments??

me : yes, my fiance

well i was done with lies.. i guess its time the truth spoke out..

she gave me a weird look and i knew she was questioning how i could be engaged while at school..

me : arranged marriage...

her : oh owk, can we contact him?

me : yes..

i gave them the contact details, they called him and later came in to tell me that he is on his way and we may proceed....

they started with my eye treatment and hell it was paining....

just after my treatment the paining was gone but still i couldnt see properly, but the doctor gave me glasses to wear all the time, its like cute glasses so they not bad, but now i have to wear them all the time or else i will see everything blurry and that will hurt my eyes even more..

so after the treatment i learned that siya had arrived, so the doctor asked for him to come to the room

that i was in..

he later came...

him : mama!! are you owwk??

me : am owwk..

him : what happened??

doc : thats what i would also like to know...

me : may i also ask that my principal come to hear this??

doc : owwk..

the doctor went to call the principal..

him : mama, whats wrong??

me : you will know once everyone is here....

they came in and i saw that brenda and lucy also were here..

doc : the two ladies asked to be here..

me : its owwk..

i took a deep breath and told everyone what had happened... everyone looked sad and worried but

siya, siya looked mad, like he was about to strangle someone...

i was filled with tears in my eyes.. my principal was also angry but also dissapointed or sad..

after all that i said it was quite.. but after a long while, siya spoke..

him : when did this bulling begin??

i looked at him and hes eyes were red and watery and he was looking straight in my eyes in anger..

me : begining of this year...

siya hit his thighs with his fist and stood up and left..

i wanted to follow but i didnt know if that was appropriate..

so i just sat there looking down...

[12/13, 14:55] Zozaness: The villagegirl an the playboy: arranged marriage

continuation

doc : you do know that this is another level of buling??

me : yes.

doc : this has caused you to have difficulty in sight and has really damaged your fiances pockets..

principal, lucy, brenda : fiance??

ohh yah right.. they dont know.. well its time they know..

me : yes sir, yes guys.. siya is not my brother, he is my fiance..

principal : how?? you still in school, you very young..

me : i was taken into arranged marridge by my grandparents..

principal : this is wrong..

me : sir, atleast he loves me, atleast he lets me finish school even though his father didnt want me too..

doc : thats not the issue, the issue is that there must be something done with this situation..

principal : indeed these kids must be punished...

doc : as a doctor i must advice you this.. you need to report this to the police..

me : oh, i dont think so..

principal : theres no need, please, they also kids with a future, i will see what i can do to them..

me : may i please be excused..

siya

i am pissed, mad, crazy hell i dont even know how to explain how i feel at the moment.. dont mistake me, i am not angry at her but at the situation..

for the fact that nompilo has been going through this and still managed to pull a smile on her face, at the house and pretend like everything is alright.. that just pisses me off...

i was sitting in the car with my head on the steering weel, windows closed and car locked..

then later i heard a knock on the window, i looked up and saw it was nompilo.. i unlocked the car and she got in and then i locked the car again...

we stayed in the car for a while in silence....

her : siya??

me : mama??

her : you dont look handsome when you angry papa...

i looked at her, then laughed at how stupid nompilo can be, but her stupidity is cute...

i laughed then smiled at her...

me : do i look handsome now, mama??

her : yah..

me : ***giggle*** **sighs**

me : why didnt you tell me?? why hide it away from me??

her : i was scared, i didnt know how??

me : mama, you didnt have to be scared of me..

her : not of you but of what you would do if you found out and what they would do if they knew that i told someone...

me : arnt you afraid of what i would do now??

her : i am, which is why i want to know what you will do??

me : i dont know, i really dont know...

her : you not gonna hurt them right??

me : come on, i am the only one that can teas you

her : mxm..

i smiled at her and she smiled too, but i knew that deep down she is still hurt....

she laid her head on my shoulder and i kissed her head and brushed her hair, which was looking messy...

then there was a knock on the window door, i looked up and it was one of mama's friends..

i opened the window..

me : yes???

her : good afternoon sir, the doctor is asking for you and nompilo..

me : oh owk, we wil be there, thanks for letting us know..

her : pleasure..

i closed the window..

me : mama, lets go..

we got out the car and went back inside.. the principal was now sitting at the reception with nompilo's 2 friends..

we got in the doctors room and sat down..

doc : sir, i hope you have calmed down..

me : yes am good doc..

doc : good, mrs are you fine??

her : am good doc..

doc : owk, so i called you in so that i can give you your medication and ask some questions...

her : owk doc

doc : right so when did this defect start??

her : from birth.

doc : oh i see.. owk, i am going to give you these eye dropers.. drop some in your eyes at night before you slep..

her : owk..

doc : then these are eye contact lenses, you can use them if you dont want to wear glasses..

her : so these are the contacts that they thought i had??

doc : no, they thought you had eye colour contact lenses..

her : owk, but am good with my glasses..

doc : owk, so please avoid using lashes, mascara and eye liners untill your vision comes back.. and please keep coming for check up and cleansing every month for 4 months, even after your vision is back..

her : owk doc..

she took her medications, we thanked the doc and went to pay the funds for the medications..

she went to her friends and i went to the principal, i owe him a good thank you...

me : good afternoon sir, i never had time to greet you am sorry..

him : its owk.. i wont lie, it came in a shock to know that you actually nompilo's fiance.

me : i know, i never wanted people to know like this, but those bullies just took over..

him : yah, but it was kind of you to let her finish school first..

me : yah, its what she wanted, so i had to keep her happy...

him : wise man..

me : i wanted to ask, so whats going to happen now??

him : i will punish them, but i also need to follow the policy of the school.. therefore i cant do anything due to my feelings..

me : i understand, but something must be done, nompilo cant always be in fear..

him : i will send you a message regarding what will happen, as for now, since we havnt started exams, nompilo can stay at home till she is emotionally owk..

me : thank you, i will get her emotional help aswell..

him : am glad she is owk..

me : thanks to you for taking her to the hospital..

him : i was just doing my job..

me : thank you.

him : farewell.

me : farewell

i signaled to nompilo for us to go, she came and we left.. her friends went back to school with the principal.

[12/13, 15:05] Zozaness: 24

****siya****

we got in the car, after she closes the door, i take a look at her, shes far in thoughts, shes not saying a word, i could feel her pain..

i try to say something but she speaks first..

her : dont say a word siya, just take me home..

i take a second looking at her, shes very serious, shes thinking far.. i look away and face the

wheel..then i took a deep sigh and drove home...

we got home, i opened the gate and the garage drove in then closed the gate then closed the garage, then i , parked and sat in the car for a couple of minutes..

me : mama, what can i do to help you??

her : let me go sleep, please..

i could tell that she wants to break down, i say no word.. i get out and she also gets out.. we get in the house and she goes straight to her room...

i left her to be alone for a moment.. at the moment i make something to eat..

after a while, the food is ready, so i take our plates to her room.

i knock and knock but theres no answer, so i open and walk in..

she is sleeping..

i sit on the side of the bed and gently wake her up..

she wakes up a little irritated, then looks at me with

that "i wil" look

i just smile at her and that was my winning point.

me : i brought food, i know you hungry..

her : like a lion..

i giggled. i then handed her, her plate and we ate in silence.. mama was really hurt, like really hurt...

as we were eating my phone rang. i didnt even check who it was i just ignored it, i mean its lunch time now...

the phone rings again and i still ignore it.. then the third time it rang i took out my phone and realised that it was my father..

me : mama, can i answer this..

she nods and i answer..

me : baba..

him : son, how are you??

me : am fine baba....

him : hows makoti??

me : shes, shes fine..

him : owk son... we just wanted to let you know that we have decided that in the week we will like yall to come back for the preparation of the wedding..

me : baba...

him : no siyabonga, it has to be done, remember we.....

me : baba, with all due respect i am kinda busy right now, please call me later..

him : owk son, but prepare yall self..

me : owk baba, greet mommy for me..

him : owk son..

i hung up and went back to mama...

her : the food is nice thank you.

me : anything for you mama...

she smiled and finished up..

when i was done, i went down to put the dishes in the dish washer..

then went back to her room...

me : mama, lets go watch a movie..

her : great, i need some distraction..

we went to the living room and looked what to watch..

she asked to watch a bollywood movie, so i turned it on for her...

it was a movie about a couple that was arranged to marry each other but they both didnt want to...

the man, didnt want to love the woman or marry the woman because in his past he once dated a girl and they were so madly inlove, he loved his girlfriend so much but one time the girl got involved in a car accident infront of him and died on the spot...

the girl was about the same situation... in her past she was also in a relationship with a man she loved with all her heart, they lived a nice life and loved each other dearly, but one time he found a job oversea and told her that he has excepted it.. the girl had no choice but to allow. so the man left and after some

time it was said that he had committed suicide...

so both of these had common pasts and thats why not one of them wants to try..

but at the end they get to know about eachothers pasts and that connectet them..

that made me think about me and mama.. she brought difference, uniqueness and light in my life.. now i need to do the same...

as we watching this movie, i fell asleep...

[12/13, 15:06] Zoaness: The villagegirl an the playboy: arranged marriage

25

****a week****

****nompilo****

so its been a week and i havnt decided to go back to school.. since that day all i ever do is wakeup, eat, sleep and thats it... oh i forgot to tell yall guys.. mrs khaya left us just after siya told her about me and told her that she was never in his plans..

now we have a new helper, shes an elderly woman, her name is mam zondo.. i never used to let her do alot of work alone, i mean shes an old person, shes around her 50s...

but ever since this incident happened, i have been intimate.... wanting to be alone most of the time... siya has gotten me a phychologist and she is coming every saturday and tomorrow is her first time coming...

siya has also been taking outs on work to check on me, well he has been trying to help me but i have not really let someone in...

it was 10pm when siya came back from work...

i was in my room still sleeping...

in just a few minute he came in...

siya : no mama, no... really!!

i didnt know what he was talking about, so i stood up and gave him a confused facial reaction..

him : mama, listen i know that you going through some rough patch.. but what is this??

me : what is what??

him : you in a messy room!! curtains closed, the room is smelly, there is dirt everywhere, like really?? have you turned into a hobo??

me : siya, how could you say that??

him : mama, sobing around, being messy will not make you better, but getting your head off things will help you..

i knew he was telling the truth.. i looked down.. he went to open the curtains and the window, then came to sit next to me..

him : if you continue like this, you will be called stinky messy granny

at first i took it as an offence, but then i quickly remembered that siya is joka joka so noone should really be offended by him..

i then playfully hit him on the shoulder and he started grinching..

him : aaaaaaaaaa, ouch, that hurt, aaaaaa

me : are you owk?? am really sorry..

i said this while trying to help him, then he looked at me and laughed...

him : sike...

i climbed ontop of him and started punching him and slapping him.. he then threw me on the bed, stood up and went to the door..

him : this is man abuse, am getting you arrested..

we both laughed...

him : clean up this room, it smells, feet, ampits and mhm

me : and what??

him : you want me to say it so that you can hit me, nyeke..

i laughed and he went out and used his 2 fingers to close his nose and laughing..

siya can be a jurk sometimes..hai...

so i got up and started cleaning, i was actually feeling more cheered after being with siya...

***siya**

it was really hurt breaking to see mama like this, this is not her...

those bullies really messed up my baby...

i went down to make something to eat and when i was almost done mam zondo walked in..

her : haw nomzane, wasnt i supposed to make yall food??

me : dont worry mama, i was just bored so i thought i should make food..

her : oh owk..

she then went upstairs to attend to ather rooms.. well we only make her pack stuff, my baby refused to make her do fully work, she said she rather do it but not have an old lady clean after her...

i agree with her...

just as i was in the middle of finishing the cooking, i recieved a call from an unknown number...

me : mr xulu speaking hello...

him : good afternoon mr xulu, its principal mogale

speaking..

me : oh mr mogale, how are you sir??

him : all good mr xulu, and yourself??

me : am fine..

him : so how is nompilo??

me : shes pulling through, day by day....

him : i feel bad for her.. anyway i called regarding the hearing..

me : diddisciplinary hearing??

him : yes, its taking place on sunday morning, and nompilo needs to be present..

me : no problem, we will be there..

him : please do come with the medical papers as proof of what this bullies almost did to nompilo...

me : owk, will do..

him : that will be it, thank you for your time sir..

me : all is well mr bengu..

him : goodbye..

me : bye..

he hung up and i finished cooking..

minutes later another call came through...

i looked at it and it was my dad...

me : baba...

him : yall are supposed to be here already, have yall forgotten that the wedding is in a couple of weeks...??

me : no dad i havnt forgotten, i have to be at nompilos school on monday, its very important...

him : son..

me : sorry dad, you cutting, cant hear you, dad, dad....

i hung up...

dad has bad timing nje....

[12/13, 15:07] Zozaness: The villagegirl an the playboy: arranged marriage

crop top

26

nompilo

the alarm goes off, its already monday morning, the day i wished to not come...

i wasnt ready to face lisa and her friends, i wasnt ready to enter the school gate, i was shaking, i was having second thoughts about going to this disciplinary hearing...

i was now sitting on my bed thinking, should i or shoudnt i?? few minutes later there is a knock on my bedroom door... its siya..

me : come in..

he walks in.. he was already dressed up and done with getting ready.. he must be rushing to get to school huh!!

me : i see you cant wait to get to school...

him : yes, i cant wait to know what they will do with those bullies...

me : ohh, you better get going before you become late and miss the big reveal....

him : is that a way of saying you backing out??

me : will you let me??

him : nop, nice try though, so get ready...

he left and i started mumbling alone.. i really wasnt ready for this day..

i went to shower... its really hard without my glasses.. like i need them all the time, when i take them out my vision becomes blurry, but with them it becomes better because i see a little clear..

so since i am going to shower, i put on contact lenses and went to shower... i decided not to take them off because they were easier and comfortable..

ather then wearing glasses and showing everyone that am four eyes...

i then got dressed in my uniform and went down to the kitchen to have breakfast..

i found mam zondo sitting and having breakfast with siya.. they were talking and laughing... well if yall didnt know, we treat mam zondo as our parent, we have breakfast, lunch and dinner with her... then siya drives her home...

so seeing them together placed a smile on my face..

in my head it was like i was seeing myself with gogo, nonhlanhla and mbali... i really miss those people...i wonder how gogo is, speaking about this, i need to ask siya to take me to them, just to visit and come back, plus i wont tell them that am coming, i will just show up as a suprise...

back to my senses, i get down and greet..

me : morning mam zondo

her : hay my child, how did you sleep??

me : great, untill my alarm woke me up...

her : i understand you, my child always says the alarm is unfair, it always waits for you to have a nice sleep then it disterbs...

me : lol, true..bad timing nje..

her : hai suka, its laziness nje...

i laughed as i went to pour myself some cherios.....

her : hao, nompilo, arnt you going to greet your husband??

me : mhm, he was the second alarm that made sure

that i heard the first alarm...

her : lol.. crazy couple..

him : mam zondo, dont mind her, its her inner soul speaking..

me : mxm...

i sat down, ate and we headed out to school... here comes my biggest fear..my heart is racing, my mind is spinning, i feel like i can turn this car around and go back home and speak...

we get to school, straight to the staffroom.. people are seated, lisa and her friends have not arrived.. shoooo am early..

minutes later, they walk in with their parents one after another, minutes apart.. as they walk in, my heart races, it jumps, i feel my stomach making sounds, i wanna go to the toilet, i wanna relieve myself but again i dont want to... am shaking, i feel tears coming.. the whole scene of the day they pull me, plays in my mind again... i start getting angry..

the teachers speak, siya speaks, people start talking..

mina am not in the conversation, am looking at lisa, amanda and lizzy... they dont seem sorry, they show no remorse, they show a dont care attitude, they just dont care...

my eyes, mind and attention is with them.. suddently they look at me, all three of them, i dont know why.. little by little i hear someone calling my name..

principal : nompilo!!!

i jump and realise its the principal, i look at him and he repeats his question..

him : would you like to explain what happened that day??

i look at lisa then at lizzy then at amanda then i started speaking... i told them everything, and halve way through the story i started talking with tears dropping down with no permission...

they were also asked why they did it.. they tried lying but we had more prove then they can think, so they are busted..

it is time for the final say from the representative of

the department of education and department of safety and health...

i await to know what's the outcome..

i look at them they look scared.. i feel for them, but.....

there's nothing i can do....

[12/13, 15:08] Zoaness: The village girl and the playboy: arranged marriage

27

it's been a long silence.. then finally the elders spoke...

d.health : we have full proof that these girls have harmed Nompilo, on health grounds.. they have caused Nompilo to be rushed to a private hospital because of what they have done to her eyes... if anyone didn't know, Nompilo has eye defects that she got from birth, that's why her eyes are this scary gray... so not only did they get her to not see but they also caused that Nompilo and her fiancé pay dearly for the treatments that will help Nompilo and as the

papers say, its a 4 month treatment..

principal : thank you mr mbatha, anyquestions regarding the health part??

no one asked a question..

principal : thank you mr mbatha... can we have the department of education

d.education : i will get straight to the point... we have a very stricked law againsed bulling, and this bulling has actually stepped out of the schools reach..

medical issues are involved, finances are high, fear, low self esteem, counselling sessions and all that are taking place, therefore what i have decided is taken to be fair... firstly the parents of lisa brian and amanda tshomela will be reliable for nompilos treatment funds, since they had direct effect on nompilos eye problem..

thier parents looked shocked and supprised...

d.education : secondly, the three girls are suspended for the rest of the year, but will spend their days in the youth detention center..

the girls seemed really shocked..

parent 1 : so, what is this youth detention center??

d.education : its a place representing jail.. but they not in jail, they will be cleaning, leaning about bulling and we will be finding out why the person became a bully, so they also get counselling...

parent 2 : will we ever see our daughters??

d.education : yes you can, but only during visiting hours.. its more like rehab...

parent 3 : so how much is the treatment fund??

d.education : everything is on the papers..

they continued and continued asking questions and getting answers... they sighed contracts and all was well.... then after the hearing, the parents came to appologise to me and siya, then we went in the car...

i was sitting in the car, waiting for siya, who was busy talking to the principal and other elders.. then as siya came, he knocked on my window, i opened the door and he walked in..

him : those girls are so lucky they not spending their days with hardcors in prison..

me : come on siya..

he didnt even grin, he was dead serious...

we drove home and i was very relieved that all is done.. well i was told to come back to school 2 weeks before exams..

as we got home, we went in the house and siyas dad and mom was there...

we got in and went straight to the couch, and sat opposit them...

siya : if its the wedding thing, am sorry but we will need to postpone..

baba : ungalinge, dont you try me siyabonga..

siya : am being serious dad, its our wedding after all so we have the final say..

i was really confused at what siya was saying but glad at the same time... i wasnt thinking about the wedding these past week and its weird that am not even intertaining it at the moment...

mama : siyabonga, thats your father you talking to...

siya sat down and looked at his father..

siya : baba, the wedding will be on the date that we set, not the date that you set, end of story...

baba : siyabo.....!!

mama : baba, yehlisha umoya.. we understand your situation my babies... first is being forced to marry a stranger, then its nompilos granny being hospitalized and now the wedding.. its too much pressure...

i think i didnt hear that right.. my granny??

hospitalized ?? what is the chiefs wife talking about??

me : sorry, ma, what about my granny being hospitalized??

mama : huh!! did i say that?? you must have heard that wrong...

me : ma, please...

mama : owk!! but please try and relax..

me : ma!!

mama : so, your granny got a heart attack and got hospitalized after she saw her long lost son..

me : long lost son?? heart attack??

i felt like my head was spinning, all this was not making sense, i wanted to ask more questions but my throat was heavy..

siya : mom,dad i think its time yall left..

they started squiling and talking but my mind didnt care about them.. all that was in my mind was my granny, and only my granny..

wait, what about my siblings.?? with gogo sick, how they going to survive?? i need to go home, gogo needs me

[12/13, 15:09] Zozaness: 28

****nompilo****

after the whole meeting siyas parents left..

i was still sitting on the couch with my head droped down and mu hands covering my forehead..

siya came, sat next to me and placed his hand

around my shoulders...

him : mamas, i dont know what to say..

me : its owk siya... its not your fault..

him : no mamas, what hurts you, hurts me.. i just dont understand how you survive..

me : i am strong i guess..

him : but all this is not fair.. first you came in my house and you survived the horrible treatment i gave you.. secondly we move here, and you survive bullying for months without even showing me any signs... thirdly you get hospitalized by the bullies and now you must wear glasses all the time and go counselling... an now you hear that your grandma was hospitalized.. now all that together is a river of pain...

me : i will survive, like always...

he rubbed my shoulder and tears were now threatening to come, so i stood up to avoid alot of emotional feelings...

i went to make coffee and siya followed me, i think

he noticed my watery eyes..

he then held my shoulders while looking at me..

him : let it out, please..

when he said this, i knew he was speaking of me crying..

i am a tough girl, i dont cry, i need to be strong for my siblings and granny and my husband to be.. right now is not the time to be crying...

me : trust me siya, its all out... am owwk..

him : i have known you for less than a year, but i can tell when you not owwk mamas..

me : well papas, am great...

him : serious??

me : serious...

he leaned in and kissed my forehead...

i smiled at him..

him : so what would you like for lunch??

me : huh! am not really hungry, this hearing took all

my appetite... but am having double my meal in dinner...

him : lol... owk mamas..

me : i will be in my room when you need me..

him : what about the coffee you were about to make??

me : huh!! papas will take over and bring it to me..

him : huh.. lol, wena neh!! owk mamas

i then kissed his cheek and went to my room...

when i got to my room and headed straight to the shower, i was still having a "owk" look, as if someone was watching me.... i got naked and went into the shower, i sat down and let the water fall on my head and down the rest of my body... i wasnt crying, i was just

****siya****

i wasnt sure whether mamas was truly owk or she was just acting strong... but i guess i have to trust her...

i got done making her coffee, actually i made 2, i was also craving some...

i took them up to her room.. i got there and opened the door with my chin since my hands were full...

mamas was not in her bed, but i heard the shower running so i guessed that shes in the shower...

i placed the cups on the drawer and went to the bathroom door.. i wanted to let her know that am done making coffee, so that she doesnt find it cold...

me : mamas!! your coffee is ready...

her : owk!!

i went to sit on the small couchy bench and have my coffee there...

after few minutes nompilo came out butt naked...

i was shocked, i didnt know what i should do..

her eyes, they screamed help.. her face was looking ashamed, or sad or worried, i just couldnt figure it out...

me : mamas, what are you doing?? why you not

dressed??

her : take a good look at me siya...

me : mamas, listen...

her : siya, i said take a good look at me, can you see how thin i am...

me : mamas, i dont care how thin you are, you the only girl i love..

her : then sleep with me...

i bit my tounge, i widened my eyes, my heart stopped, what is nompilo saying??

me : mamas, i dont get it..

her : i want you to take my viginity siya, now...

me : mamas... i cant, you in an emotional state and i dont want to take advantage of you...

her : just say you dont want, because you dont feel me..

me : mamas, thats not what am saying.. lets first wait for our wedding... dont you want your purity to be taken once you married??

her : whats the difference, its not like one of us will run away, we the same as married because we were arranged to marry each other no matter what..

me : but mamas....

her : siya.. you were never married to all those girls you slept with, why do you wanna wait when it comes to me..??

i stood up and went to her...

me : mamas, i love you, i care about you, i respect you.. thats the difference between you and all the those girls.. you amazing, mannered, loving and thats rare to find, but...

her : but am too thin to even make you drool over my body and have you sleep with me right??

me : wrong, i....

her : no siya, am sure if i had big bums, big boobs and all that sexy body, you woudve jumped to the idea of sleeping with me... but because am thin, you act this way..

me : mamas...

her : please leave...

me : nompilo....

her : siyabonga...

i looked at her for a good minute, just staring into her eyes.. i see that her eyes are starting to be filled with tears...

i stared even longer and leaned in to whisper in her ears..

me : mamas, besides my mother you the only girl i love and always will.. you the only girl for me, the only girl i want, the only girl i wanna marry, the only girl i wanna have kids with.. most of all, you my life...

she started crying and hugged me.. i reached out for a blanket and covered her.. i knew she would not just be owk after so much pain, but now she is suffering alone and doesnt want to share the pain with me...

her : (while crying) lisa always used to say that no one would want to sleep with me.. she said that i would die a virgin....

me : dont listen to that one, she only said those

things because she was feeling threatened..

her : by what siya?

me : they always say a girl with a bad personality is rotten, even though she has a million dollar body, she is still rotten.. so lisa was rotten and wanted to be gold like you...

her : i guess...

me : but dont mind those people.. now go get dressed, i will make you another cup of coffee. i am sure this one is cold..

her : thank you... oh and siya, am sorry about...

me : hai, dont sweat it, you my girl.. and i understand..

her : thank you, you a very kind person...

i took her cup of coffee and mine and went to make her another cup and warm her previous one for myself...

after that she came down..

we had coffee...

gogo

it has been a while and i get along great with my twin kids...

sbongile and kevin have gone back to gauteng..
lindiwe has not been visiting for some time..

now am left with bongani, mbali and nonhlanhla...

i was sitting with bongani in the room, my grandkids were at school..

i have grown sicker and sicker by day, but atleast bongani was with me all the time..my long taken son...

today i woke up feeling worser then all ather days, i woke up feeling strenghless...

bongani walked in with a cup of herbal tea...

i sat up..

me : thank you my son...

him : how are you feeling today mama??

me : not getting better...

him : should we get you to the hospital??

me : no my son, i will be fine...

****narration****

gogo started shaking, she spilled her tea and the cup fell and broke. bongani was calling his mom for a response.. he then called the ambulance and tried keeping his mom awake till they come but gogo gave was breathing slowly and her eyes were shut, without saying a word..

*****bongani*****

i didnt know what to do.. after sometime the ambulance came and i led them in to mama..

lady : hurry hurry..

they rushed in and checked her, pumped her and did all those stuff, then the men that was busy checking the pulse looked at his watch..

lady : time of death??

men : 10:35

i cried, not believing that my mom would leave so

suddenly... my heart was shattered... i dont know what i was going to do..

what am i going to tell her grandkids?? ohh what a tormenting day...

i sat there as they took care of the body and all...

after they were done with questining and calling and all that, i sat on the bed that she took her last breath on and cried to sleep.. they say men dont cry, well that day i had no control over my tears..

[12/13, 15:10] Zozaness: The villagegirl an the playboy: arranged marriage

29

bongani

it has been 2 hours, i am woken up by mbali and nonhlanhla making noise, i guess they back from school.. my eyes are red, swallon and heavy.. i sit up and go wash my face.. they busy laughing and arguing about something.. i hear them asking each other about my mom, am sure they wondering were she is...

i go to the kitchen and make them food, i guess am avoiding questions.. mbali then walks in the kitchen..

her : uncle bongani, were is gogo??

me : mhm, please call your sister, i have something to tell yall..

her : owk..

she runs and calls nonhlanhla, then both came in..

me : please sit down..

they sat on the bench already looking curiouse and scared...

me : am really sorry to reveal these news to you like this but i have to..

nonhlanhla : what you talking about uncle??

me : gogo, my mom, has left us..

mbali : were did she go??

nonhlanhla : she cant leave us, plus shes sick, whose going to take care of her??

me : no kids, she has passed away..

nonhlanhla : gogo has died??

mbali : no, cant be...

me : yes, gogo is no more..

mbali started crying first, she cried in pain then nonhlanhla followed, i felt bad that i cried with them, the pain i had when i first heard the time of death came back.. mbali ran in the bedroom and cried louder, nonhlanhla ran after her...

i wasnt sure what to do..

i went in the room and stayed strong for them... i got in and nonhlanhla was holding mbali who was painfully crying and i went to hold both of them...

we stayed like that for a whole hour then they slept in their tears.. i was in my thoughts when i remembered that my mom would always tell me about her other grandchild who got into an arranged marriage for me to be released and for my fathers business to be unlocked to the family..

yah, nompilo.... i wonder how i would get hold of her... i stood up and started looking for my moms

phone.. i looked around till i found it under the pillow....

i checked the phonebook to check for nompilo...

i found a number under a number, i dialed it and the phone indicated that theres no airtime...

i went to buy airtime, inserted it then dialed again...

nompilo

after having our coffee, i was feeling ashamed of what i done today... i was also feeling hungry..

me : let me go make food, am feeling hungry...

siya : i will go make food for you..

me : siya.....

as i was about to speak to siya, my phone rang...

me : its gogo, hold on... (speaking to siya)

i picked up the phone...

me : hay gogo..

voice : hay nompilo, this is bongani speaking..

me : who?? why do you have gogos phone?? were is

she??

him : mhm, i am bongani, gogos long taken son....

me : bongani?? gogo doesnt have a son named bongani...

him : i am your mothers twin brother..

me : my mom doesnt have a twin brother..

him : i will explain everything to you once i see you, right now i want to speak about your granny..

me : what about my granny, is she owk??

him : unfortunately your granny has passed away..

me : nah, wrong number...

him : wrong number when its your grannies number..

me : what have you done to my granny, and were are my parents, were is my siblings??

him : your parents left, your siblings are asleep..

me : who are my parents, siblings??

him : your father is kevin, mother is sbongile, your siblings are mbali and nonhlanhla, you also have a

not carying aunt called lindiwe...

me : sir (crying) please tell me you just playing...

him : no nompilo, its true, your granny passed away, so you and siya have to come...

i looked into space and tears flowed down like a river strike...

i heard that bongani was still talking but i didnt pick no word.. this must be a joke, mabye its a joke.. but this guy even knows siya, that means hes telling the truth....

i then removed the phone off my ear and threw it against the wall, then looked at it as it falls apart..

i then ran to my room, with siya coming after me.. i locked and siya tried opening short after and realised that i have locked..

him : mamas!! mamas!! open up please...

i just stared in space and thought about what i have just heard...

siya kept asking me whats wrong and to open but i wasnt even hearing him... i suddenly got mad...

how could this happen to me, didnt i get hurt enough?? huh?? what does this world want from me?? what do i have to do to be normal and live like the rest??

i hate this life, i hate this life..

as these words came in my mind i then screamed and started smashing everything i find in my room...

i pulled my sheets off the bed and threw pillows everywere, i then took my books and threw them.. i was throwing stuff around and breaking things.. siya was banging the door, he swore that if i dont open up he was going to break this door..

i didnt care, i was tired of this life.. my room was a mess, my life was a mess, all i thought about was how useless my life is.. how useless my existed was.. with my granny gone, i had no reason to live..

i had a thought....SUICIDÉ.... i went to the bathroom and threw things up and down looking for some pills or something to follow my granny...

i messed the bedroom and found the pills i bought months ago when i had a headache, in that box of

pills i only had 2 then my headache was owk....

i took all the left over pills and drank all of them in one go..

i then layed on my bed waiting for them to take me away..

as a token of goodbye i played my grannies favourit gospel song...

i took my diary and wrote a short massage..

dear siya

when you come in, i would have had tea with my granny, dont stress, am happy were i am going.. be happy and dont cry over me.. tell my siblings i love them and please watch my siblings as they live their lifes..

love you..

just as i wanted to draw a heart, my eyes gave in and i felt sleepy.. siya was still banging the door.. then i heard a huge bang as i gave in to sleep, then i heart low the voice of siya screaming my name...

i gave in and blacked out...

[12/13, 15:12] Zoaness: The villagegirl an the
playboy: arranged marriage

30

****bongani****

the phone just hung up, she must be terably hurt.. i
am also stupid, i should've asked her to come home
then told her, now i dont know how shes reacting to
these knews...

i tried calling multiple times but still no answer.. and
this time it takes me straight to voicemail as if she
switched her phone off....

i then called sbongile..

she answered on the third ring....

her : bongani, listen i cant talk right now, am heading
to a meeting...

me : it cant wait, its about ma..

her : bongani, seriously i cant talk...

me : ma has passed away...

her : what?? when?? how?? what happened??

me : i thought you cant talk.. go to your meeting..

i hung up and dialed lindiwe...

her : besehini nkosi yam...

me : ma has passed away..

her : ohh, when??

me : today..

her : **sigh**

we stayed silent for sometime then i hung up...

even though lindiwe is so out but i know she is hurt...

but my biggest concern is nompilo, being only 16 and now she bears a huge responsibility of taking care of her siblings, no to mention still going to school (mama told me), then its the wedding, and satisfying her husband (knowing siya, am sure she doesnt treat her well)... all this for a 16 year old...

i was sitting and thinking.. the funeral and all that... i must say, its a long process...

siya

me : nompilo!! nompilo!!

how could she do this mara, haaaa, mamas...

i have managed to break the door open but it was rather a little late because she was laying on the bed with a pill bottle open and empty..

i ran to her and shook her, she was not responding.. i then picked her up and took her to my car and drove to the hospital...

some nurses recognised me from the time i was here...

they quickly helped me and they asked me to wait at the reception, i filled in papers and they left me there...

i waited and waited... later the doctor came...

doc : mr xulu..

me : yes...

doc : mrs nhlapho has had an overdose, but we have managed to help her before they could damage her... as we speak, some doctors are flushing the pills out her system..

me : thank you doc.... Please tell me, will she be ok??

Doc : yes, she will.. But she will need some emotional help, it seems like it was suicide..

Me : it was, she was just starting her canceling...

Doc : do you know what could have triggered this??

Me : the passing of her grandmother was the last straw....

Doc : so its a lot of things that made her come to this situation??

Me : yes...

Doc : is she family?

Me : she's my wife..

Doc : wife??

Me : well we not yet married, but by tradition we married...

Doc : but she's only 16..

Me : arranged marriage...

Doc : ohh owk.. Let me get going...

Me : thank you doc..

She left and I went home to prepare something for my mamas...

I drove back home in sadness and wondering the pain nompilo was going through....

I got home and went to her bedroom... Everything is a mess, the bedroom was like a dumping room.. The bed was roughed up and her books were everywhere.. I looked around and sat on her bed with my head facing down.. I feel my tears threatening to come down.. I let them fall and I stayed like that for a while...

After sometime I saw a paper on the bed and I reached out to it because I saw that it was still freshly written..

I read the note and what I read made me cry even more...

My heart was really sore... I went to the bathroom so that I could wash my face... I got to the bedroom and

it was a mess... All the pain that she felt she has released it in this room...

What hurts me more is that I was behind the door, I would rather let her slap me and tear my clothing then let her mess the room alone and cry alone...

After a moment I gained strength to clean her room and her bedroom.. Then went down to have dinner...

What a quite house without mamas.. I miss her already, i miss her eyes, smile, dark skin, laughter and her crazy self..

I am sitting In the kitchen having flashbacks from the first time I saw her to the last time I saw her, the time we were happy to the time we fought... Yes y'all we have had our bad days but it was about little things...

I was busy in my thoughts...

After some while, I could smell something burning, I then remembered that I was cooking spaghetti.. I ran to check it and it was burned.. Like really burned, it was black.. And had a burned smell...

I switched the stove off and went to make noodles with the microwave...

After I ate, while thinking about my mamas..

Mara why?? Why?? Nompilo has been through hell, and I have never helped her..

I stayed watching TV, but mostly thinking of mamas, then I slept....

[12/13, 21:12] Zozaness: The villagegirl an the playboy: arranged marriage

31

siya

i woke up and realised that it was the mist morning.. it was around 3am and my body was aching from sleeping on the couch.. my eyes were heavy, i think its from crying..

i draged myself to my bedroom and got in bed.. then i slept...

at 9am i woke up again, the house felt really lonely, phela by this time nompilo heats the place up...

i got out, washed my face, brushed my teeth and took a long refreshing shower.. i was silent, mind thinking out my mind, i was just deep in thoughts..

i got done, got dressed then cleaned my room... i then went to mamas room and refreshed it, opened the windows, and gave it a nice smell..

i then went downstairs and met mama zondo, she had started with the cleaning...

me : morning mama zondo..

her : morning siya, how are you??

me : am not great, i wont lie, but am trying to be strong for nompilo...

her : yah, nompilo, poor child, how is she??

me : i havnt seen her yet.. but i hope she is owk...

her : she will be owk, i know that..

me : i pray...

she smiled at me and tapped my shoulder, then carried on cleaning...

i went and ate breakfast then made a mini breakfast

pack for nompilo, then went to my car and drove to the hospital..

as i get there, i ask to see her and they take me to her room..

when i opened the room, she was laying facing up, so innocent, so smooth.. i stared at her from the door for a good minute then entered and she looked at me.. atleast my baby is awake....

i went to her and held her cheeks, but she just looked away.. i felt her pain, i felt what she was feeling.. hope i can help....

me : hay mamas, how are you??

her : **silence**

me : mamas??

she looked at me then looked away... i wasnt really sure what i did..

me : mamas, what did i do ??

she looked at me..

her : why??

me : huh??

her : why save me?? i wanted to die, i wanted to join my grandparents.. why didnt you let me??

me : nompilo stop being selfish, what about me, your siblings, your parents, your life..??

her : what about my life?? i dont have a life.. what about my parents?? they dont care, they dont love us... what about my siblings?? mabye thats the only part i never really thought about.. what about you?? you are sorted, you dont lack nothing, you have everything you can ever want.. what damage could i cause??

me : a huge damage.. the internal damage.. i might have everything.. the money, parents,the life and all, but recently god gave me something that can never be replaced.. he gave me a gift of life.. which is you... nompilo, when you first came into my life, i never valued you, i saw you as a dirty, weird object that was brought to block my life.. but later found out that you were actually a rough, dirty diamond... you got cleaned and turned to the priceless diamond.

beautiful diamond you are now.. you strong, unique and very different..

her : siya, with my grandmom gone, i...

me : you have mbali, you have nonhlanhla, what about them?? they also lost a grandmom.. have you ever thought that maybe they also getting bullied at school like you were??

her : no!! but they wouldnt, mbali wouldve told me..

me : owk, so what if they go through something in the future?? who they going to turn to?? with you gone and parents rejecting them, where will they go??

her : ***silence***

me : your purpose in this world is about to start.. your siblings need you, i need you..

her : but, what am i going to do now?? with grandma gone, i have to go back home to take care of my siblings... that means i need to drop out of school again.. but what about the wedding though??
ohhhhhhhh

me : stop stressing mamas.. you dont have to drop

out, you will finish matric and further your studies in hospitality.. asfor yor siblings, they can come live with us... and the wedding, well it must be posponed till after your graduation...

her : what a nice dream you have.. have you forgotten that your father is the chief??

me : leave my dad to me..

her : ohhh..

me : listen, you dont have to worry about anything, wena just focus on improving your emotional state and having concilling, mina i will take care of the rest...

her : you sure you will manage??

me :if i need help, i will shout..

she laughed and that made my heart feel at ease.. we spoke more and i gave her some food i brought... we ate and spoke more.. she was now the nompilo i know..

then later the doctor came..

doc : oh good morning mr xulu, how is my patient

doing??

me : shes doing great...

doc : thats what i want to hear...

she did final checks and filled in forms..

doc : our patient is ready to go home, but must promise to find emotional help.. these are the numbers of a very high recommended psychologist..

me : thank you very much..

doc : its a pleasure... be well mr nhlapho..

her : thanks..

she got ready and we went home...

mamas is coming home.. physically she is nompilo but inside she is not, and mina i will strive by all means to bring back my mamas, my nompilo...

[12/13, 21:13] Zozaness: 32 (another one follows shortly)

.

****3 days later****

we just got done getting dressed... i wore my long dress and had my head wrapped.. i then went to wait for siya in the car.. we had already packed and our stuff were in the car already...

siya came and started the car..

me : did you lock??

him : yah, everything is sorted..

me : owk..

he started the car, opened the gate and drove...

we took hours to get home, that i actually fell asleep as we got to the free way...

as we were almost there i woke up...

i sat up straight..

we approached to where i stay.. siya was using gps to get us to where we live... i never knew the number and street name of where i was staying but i knew that there was a garage about a little distance there, and i know the road when am at the garage.. so as the gps got siya at the garage, i became his gps..

i directed him till we got in the street that leads straight to were i live...

from the distance i could see mbali and nonhlanhla playing outside.. ohh poor kids dont know whats going on, they just kids...

i pointed out to the house, with my eyes teary.. siya already got the point that its were i stay..

he hotted as he got to the gate, mbali and nonhlanhla stared at the car without moving.. i wonder who is looking after them...

aunt lindiwe is not the type to babysit..

i was about to step out the car when a man got out the car and came to open for the car... i wonder who he is, ohh must be the man that called me, grandma's long taken son.. i swear if he is on some agenda of getting my grandma's money, he is on another mission...

he looks familiar though, i dont know were i have seen him, but i definatly did see him before..

siya : what is he doing here??

me : you know him??

him : yah, thats bongani.

me : i knew i also seen him somewere but i cant figure were..

him : my dads palace, he was a guard there..

me : ohhh yha, i remember now, your little pet..

he looked at me then back at bongani..

him : what is he doing here??

me : he's my mothers twin brother..

him : huh!!

he looked shocked and confused.. but i was not focused on him, i was looking at my siblings...

as soon as the gate was open he drove in.. then mbali and nonhlanhla stood up to see who it was, i bet they thought it was mom and dad... as they looked at the window they saw me, and their smiles filled my heard..

siya pulled over and i got out..

mbali and nonhlanhla rand to give me a hug..

nonhlanhla : nompilo!! we miss you...

mbali : yebo sisi, we thought you not coming
snyomore..

me : i would never leave yall.. you know that..

nonhlanhla : thing is, everyone left, and we were only
left with uncle bongani, mammy said its her
brother..

me : really?? owk..

they then helped with my bags and siya aswell.. well
siya was having a chat with bongani..

as we got the bags, siya stopped us....

siya : we will bring the bags..

me : owk thank you..

we got in the house..

****siya****

me : bongani!! how??

him : trust me it also came as a suprise to me..

me : but then how do you move from a guard to being nompilo's mother's twin..??

him : well, you marring nompilo saved me..

me : huh??

him : i was held by your father to work for him for no pay untill the two families were combined, my family and yours..

me : i dont understand..

he then explained to me everything from how it all started and till now.. it was really shocking.. unbelievable.. the world is really amuzing..

him : yah so now after a while of knowing my mom, she passes on..

me : eash hade boi...

him : i must say, if i knew that nompilo was my mother's daughter, i wouldve never helped you sneak girls in, in her presence..

me : ohh please..lol

him : am serious.. i hope you treating her good mahn,

or else its trouble..

me : listen to you..lol.. tables turn hay..

him : yah they do..

me : well, shes my queen, who will bore me many princess' and prince's..

him : i hope for your sake you telling the truth..

me : yes sir...

we then went in the house..

i was amazed at what nompilo was doing with her siblings..

they were busy playing a game.. one will be on her knees pretending to be a donkey (nompilo) the other rides the nompilo (the little one) then the other one runs away from nompilo and the little one..

they were playing like little kids.. nompilo was free, she was out and about, now that was the nompilo i knew.. she has finally unleashed herself.. her smile is bright, her laughter is loud, wide and livly again.. its like life has placed itself on her...

she was so lively.. ohh look at her.. so bright.. i was now looking at her, smiling..

bongani : siya!!

me : huh!!

him : she changed you huh!!

me : for the best..

he smiled and we went to take a seat....

[12/13, 21:13] Zozaness: The villagegirl an the playboy: arranged marriage

continuation

.

.

.

.

.

.

****siya****

we sat down and called nompilo, mbali and nonhlanhla to come sit down aswell...

nonhlanhla : sir, are you nompilos husband??

i was shocked at the question but had to answer..

mpilo : nhlanhla!!

nonhlanhla : am asking hao..

me : yes, i am

mbali : are you here to stay with us??

me : huh, no, you will be coming to live with us..

nonhlanhla : what about school??

me : you will attend school next to where nompilo schools..

mbali : all of us??

me : yes, all of you..

nonhlanhla : what about auncle bongani??

i stopped to think then looked at him..

bongani : i will be staying here, until am old on my feet..

mbali : alone??

bongani : yes..

me : owk, so bongani, the funeral??

bongani : we have contacted the family, they all coming down tomorrow and the funeral will be over the weekend.. we wont be delaying anything..

me : oh owk..

bongani : ohh nompilo, my mom wanted you to have this..

he handed nompilo a key..

nompilo : what is this??

bongani : the keys to the hut outside..

nompilo : gogos favourit hut?? why me?? she never wanted to open it, so why now??

bongani : i guess she was waiting for this time...

nompilo looked at the keys and held them tight...

nompilo

i wonder what was in the hut...

i was so eager to find out that immediately after the small discussion we had i went to open.. everyone followed because they were also curious...

i opened the hut.. i was nervous, shaking and even wondering if maybe i should just leave...

after i opened, i opened the door and it was dark inside.. there are no windows.. just after grandad died, all windows were closed down and mud filled out..

i used my phone for a torch and saw a lamp on the table that was on the right side of the door..

me : can somebody get me a lighter or matchsticks...

bongani : here, i have a lighter..

i took the lamp and lit it up... it was a lamp that use paraffin...

it lit up and filled the room with brightness but not like a light.. this was mkhulus favourite... he had 4 lamps in total but here we saw 2.. we lit both lamps and used them to look around..

i couldn't believe this..

there were pictures hanged almost everywhere of khulu and gogo.. from when they were still young till now..

i saw a wall full of my pictures.. the journey of my growth, from an infant to the grown me.. well there is no picture of the current me, but the last picture was when mkhulu had mbali in his hands, nonhlanhla holding hands and me in front of mkhulu.. its weird, there was no picture of us, mom and dad.. the room was filled with our pictures with gogo and mkhulu..

i was caught by one picture though, it was mkhulu and siyas father...

me : siya!! look

pointing at the picture..

he took the picture and looked at it closely...

him : this is my father..

mbali : its written at the back..

siya checked the back and read aloud..

siya : take care of my princess...

me : so he was expecting me to save the family huh?

tears were filling my eyes, with gogo gone and mkhulu gone, we have noone.. i sat down and took a break and also calm myself from crying.. i dont want to upset my sisters..

as i was sitting down, i saw a box with my name on it...

i immediatly went to it, removed everything that was on it, and opened it..

immediatly as i opened it, my tears just dropped..

there was a picture of me when i was very young, in gogos hands.. she was smiling, and i was crying.. seems like i didnt want to take the picture, i was very dirty aswell..

i picked it up and under was a letter written to nompilo..

i picked it and opened it..

it read

nompilo...

as you read this, i am watching over you and smiling with mkhulu. dont you cry. i know this because i would never give you the keys while am alive and i will explain why. everything in there had a special memory so me going in that room would make me cry and i didnt want to open old wounds. but i always told myself that whenever i feel like am getting sick i will hand the key to someone i trust , to give it to you. please take care of your little once, they are the only once who need you. your parents have dissapointed me, they have abbondered yall.. yes, they brought yall here because they want to be free in the city. seems yall are burdens to them. but forgive them, they love yall.. as for lindiwe, dont trust her one bit, she has changed. i dont know what happened to her. last thing. we have asked to leave mkhulus business and all in your hands, so no need to worry about life. i hope the chiefs son is treating you like a princess if not dont be afraid to run away.. i know its the baddest idea ever, but if you not happy, get out of that marriage.. am sorry i got you married at such a

young age, i guess i just wanted to see my son.. love you

i was crying throughout the letter..

i then looked agin in the box and it was a traditional full kit atire..

there were beads and clothes and all that, even shoes..

i remember when i was about 12 years old, she started making these beads and sewing this dress. i would always ask her to do it for me, and she said she would, one day.. kanti she was already making it...

that was not all..

see when i was young i used to steal my mkhulus pipe and run with it just to play with it and pretend to be mkhului... well the pipe was in the box..

i was too emotional that i got out of the hut... the rest were still admiring the hut, mina i just stood outside and just calmed myself down...

as i was chilling, they called me..

nonhlanhla : nompilo!! nompilo!! come see..

me : what??

nonhlanhla : woza..

i rushed in and saw a painting, it was a painting of us
3..it was big..

siya picked it up to check if there was nothing
written..

siya : its written something..

we turned it around.. and i read it aloud..

kids..

its not easy telling you this but i feel like i should.
your mother doesnt know that i painted this and am
sending it with a message. i want to let you know
that we didnt abandon you, well we did in a way
because we placed our jobs before yall.. well i am a
painter and i love painting, its a passion i have. but it
doesnt bring enough money on the table like your
mother, therefore i have found a job as a manager at
a supermarket, it is not something major but atleast
we are able to save some money for when yall get to

university. your mom is a baker at a cake store. that is why we took yall to gogo, we couldnt afford to live with yall. and the embarrassment was very high. we lied and said we have a company and we working timelessly for you but really we dont. please forgive us.

me : when was this written??

nonhlanhla : daddy came with this the day you got sent away..

me : how did it get here??

they both shruk their shoulders to say they dont know..

siya : seems your parents are not that bad, they were just ashamed..

me : it doesnt change anything.. where are they now..??

bongani : they will be here tomorrow..

me : watch and learn, they only going to come the saturday and go back sunday, without us.

siya : so you wanna leave me..??

i just left all of them there and went in the house..

i then made a short prayer.

me : dear god, now that am left with my siblings and siya and bongani, what is the way forward??

i sighed and just laid on the bed..

[12/13, 21:14] Zozaness: The villagegirl an the playboy: arranged marriage

33

****the day of the funeral****

****nompilo****

its saturday and as i predictate, my parents didnt come yersterday for the mermorial of my granny. i guess they will come today..

the house was really packed.. since we only have 3 room.. (bedroom, bathroom and kitchen).. so all the kids and woman that came, slept in the bedroom then all the men slept in the kitchen..

the reason why it was packed is because they all were living far.. siya has already agreed to take the

men to his father's house to freshen up.. and the chief has already agreed..

as for us the ladies we stayed and freshend up there.. after a while they came back..

the yard gave 4 cars to park, the other 2 had to park outside the gate. but we didnt close the gate..

at around 11am, the funeral car came with my grannys box.. the police and traffic people came and we were on our..

bongani, mbali, nonhlanhla and i drove in siyas car.. when i left my parents were still nowere to be found.. we drove and the old feeling came back..

mbali : nompilo!! so granny is not coming back vele??

nonhlanhla : are we really going to live our lives without her??

me : yes.. she has gone to an even more peacefull place..

mbali : how do you know??

me : she was a very good person, very loving and

kind hearted..

i wasnt looking at mbali, but i could hear that she was continuously sniffing.. i looked at her and saw that she was crying..

just as i was about to comfort her, nonhlanhla followed.. now my tears were trembling and i was fighting them...

i took a deep breath and looked at the mirror and saw that siya was looking at me from the mirror and looks infront, then at me again.. and at that moment when he saw that i was looking at him, he smiled, and at that moment my strength was brought back..

i managed to pull myself up and comfort them..

me : dont worry my sisters, she looks down on us and loves us owwk.. she is with god..

they nodded but tears never stopped..

we got to the gravehard and the woman started singing.. i couldnt hold it in.. but i had to be there for my sisters...

i strangled my tears so that they dont flow down..

but even though i fought them they still came out..
so i would wipe them and be still..

i was besides my siblings all the time..

the moment of the box to go down came and mbali went crazy..

we were supposed to grab some sand from the shovel that was held by someone.. then when mbali took the sand, she took the sand and then wanted to go to were the box was going..

siya picked her up and took her back to were we were standing.. she was busy kicking and screaming.. nonhlanhla was trying to calm her down and she ended up crying aswell..

siya then took mbali and nonhlanhla and took them to the car..

i stood there but my mind was wondering whether my siblings are owk..

later i saw my parents, they were standing at the other side.. my mom was crying and my dad was brushing her and comforting her.. they standing there

doing nothing even after they saw mbali crying,
trying to jump..

they dont even look bothered.. why am i even
bothering myself mara...

after they were done covering the box, we scarted to
our cars.. well there were woman who left early to go
cook and prepare the food for when we come back..

as i was heading to the car, my mom called me.. i
looked back and she was with my dad..

me : yes ma!!

her : how are you??

me : i am owk..

her : it must be hard for you, dont keep it in my baby,
just let it out..

me : how?? how?? when i have to be strong for my
siblings?? if i fall apart they too will fall apart..

her : am sorry..

me : **silence**

him : how is mbali and nonhlanhla??

me : they hurt, because the person that cared for them and took care for them is no more..

him : they will be fine, god will heal them..

me : thanks for the prayer dad..

i attempted to walk away..

her : nompilo!!

me : ma!!

her : you know we here for yall right?

me : hay, merry christmas..

i then gave a fake smile and turned away..

him : nompilo, listen..

i turned to them again..

him : we sorry we were not there for yall, but we will be here for yall from now..

i thought for a minute...

me : would you take mbali and nonhlanhla in to live under your care??

they looked at each other struggling to speak..

guessed right..

me : thought as much..

i turned and left them there heading to the car..

i was about to get in the back..

siya : please come sit here for a minute..

i closed the door and went to sit in front.. he was sitting at the drivers seat and i was sitting on the seat next to his...

him : was that your parents??

me : yep..

him : so, what did they say??

me : they not taking mbali and nonhlanhla, guess its my responsibility now..

him : nah, wont allow you to have so much on the plate, you only 16..

me : yah siya, unormal 16 year old...

him : dont say that..

me : tell me siya.. do you know any 16 year married

girl?? whos parents are too busy to attend to her and her siblings and now she has to play mommy and daddy to her siblings??

him : no..

me : see??

him : tell me, lets say you go to a sports event and everyone has exactly the same shirt on, but you have a total different shirt on, how would you feel??

me : huh!!

him : how would you feel??

me : awkward, out, like people are watching me, like am pulling attenting to myself and like am a total outsider and uncomfortable..

him : what do you think those people who are wearing the ame will think?

me : they would probably think am weird, crazy, stupid.. i dont know.. but i do know that they will be looking at me wondering whats wrong with me..

him : now, do you think something would be wrong with you??

me : no, just that am not wearing the same shirt as them..

him : see??

me : what??

him : people in this world are used to "normal" that when something "different" comes, they start hating, having questions, wondering, being confused, and all this forms a huge rock that will hit the " different" person to actually lower himself/herself to be "normal" like everybody else.. so instead of that person standing out, he/she is brought down to be "normal" by the society and that kills alot of unique peopl..

me : so, am unique??

him : yes, check, the marriage, i treated you bad because you were not the type of girl that am used to physically... the bulling, lisa and them bullied you because you were different from everyone and they couldnt stand your uniqueness... dont let your parents and this situation push you to being "normal", keep standing out and being unique...

me : thanks siya...

him : am not saying this to make you feel better, or because am your husband.. but am telling the truth..

i was starting to be emotional. but he held me and brushed me..

him : you strong.. instead of worrying, lets rather figure a solution.. owk??

me : owk..

bongani came.. i wanted to go sit at the back but he said it was fine, and that i should sit there and he will sit with mbali and nonhlanhla who were sleeping

[12/13, 21:15] Zozaness: The villagegirl an the playboy: arranged marriage

34

.
.br/>.

****nompilo****

its very late now.. people are leaving.. we were finishing to clean up with some of the ladies.. we cleaned, washed dishes and all.. then they bid goodbye and left.. mbali and nonhlanhla were very quite..

when we came back from the grave yard, they were asleep, they woke up just as we were picking them up to lay them on the bed.. as they were awake, mbali saw mom and dad and asked to sit with them, nonhlanhla was debating but she decided to sit with uncle bongani.. i was with siya the whole time..

so they have been that quite ever since..

all have left excapt my parents.. mbali and nonhlanhla were sitting on the floor in the kitchen drawing on thier books.. mom and dad were in the bedroom.. bongani, siya and i were in the car..

this car has really become our get away room..

bongani : so, do we have a solution to this situation, since your parents dont want to take responsibility..

me : its either me or you, that will take care of them...

bongani : well you very young to play mommy, daddy and husband.. so i will step up..

me : so, you will be staying here??

bongani : yes.. i will look for work and then be able to take care of them untill they finish school..

siya was thinking very deeply, it showed that he was not part of our discussion.. he was not even listening...

****siya****

i wonder whats wrong with nompilos parents, i mean how would they not want to take care of their own children?? it just doesnt make sense...

i was busy thinking about reasons that will make parents not want to take care of their children when nompilo and bongani were talking.. my mind was deep in this thought that i didnt even hear what they were talking about...

i was fed up now, i couldnt do it anymore.. i got out the car...

nompilo : siya, were you going??

me : stay in the car..

her : were you going??

me : am going to give your parents a piece of my mind..

her : siya no..

me : get in the car.. bongani, please make sure she doesnt follow me..

him : sure..

i went in the house.. mbali and nonhlanhla were in the kitchen...

me : mbali, nonhlanhla dont you want to listen to music in my car??

mbali : we do..

me : go ask nompilo to play music for you and stay there till i come back owk??

nonhlanhla : owk uncle..

they left.. i knocked on the bedroom door and they said i should enter..

me : sanibonani

her : yebo

him : yebo

me : i havnt really formaly introduced myself, am sorry you had to meet me at such horrible time..

her : its not a problem, we already know who you are..

him : yah, to us, you not a stranger...

me : am glad.. i really love nompilo..

her : ofcause you do, or else we wouldnt have let her marry you..lol

me : nah, you married her to lighten your burden...

him : uthini mfana??

me : you heard me.. you dont love nompilo..

him : owk boy, you will not come here in our house and disrespect us like that..

me : firstly its gogos house and secondly am being honest

her : owk, enough, please get out..

me : no, not untill i have said my piece..

him : boy get out..

me : beat me if you must..

the father stood up, but the mother stoped him..

her : say your piece and leave..

me : all i ask is why dont you want to take mbali and nonhlanhla in your care??

they looked at each other, struggled to speak..

me : can i get an answer please..

him : we dont owe you any explanation boy..

me : am sorry but i love nompilo, and i love mbali and nonhlanhla as my own little sisters..

him : then why dont you take them in if you so conserved..

me : what a father.. father of the year huh!!

i dont know how or when he stood up but i just felt a sore fits coming across my face.. i checked and realised i was bleeding..

me : what the....

him : you will learn to respect boy...

me : (angry) respect?? respect?? respect fathers that reject their kids at time of need?? huh?? you wanna beat me again?? mhm?? go on chief, beat me.. thats the only you take serious.. you failed your kids, you failed yourselves.. i am sorry you had to find out this way but you are selfish... i dont know why you had kids in the first place.. if it was 1 child i would understand that mabye its a mistake.. but 3....?? why have kids if you dont want to raise them?? huh?? you know, i wish nompilo was rather an orphan then to have parents who are alive but dont exist, you get me ??

i turned to open the door to leave.. then i looked back..

me : i will take care of all of them, all of them, they will grow into young, successful, beautifull woman.. you will miss their graduation, wedding, birthdays.. oh how many birthdays did you miss already?? did you even know that nonhlanhla is going to a farewell

nextmonth?? nah... did you know that nompilo has been to hospital for being bullied at school and her eyes were affacted?? nah

their face changed, they seemed shocked.. but i didnt care, because they also didnt care..

me : while you guys enjoy living in the cities, your kids suffer... badly.. well done for receiving the award of best parents in the intire world...

i was about to get out, i was fuming in anger. i dont know what was going on in me but i was burning.. i was halve way out then the mother called me..

me : son!!

i stoped to look at her..

her : may you please close the door and sit down, i know i dont owe you this explanation but since i have seen how much you care about nompilo, mbali and nonhlanhla, i think its best we come clean to you...

i looked at them, i licked my torn lip that was still bleeding then looked at the father.. he looked at me

then sat down.. i closed the door and stood there
looking at them

[12/13, 21:16] Zoaness: 35

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

me : am listening..

her : owk, its not that we dont love our kids, we do,
but... but.. we cant afford to take care of them..

me : how is that possible??

she looked at me, then she looked down, then
looked at the father, then at me then down..

me : well??

i looked at the father and he was not even showing

interest of helping his wife explain the situation..
pride!!

her : well, i am personally facing a personal problem,
and i am still in the process of getting help..

i gave her the "i dont anderstand look"..

him : honey, you dont have to tell him...

her : he deserves to know so that he can understand..

the father then looked down.. whatever they trying to
tell me must be big hai... now my anger was slowly
dropping and i calmed down.. i sat on the corner of
the bed and faced them..

her : i am..... i...

she was really struggling to speak, and as she was
trying to find words to form, her tears fell down.. the
father saw this and went to her and sat next to her
on the bed and huged her, comforting her...

him : listen, shes and addict owk..

he said that out of anger, and i recieved that in a
shock..

me : an addict?? but you dont look like an addict..

him : shes been getting help for the past 3 years..

me : how?? i dont understand..

him : it all started just after nompilos birth.. the pregnancy came as a shock to us because sbongile was on birthcontrol (injections).. we tried to make sense of it.. when we asked at the clinic, they told us that there are different types of injections in the birthcontrol process and the one we use, people do get pragnant while using it, depending on the body..

as he was saying this, all pride was gone, now he showed his emotional side, the side i was on..

him : so sbongile didnt have a choice but to carry the child, because abortion was not an option..she actually almost wanted to kill the child by drinking alot of pills.. i was not around, i was at work.. i was called later to be informed that she is in hospital, thanks to my helper in the house..

me : is that why nompilo has this eye defeact??

him : the doctors never mensioned that it was the

cause of the defect, they just told us that she has caught the defect and it's a rare kind, but we shouldn't worry because it can be treated.. we were told to bring the child everyday for a whole week.. her eyes were always closed so we never really thought it could be that bad.. after a week, Nompilo finally opened her eyes.. we were in hospital.. we were both shocked at her eyes.. right now they are better, when she was a child her eyes looked very gray and bright, she was very scary..

her : it's ok i will carry on..

him : really??

her : yes..

i then moved my eyes from the father to the mother..

her : after we saw her eyes, i couldn't believe it.. the doctors said that it was the result of the defect, well she was lucky to have it on the eye, which is very rare.. the common places are the ear (not able to hear correctly), mouth (not able to speak correctly) or legs (not able to walk properly..).. after that i became scared of her, even on the streets people

said that kevin is not the father, that the father was a witch thats why the child has turned to be a little witch..

me : thats terrible.

her : only doctors knew that its a defeact and a few community members, the others just didnt want to be close to nompilo.. i blamed myself bcause i thought it was the pills that i overdosed on... so i turned to alcohol as a healer..

she dropped tears again and the father comforted her.. i must say its really a painful story.. noone should be allowed to live like that.. its really a terrible past..

she then looked at the father and he continued.

him : after giving that she faced depression... she started drinking heavily and neglecting the child, after a year and a halve she then turned to smoking.. i decided to bring nompilo to her mother because my family never liked sbongile.. i brought nompilo here.. sbongile became a heavy drinker and smoker for years, well till she became pregnant again.. she

would go to work drunk and smelling cigars.. after she found out that she was pregnant again she flipped..

me : why not protect yourself if you didnt want more kids??

her : after nompilo was born i went back to injecting, but this time i took a different one.. it was the guaranteed one.. but because of my heavy drinking and smoking i got really sick.. it was around november, nompilos birthday month.. i had only been at nompilos 1st birthday but missed her 2nd and i didnt want to miss her 3rd one.. but because of the state am in, i had no choice.. the doctors told me to cut off a little on alcohol and smoking and also hold back from going for injections untill and well again.. well with the help of our helper and kevin i managed to get well.. i never touched alcohol and cigars for 4 months. in march begining of the year i went to my final check up and they told me that am well and o.k. but i shouldnt go back to drinking heavily or smoking heavily. i should try a healthy lifestyle and that i can also go back to getting

injections... that day i was very happy.. i got home and all was well, kevin was also proud of me.. it had been 4 months without ***** you know..

i nodded to show that i get what she is talking about..

her : so, kevin and i did things that night.. it was a very pleasant night.. but i had completely forgotten that i had been off the injection for 4 months and need to go back and get one before i catch.. the next morning we did it again.. then after i told him that we couldnt do it anymore untill i have went to get an injection.. but it was already late.. yes i got the injection but 3 week after the injection i started symptoms of pragnancy.. i went to ask at the clinic why, and they said mabye its because i have been off the injection for sometime but they will test to see why..

me : thats when you found out you were pragnant??

her : yes.. i then recalled the times i slept with kevin, we never used protection...

me : another mistake..

she looked down , whiped her tears and carried on..

her : this time i didnt want a repeatition of nompilo so i stayed away from drinking to much alcohol and smoking... i also would eat healthy time to time. but now it was difficult for kevin... as an accountant he was earning enough to take care of us.. but the stress was too much that he would sometimes get things wrong at work and that would get him in trouble.. so that also got to me..he already had 2 verbal warnings..

me : since kevin is an accountant, he is able to take care of the kids.. and since you getting help, i dont think you would hurt them.. so??

they looked at each other..

her : i was doing owk in the begining of my pragnancy but as i over passed 3 months i went back at it again.. i started drinking and smoking.. i was not heavy on it though but i was doing it behind kevins back.. he didnt know, he still thought that am keeping myself clean.. going to my last trimester i went into labour 2 months earlier.. it was only when the doctor explained to kevin that its because of my week womb that i gave birth early and its caused by

my drinking and smoking.. he became so mad.. my baby was oek though, it was safe to take her home..

me : so nonhlanhla is a premature??

her : yes, born in october.. we fought a good week about this matter.. but eventually he forgave me.. i didnt want to miss nompilos 4th birthday so we planned a trip here for her birthday... i came with nonhlanhla.. my mom was happy and me seeing nompilo, my heart melted and i would cry.. her eyes were a little better now, actually she looked beautiful, her thin self, so free.. she was happy to see us, and to play with her lil sister, nonhlanhla was only 1 month.. nompilo loved her lil sis.. while we were here i decided that its time i got a job and helped kevin financially. and also get help.. so we lied to my mom and said we running a company and we dont need distractions.. she accepted nonhlanhla with open hands.. we went back to gauteng and indeed lived on the promise i made..

me : so you found a job??

her : yes, i found a job as a sales rep.. we were going

owk.. then i started going to counseling classes where everyone talks about their addiction and we help one another.. it only went for a few months then i was back at it again.. i met a lady called Micheal.. she was also attending those classes actually she was new.. she introduced herself and stated why she's here.. her story was touching (she was addicted to drugs and that got her family to reject her so now she wants help).. so a month later i was craving some alcohol, so i went to a club further from home so that Kevin wouldn't know, just once.. i went and i saw Micheal there, also having fun.. i joined her.. she told me that she actually smoked the whole "i wanna change thing" because she is forced to change.. she said that whatever she smokes is the best.. it takes away pain and everything so why would she quit it.. we left and went to her private spot.. there were others there already.. she asked me to try but i refused, but later thought, only one won't hurt.. they showed me how to take it and i was not having it "not with my nose" that's what i said.. but they made it seem easy.. so i tried it and it hurt my nose so badly that it tickled very painfully i coughed.. it wasn't

bad.. i took another one and said its enough..

me : so thats were being a drug addict started??

her : yes.. i went home and found kevin already home. i lied and said i was at work and i worked late..he believed.. the effect of the drug was still there and when it wore off it made me crave for some more.. i started going to them everyday after work but sometimes not find them.. but i found a dealer so i started buying my own stuff (cocain).. i would even not go to those classes.. 3 months down the line, kevin knew that i had been bunking the classes for 4 months now.. and also knew that i was never working late.. so he started wanting to know why?? he predicted that am back at drinking and smoking so when i came home late that day he started shouting at me but i didnt hear nothing, i was on another planet, i would always laugh.. so he figured am drunk but i was drunk and high.. he let me be.. the next day he spoke to me calmly to please not go back because i was making progress..i just nodded... 3 months later and things got worse, my salary went to my addiction, i would

also steal things in the house to sell and buy cocaine.. after 2 more months i disappeared with michael, we went to her friends place in Soweto.. we stayed there for 7 months.. Kevin would call nonstop, my mom started calling in October because it was Nonhlanhla's 1st birthday. and also called a lot in November, Nompilo's birthday but i didn't answer no calls.. Kevin surely called 50 times a day everyday.. i sent him a WhatsApp saying i don't want to be found. but he still would call. it was starting to be annoying so i switched my phone off for the remaining 5 months.. i would get high everyday using my money that was left..

me : so you missed Nonhlanhla's 1st birthday?

her : yes

this was heavy.. really heavy.. she was also crying and i felt her pain..

him : i was worried, i wasn't aware that she's using drugs, i just thought it was alcohol and smoking.. and not knowing where she lived killed me even more..

i looked down..

her : in february my money was finished and i was deep in debts with the dealer.. i had to settle score with something but i had nothing.. i called kevin to ask for money, but he said i would only get the money if i come personally to get it from him..

him : it was my plan to get her to come back home..

me : how much did you owe the dealer??

her : R20 000

me : what!! ****shocked****

her : i begged the dealer to let me go and i will pay him, but he wasnt having it. so he came up with a suggestion.. he said i..... i should.... i

she took a deep breath and calmed down..

her : he said i should sleep with him for the whole week, so that i may settle my debts.....

she then teared down in tears....

****WHAT****

me : what?

[12/13, 21:17] Zoaness: to Home

The villagegirl an the playboy: arranged marriage continuaton

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

****nompilo****

i was wondering what siya was saying to my parents and why they were taking so long in there.. i just hope siya is not saying things that he will regret yaz... mbali and nonhlanhla were being sleepy, it was a little warm in the car so they were owk..

but my mind was mostly at what was happening in

the house, i was very curious..

i got out.. but bongani held me..

me : bongani please, i need to know whats going on..

him : just sit in the car, siya knows what he is doing..

me : what if something happened, what if they fighting??

him : then we would here things breaking right??

me : plus the kids are sleeping, i need to prepare their blankets for them..

him : you will, once siya comes back..

me : do you perhaps know what siya is up to??

him : no, am also in the dark, like you..

me : you way too relaxed for someone who is kept in the dark..

him : just listen to music and calm down, am sure hes on his way now..

me : am tired of listening to music.. i wanna know if they fine..

him : you will, trust siya.. an i will never lie to you..

i debated with myself then got back in the car.. it was really dark outside, i wonder whats taking siya so long...

****siya****

me : did you??

she coughed her breath and nodded, then looked down looking defeated..

my mind was spinning, this was becoming too much..

me : so, mbali?? is she the dealers child??

she cried even more and nodded.. she wasnt screaming or crying aloud, she was just realising more tears and now they were flowing like a river...

me : so, mbali is not kevins child??

her : no..

me : ****sigh**** woow..

her : so after the week past.. i had settled my score.. i couldnt speak to kevin because of what i had just

did.. i would cry non stop.. i was always crying..
kevin would call and call. 3 days after kevin found
me.. his reaction i will never forget..

me : his reaction when ??

her : when he saw me in a room full of drugs..

me : oh.. so kevin, how did you find her??

him : i hired a PI to track her down and find her.. i
dont know how he did it but when he came to me
and said he found were she is, i asked no questions i
just took my car and drove to her.. that time i had
lost my job.. the stress and worry i was in caused
me to make terrible mistakes that i accidently signed
off alot of money to another company.. i managed to
fix the mistake but that didnt safe me from getting
fired with immediate effect but they would pay me 3
months pay once off.. so now i was depending on it
and my savings... so i had to move out and find a
smaller house to live in because i couldnt afford the
previouse one.. i got a 3 room house paying R3500 a
month.. i took it.. when we got to were she was i was
shocked.. i was expecting her to be drinking and

smoking cigarets, not drugs.. i wanted to cry, i wanted to scream but i held myself, got her in the car and drove home.. she was suprised at the house we were living in now, but she didnt complain or care.. she kept saying sorry, i didnt know why.. at night as she was sleeping i handcuffed her to the bed.. she woke up during the night and started screaming saying she wants cocain.. i would watch her everyday jumping up and down, screaming, being violent wanting cocain.. when she is asleep i would cry, cry till i couldnt..

me : am sure that was the toughest thing you ever did..

him : yes, i didnt want to do it, but to save her from herself i had to.. ****sigh**** well after 3 months of her being like that, she wasnt getting better.. i would wake up in the morning, unhandcuff one hand and handcuff it on mine the take another one out and take her to the loo then bring her back and handcuff her on the bed.. i would gve her breakfast, snack, lunch, snack, dinner, snack everyday.. i was always home... after 4 months she seemed a little better..

but i didnt trust her so i called the rehab center and they took her in... i would visit every week.. 2 months in rehab... i go and visit, but i am told that she doesnt want to see me.. there is no explanation, i am just told to leave.. this went on for 3 months. november. i was thinking of visiting nompilo.. but thought it would be a bad idea since i would have to lie about her moms whereabouts... so i just called her, wishing her a happy birthday..days later i got a call that said that she was in hospital, and that she was in labour.. it never made sense, i had never slept with her since she got back, never.. so it was clear that she had slept with someone else..

me : that mustve been hectic..

him : very..

me : ohh so thats why she kept you from seeing her, she was showing..

him : yes..

me : so what did you do when you found out??

him : i was angry, furious, i was fuming.. i didnt go to the hospital, i didnt want to see her.. i got a call

again to inform me that she has delivered and its a girl, and that i should come pick the baby up because they dont accapt babies.. i didnt want to.. but because the baby had no fault i went to pick her up.. sbongile wanted to explain herself but i just shut her up.. i left her there and came back home.. she was taken back to rehab and i was left with the baby.. she was the one that motivated me to persue my passion.. i was so angry i needed to express that anger somewere.. so i started drawing everything i felt in me.. from the pregnancy of nompilo to mbali.. all that, has happened i drew everyfeeling... 2 years later all was well, sbongile was making progress but was not yet there.. we would visit most often.. i had also got a job as a packer at a supermarket.. so everything was good.. after 6 months she was allowed visits.. so she would come home in june, go back in august then visit again in december and go back home in january.. thats why she never was able to be there on her kids birthday.. when mbali was 5 we both took her to her mom because i couldnt live with her alone... she was about to start grade R so she was gonna need more attention and i wasnt

going to be able to give her that.. so we took her home in january while sbongile was still visiting.. her mom was angry at why we keep making kids yet we cant attend to them, i also felt her pain though.. we lied again and said our company is demanding and we dont have time, but promised to send money..

me : so you were sending money for them??

him : yes, her mom said she doesnt know this english stuff so we asked lindiwe to recieve the money for them..we went back home and sbongile went back to rehab.. 2 years later she came out, she was clean now.. i was no more a packer but a manager... i also did some paintings on the side, one of my colleagues said that the best paintings that sell are thouse that were painted with a feeling and reminded me my drawing book.. after the release she had been trying to get back at her feet.. months later she worked as a cleaner, then moved to a waitress now she is working as a baker at a cake shop.. she bakes.. its only now that she gets to want to connect with her kids, but they already old enough to conclude that she rejected them.. mbali yena shes

still young so she has a chance to connect with her, but nonhlanhla and nompilo, they aware..

me : then why dont you take nonhlanhla and mbali in?? show them that you sorry for the time lost but you ready to make up for them??

her : we cant...

me : if its the money then fear not. my dad returned the business to nompilo and her siblings.. you could take care of the business together and take care of the 2...

her : its not about the money.. i have alot of internal damage in need to fix in me.. i cant love my kids if i cant love myself.. am afraid i would hurt them, i dont know them, i dont know their favourit colours, sports, games and all.. me taking them in means me giving them all my attention, being a mother to already grown kids.. kids that are aware, kids that think i rejected them, how would i cope if i start loving them and appreciating them before myself..

me : but then the more you take trying to love them, will not stop them from thinking you dont love them...

nompilo is 16 now, you only came to her 1st birthday and her 4th birthday.. you missed 14 birthdays... nonhlanhla, you missed all 11 birthdays, mbali you missed 5 birthdays.. how many more do you wanna miss.. all your kids graduated from grade R to 1, yall missed that.. they had excursions, farewells, yall were not there.. how many more you wanna miss.. i know you went through hardship, but the kids need you now more then ever.. they just lost a mother... to them their granny was their mother.. so are you ready to fill in the big mother shoes or are you going to sobe and put yourself first??

she looked down.. i assume they are thinking..

me : am sorry, i judged to quickly.. i understand that the road was not easy.. again am sorry.. but, you have 3 kids, one is engaged.. what are you going to do now..?? yes you were not there for them before, but what about now?? you still have a chance.. whats it going to be??

she continued looking down and looking at kevin..

me : may i ask, does the dealer know that he has a

child with you??

her : yes!! micheal let him know... but he said he wanted nothing to do with the child and me...

me : ohh owk.. am gonna head out, think about what i said..

i got out and went to the car and got in..

nompilo : jhoo, finally siya... what happened..??

me : nothing..

her : siya you have a cut on your lips, omw did you fight with dad??

me : well he hit me yes, but all is forgiven and forgotten..

her : what do you mean??

me : mamas, please take the girls in and prepare the blankets for them to sleep, you may sleep with them, i will call it a night in here with bongani..

her : oh owk..

she woke the kids up and they went in the house...

JH000000 WHAT A DAY.....

[12/13, 21:18] Zozaness: 36

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

****siya****

i sat in the car and released a huge sigh... i knew bongani had alot of questions in his head about my long visit in the house, but i was not going to talk about that now or never..

him : bro, i know you dont wanna talk about it but, what happened??

me : why do you ask if you know that i dont wanna talk about it??

him : ouch!! that hurts..

me : sorry mahn, am just not in the mood..

him : do you think you knocked some senses in them??

me : huh??

him : i mean you went to them to talk to them about mbali and nonhlanhla right??

me : yah..

him : so, do you think they heard you??

me : i dont know mahn, lets hope they did...

i laid back and relaxed while recessing all this info in my head...

i actually feel stupid for having to judge them without knowing the root problem.. i must say new mother depression is not childs play, its not easy,

and its very confusing on its own.. now imagine having that depression than fall in the hands of addiction, then have to sleep with a dealer to settle score and worst of all, have a permanent reminder of that moment... thats messed up...

i must say kevin is a good person.. to go through all this because of his girl and still be supportive, then still take her after knowing that she bore another man a child?? hai, he is a man among men... any ordinary man would have dumped her or left, plus they not married so its more easier to leave, but he didnt....

now that is what i call being a man...

there was silence in the car.. i looked at the back and saw that bongani was already sleeping.. he must've been tired...

few minutes later there was a knock on the door.. i looked and saw it was nompilo.. she was holding blankets, ncoooow, she is very carying... i opened the door..

her : bongani is already sleeping?? hao, dont you feel

bored alone?? and whats with the sad songs??

me : lots of questions, i only have 2 pairs of ears and they both take the same info and transport in to the brain for me to answer, so please one at a time..

her : lol...

she took one blanket and threw it over bongani and tucked him in.. then handed me another blanket..

her : hope you have a good night..

me : thanks, you too..

she smiled and attempted to go out..

me : mamas??

she looked at me..

me : could i talk to you for a sec??

her : sure...

she sat down and looked at me..

me : how are you??

her : huh??

me : like how are you?? right now.. are you sad,

angry, dissapointed, how are you??

her : well, am fine..

me : you talking to me mamas, how are you??

she arranged her seating possition and sighed...

her : owk.. huh... am angry, sad, happy and stressed..

me : what makes you feel that way??

her : am angry because my parents are acting like we were born by mistake, like they never liked us, like we brought shame to their lives.. they just dont care.... am sad because i lost someone who was my foundation and all this grieve is still inside of me.. i feel like i wanna scream, like i never cried enough, i wanna cry more.. but am also happy because throughout all this mess, i got my siblings, uncle and husband to be...

she then smiled and held my cheek with her hand and brushing it off..

me : why you stressed??

her : my siblings future.. am worried about whats going to happen from today.. how are we going to

live, how we going to adjust.. am worried and stressed about that...

me : dont worry, all will be well tomorrow owk..

her : how do you know??

me : i just know..

her : **smiles** siya..

me : yes!!

her : would you like to share what happened when you were with my parents in the house??

me : well we just talked..

her : so what did you say that got my father cutting your lip??

me : well not much..

her : siya please, dont shut me out..

me : owk, owk, i kind of insulted him alittle.. and he got angry and punched me..

her : insulted him how..??

me : i was pulling the selfish card on them..

her : ohh, am sorry...

me : its owk.. its all over now..

her : am sure you think my family is messed up huh??

we both giggled..

me : it sure is messed up.. but every family has its troubles...

her : well not yours..

me : huuuuuuuh!!! headacue...

her : you serious?? (laughs)

me : strue...

her : woow, but am sure its not bad..

me : not bad?? huuuh!! if you wanna watch a 3d wrestling match, go there...

her : but i have never seen them fight or anything..

me : thats because you were a guest.. visitors never notice anything because they play good housewives when visitors are here..

her : they pain the picture beautifull??

me : yah...

her : well, guess you right.. every family have problems.. am sure am not the only one going through hell..

me : you sure not the only one, the first one or the last one.. wena be strong..

her : ncoooow, mr motivational speaker...

me : mxm..

i looked into her eyes.. she was laughing but when she looked up her eyes locked with mine..

me : did i tell you how beautiful you are??

her : every second you get..

me : yet you dont tell me how handsome i am..

her : you never give me a chance, you boast about it every second..

we laughed and i amired her beautiful smile and white, neatly lined up teeth..

me : mxm...

her : you so handsome siya..

me : pshhhh i know..

i gave her the little pride attitude..

her : see, pride king...

i laughed and looked in her eyes again...

she looked in mine..

i leaned in slowly, with my hand on her chin placing her face up and pulling it for her to meet me halve way.. i placed my lips on hers.. i slowly led the way.. i could feel that she was a little lost in my routine.. i rotated again still in a slow pace and she followed...

i was aware that mabye i could be her real first men to kiss.. last time i kissed her i just long baby kissed her.. now i was french kissing her and teaching her at the same time...

****nompilo****

when siya kissed me, i was expecting the kiss he gave me the last time... like just put your lips on mine and stay like that for a while then pull off.. but this time its was different.. he was rotating and

moving, which was something i was not used to..

he was very slow, so i managed to follow his lead..

the rotation repeated for a while then he pulled out...

that made me shy because after that i looked down..

him : dont be shy on me mamas, you will learn...

me : its just that i have never kissed someone like that, only saw it on tv..

him : have you not kissed a boy before??

me : no i have..

him : really?? when?

me : when i was in primary.. but i just baby kissed him.. like mwa..

him : ohhh...

me : yah..

him : let me not keep you... goodnight

me : goodnight..

i then opened the door..

him : mamas!

i looked at him..

him : i love you...

me : i love you more..

he smiled.. i got out the car and went in the house.. i locked the door and went in the blankets and faced up... siya was in my head.. i was smiling alone..

damn i love siya

[12/13, 21:19] Zozaness: The villagegirl an the playboy: arranged marriage

37

.

.

.

.

.

.

****sbongile****

i didnt really have a good sleep.. after what happened yesterday all i could think about was what siya said..

i always knew that arranged marriages often never work, but what siya did yesterday showed how much he cared about her..

kevin was still asleep, i was up and thinking of my life, nompilo, mbali, nonhlanhla and siyas words...

after some time kevin woke up...

him : tough night?? (cracky sleepy voice)

me : huh?

him : normally i wake up early, but today you woke up first..

me : ohh, i just couldnt sleep..

him : why??

me : i have been thinking about what siya said..

him : i must say, he really does love nompilo..

me : yah, he does, no jokes..

him : even though i dont like how he spoke to us, he actually opened our minds..

me : yah he did..

him : so, what we going to do??

me : what should we do?

him : siya is right, we need to put on the parental shoes, we cant delay that for when they old.. they might reject us forever when they grown so now is the time.. but again, are you emotionally ready??

me : i wont lie, i am not..

him : so what you gonna do?? put them first or put yourself first..

me : its not about putting myself first.. its how am gonna treat them once they in my care..

him : what do you mean??

me : i mean i dont know how to act around them, i feel like am a stranger.. like a nanny..

him : dont think too much about it, just do whats right.. they always say follow your heart.. but i say

follow your mind.. the heart is full of feelings..
therefore if you follow your heart, it means you going
to do things according to how you feel.. mind you
feelings come and go so you might regret it..
example, you would say you not steping up because
you dont feel emotionally ready.. but the time you
feel emotionally ready it would be too late.. but if you
follow the mind, you think about the consequences..
you think everything through and you do what you
think is right.. example, you would say that you dont
feel emotionally ready but because they need you
and they have no one to turn to then you start using
the brain to outline that if you step up, it wont be
easy, its going to be a tough, bumpy road, but
because its the right thing to do, you will take it...

me : wow, i guess i need to use my brains in this
situation..

him : so we moving with them??

me : no!!

him : huh!!

me : we moving here..

him : us??

me : yes.. didnt you hear nonhlanhla is have a farewell next month?? so we cant move them.. and its almost the end of the year now..

him : owk.. we can stay here this year then move back next year..

me : why dont we just let them finish school here then we can move them to the cities..

him : why not move them next year?

me : well i dont want them to go to the schools there.. what if they get exposed to alcohol and all that i went through.. plus they will be known as village girls, dont you think they would try anything to fit in??

him : owk i get it..

me : so, is it owk with you??

him : yah, totally.. we will ask siya to stay with them for a this week so that we can go pack and bring our stuff here...

me : yah.. i hope he wont mind..

him : i hope so too..

me : should we leave today??

him : the earliar we leave the earlier we come back..

me : lets wake up then..

him : phew, we are about to ride on a bumpy road..

hope you have your seatbelt on..

me : i do...

he smiled..

me : kevin.. i hope yesterday i didnt open old wounds..

him : it was kind of intense and emotional, i wont lie.. it did bring back anger and sadness.. but as i said back then. i forgive you.. and i ment it.. i do forgive you...

me : i love you kevin..

him : i love you too, now lets get up before we get emotional..

we got up.. and prepared for our journey back..

****nompilo****

i was woken by some shuffling sound.. we were sleeping in the kitchen.. when i picked up my head to see what sound is that, i saw my mom with a baskom filled with water going to the room..

i guess they leaving today, just as i predicted.. i wasnt very worried becouse i wasnt expecting much from them.. i just went back to sleep and ignored them...

****siya****

2 nights, sleeping in the car.. not nice.. i really miss my bed tjo..

i woke up and it was still really early.. i got out the car and damn it was cold.. but i needed a little wind to awaken me up...

i stood outside next to my car and looked around the village..

am sure i stood there for about 35 minutes then i heard the door unlock.. i thought it was nompilo so i didnt mind it.. but as i looked again i saw it was her

parents..

they were all dressed up, so i guess they not taking my advice..

hay i tried.. but i dont blame them.. they have been through a lot.. but at the same time i do blame them..

they looked at me and came to me...

her : siya..

me : yes mam..

him : boy!!

me : yes sir..

her : we are leaving, we have decided that we will look after the kids, reacardless of my emotional state.. they decerve better..

me : but you leaving them..

him : no, we going to fetch our stuff, we have already left somethings here so we fetching all our stuff..

her : so we ask that you please stay with them here for a week, we coming back on friday..

me : so you going to stay here with them and leave yall jobs??

her : you did say nonhlanhla has a farewell nextmonth.. plus the year is nearly over..

me : thants so thoughtful of yall..

him : yah, so we better get going..

me : did you perhaps tell nompilo about this?

her : she would think we lying and we dont blame her for it so she will just see us come on friday..

me : am glad.. thank you..

her : no, thank you..

him : yes son, thank you..

me : my pleasure..

her : let us leave so that we can start with the packing.. and giving notice at work...

me : have a safe trip..

they went to the road to catch a taxi..

i was just there outside my car standing and looking

at them walking from a distance till they disappeared.

[12/13, 21:20] Zozaness: The villagegirl an the
playboy: arranged marriage

38

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

****nompilo****

i was woken up by mbali and nonhlanhla making
noise...

me : do yall have to make noise so early in the morning??

mbali : its nonhlanhla..

nonhlanhla : haa.. its you mbali..

me : owk, stop blaming eash other..

mbali : nompilo, mammy and dady left..

me : sorry nana, mabye they would be back anytime soon..

nonhlanhla : yeah, we all know they will be back after a long time..

me : shh nonhlanhla, you will upset mbali..

nonhlanhla : sorry...

me : come lets clean and bath so that we can make breakfast...

we got up and folded our blankets, then took them in the bedroom on the bed..

before i even started cleaning i went to check on siya and bongani..

i went to the car... the windows were open so i just showed my hand through the window and they unlocked the car...

i got in..

me : morning

siya : morning

bongani : morning..

me : so how did yall sleep??

bongani : cant complain i guess..

siya : mina am complaining.. if i have to sleep in the car again i swear am gonna scream..

me : lol, cant be that bad..

siya : try it and see..

me : nah i will pass..

siya : thought as much

me : my parents left this morning.. just as i thought..

siya : yah i saw them..

me : guess your words also didnt get through..

siya : yah..

me : so, whats the way forward..??

siya : we go back home, all of us, take a refreshing bath, eat something nice then come up with something...

bongani : finally i get to go to the city..

siya : its in portelizabeth..

bongani : fancy..

me : very...

siya : come on..

i laughed ..

me : owk, let me go clean the house and pack some important stuff of my siblings..

bongani : wena go clean, we will do the packing..

siya : we??

bongani : yes we..

siya : as in like, me and you??

bongani : yes...

siya pouted his mouth and was smiling.. it was like he was saying " yall must me mistaken, i am not doing all that".. siya mara..

me : let me go clean the house then, and yall better start with packing..

siya mummbled something and we all laughed.. i got out.. and went in the house..

i then swept the house.. nonhlnhla packed things right.. mbali.. well she was just there to entertain us and talk nonsense about school.. my siblings...lol

after siya and bongani went to pack nonhlanhla and mbalis bags..

as they were busy packing i made porridge.. i was craving it.. expecially because its been a while..

they got done packing and came to sit in the kitchen.. i dished up the porridge...

siya : i dont know how people manage to live on this their entire life..

me : well we do..

mbali : its very nice..

siya : yes it is mbali, its very nice but also filling..

nonhlanhla : its a good thing because when we are full we are able to hold our stomachs till after school..

siya : so you eat in the morning, at school, lunch and dinner??

nonhlanhla : yes.. but sometimes we dont eat in the morning..

siya : why??

nonhlanhla : no maize meal..

siya : oh ok..

we had our meal while eating then we got done and i stood up to wash the dishes.. siya came to help..

mbali : uncle siya... why you washing dishes??

siya : am helping nompilo to finish fast so that we can go..

nonhlanhla : where are we going??

siya : to where nompilo and i live..

mbali : is it big??

siya : yes, very big.. you get to get your own rooms..

mbali : i will sleep on the bed??

siya : yes..

mbali : hayyyyyyyyyy

nonhlanhla : is it like the one on tv??

siya : mabye..

they were cheering up and down and already talking about how they will sleep, what they will do and all that..

it was a so amazing to see them hovering over silly things.. well cant blame them.. i was also like them when i first went to siyas house , in the chiefs palace..

we got done washing the dishes.. took the bags in the car..

everyone got in the car, i locked the house..

i quickly went in the hut, took a few of gogo, mkhulu and our pictures to hang them in my room...

i then locked the hut and we drove out.. when we passed the gate, bongani got out the car to close the gate.. then got back in..

and off we went..

[12/13, 21:21] Zozaness: The villagegirl an the playboy: arranged marriage

39

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

****siya****

we finally reached home..

i had thought that mabye they wouldve been asleep

by now since its been a long ride..

but they were looking around the window asking what is that, and were is that.. they were amazed by the places we were passing...

it was so amazing seeing them being exited about very little things..

i mean alot of people in the cities, they only get happy when they recieve money, when they get married, when they progress in life.. not that its a bad thing...

they spend most of their lifes working to make a living, they work from 6pm to 6pm then go to bed at 7pm, wake up at 5am and repeat...

but when nompilo first came in the cities, she was more exited about education, more exited about eating bread with palony and rama everyday.. i mean who still gets exited about that these days??

she loves porridge... if i ask, when last did you crave porridge?? do you even think about it?? its funny isnt it...??

ever since i have been me, i have never seen a girl like her.. i mean she never asked me for anything exapt to go to school and be with her family...

now am looking at her siblings.. they looking out the window admiring the beauty of all the places we pass..

everytime i travel i dont look out the window and amire the places or even ask what those places are called.. i just put my earphone, close my eyes or sleep or just stare outside wondering when i will arrive.. thats it...

i wasnt able to answer their questions of the places names because i myself didnt know...

mbali : uncle siya, how come you dont know all the places names??

siya : i told you 2 hao??

mbali : what about the others??

siya : well i never pay attention to them..

mbali : such nice places though..

we got to an area were there was no houses, just

plain land..

nonhlanhla : why is there no houses here??

i kept quite avoiding the question..

nonhlanhla : uncle siya??

siya : yes doll

nonhlanhla : why is there no houses here??

siya : why dont you ask bongani,am sure he knows..

nonhlanhla : he has never been in the cities..

siya : how do you know??

nonhlanhla : he told us that..

siya : well, i dont know..

nonhlanhla : owk..

phew, were is google when i need it kanti...

we drove on and finally arrived..

i parked my car in the garage and we closed it and got in throught the garage door in the house..

mbali and nonhlanhla couldnt stop admiring the

place..

nonhlanhla : its big..

mbali : like the once on tv..

nonhlanhla : look the tv is big..

mbali : like the once on tv..

they walked around with their mouths open and lookinga around.. well i wasnt really worried because nompilo was the one showing them around..

she then took them to the guest room to take a shower and i directed bongani to another guest room.. i went to my room and refreshed...

after a while i came down and saw bongani sitting in the living room watching tv.. seems like the 3 ninjas are not down yet...

me : bongani, could you help me prepare some food..

him : sure..

he came ...

we washed our hands and started..

him : siya my man, i never thought i would one day see you this grown..

me : yah me too...

him : i still remember when you were you still living with your father.. tjho spoiled brat straight...

me : haibo mina??

him : siya, you..

me : hai baba

him :do you know i was about 12 years old when you were born..

me : haaaaa bongani, you mean to say you are 37 now??

him : yes.. 3 years from 40....

me : haibo, and here i am calling you by your name.. hao sorry grootman...

him : i guess you were used to it, since i used to be your pet..

me : but you look like you in your early 20s..

bongani never looked like a man in his 30s, he looked tiny and small.. i was suprised to know he is 37... phela i would treat him like i was old..

him : the results of being a survant..

me : jho.. so why did you just keep quite when i treated you like you very young..??

him : phela you were better then your dad.. your father wasnt paying me.. aslong as i eat, dress then thats all, he never gave me money.. so when you asked me to make you a favour and knew that you would pay me, i just jumped into it..

me : jho...

we spoke more while making food.. he would tell me some of the stuff i would do when i was a little boy.. how he was the one to baby sit me and play with me since i was the only boy from my father...

yes... my father has 3 wifes.. and has 7 kids.. and i am the only boy...

i know you wondering were are they.. well as they grew they were sent to marry from other family.. but

only if its beneficial for my father..

my father is a power hungry man and i dont like him..
and as his only son, he keeps his eyes on me all the
time..

i havnt really told nompilo this but soon, very soon i
am going to step up as the next chief.. i already
know its going to be hectic because nompilo spoke
about achieving her goal of being a airhostess so...

[12/13, 21:22] Zozaness: 40

- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .

the food was ready and my 3 ninjas were already

sitting in the dining room waiting for food..

bongani and i took the food to the table...

we had cooked rice, chicken and some gravy.. then bought some juice.. we had also had desserts.. some ice cream...

we all sat around the table, said grace and started eating...

nonhlanhla : we eat rice even if its not sunday??

nompilo : yes, i was also shocked...

nonhlanhla : wooooow..

mbali : its nice..

bongani : thats because the best cooked....

siya : yah, the best meaning me!!

bongani : come on.... lol..

we laughed and continued eating...

after nompilo took the dishes and took them in the dishwasher and i went to fetch the icecream..

i dished in small glass bowls and nompilo helped me

take them to the dining room...

mbali and nonhlanhla were soooo happy...

mbali : icecream..

nonhlanhla : the last time we had this was the time mkhulu was having a party.. remember nompilo??

nompilo : yes i remember baby..

siya : when was that??

nompilo : years ago..

bongani : tjo...

mbali : uncle siya, can we live with you forever...??

i struggled to speak because i was aware that their parents are coming back, plus i didnt want to seem like i am a liar..

siya : if your parents dont come back, you can stay here for as long as you want...

nonhlanhla : please, they not coming back..

nompilo : nonhlanhla, not know...

mbali : mom and dad are not coming back??

nompilo : they are coming back nana, owk..?

she nodded... but nonhlanhla was not having it...

we had our icecream...

after we went to watch a movie..

mbali and nonhlanhla wanted to watch cartoons, nompilo was cool with that idea, actually she was also happy to watch them.. as for me and bongani.. we were just in for a long boring 2 hour.. yes the movie was about 2 hours...

they were watching ice age..

well it wasnt too bad.. but hai, its still cartoons..

as they were watching, they would tell each other whos who.. like mbali says nonhlanhla is that big rare animal and nonhlanhla says that mbali is the friend of that big animal.. we were busy laughing untill they involved us..

they started giving us characters.. and we were just laughing...

just about the end of the movie, my 3 ninjas were sleeping.. well i was sleepy...

bongani was also a bit sleepy...

i asked bongani to help me take them to bed...

but now we waiting to figure out how to pick them up..

him : pick nompilo up, and i will pick nonhlanhla up, i will come back to pick mbali..

me : huh!! owk...

we did just that.. we took them all in nompilos room...

then bongani wanted to go to his room but i asked him to come in my room since am just alone and i didnt want to feel a bit bored alone..

he came and we laid on the bed facing up..

him : i saw nompilos parents coming to talk to you this morning..

me : kanti you were not asleep??

him : well i was a little awake, but went back to sleep..

me : oh.. well they came to tell me they leaving..

him ; so they not coming back??

me : they are..

him : thats a good thing right??

me : yah it is, but...

him : but what??

me : have you noticed how happy nompilo is when shes with her siblings??

him : yah...

me : well, eversince shes been with them i have not seen him depressed, worried or stressed... most of the time shes free, happy.. its only this parents thing thats getting to her, besides that shes cool...

him : yah, family does give a peron hapiness..

me : yah... nompilo has been through alot..

him : yah, hay..

we stayed silent for a minute...

him : so, siya, the wedding??

me : what about the wedding??

him : when is it going to be??

me : after her matric graduation..

him : woooow i thought it was this year.. your father was tough on that decision..

me : well he is not down with that idea..

him : is that why yall were having an argument the day you took some men to freshen at your fathers house..??

me : yes.. but he didnt perform alot because of alot of people that were there.. he has been calling, but i just dont pick it up..

him : you gonna have to speak to him..

me : i know but not now...right now i wanna make sure that this whole situation of nompilos siblings is sorted.. then athers will follow...

him : you have really changed mahn.. nompilo really got you changed..

me : thats what love does man...

him : love?? thats the first.. what happened to " i will

never give my all to a girl, i rather play them and play my distance" ??

me : ohh please..

i laughed..

me : thats the passed..

him : shes a very nice girl... i wonder how she dealed with you the first time she came here..

me : yho grootman, hectic..

him : hectic?? what happened??

me : well, she was aware of my thoughts on her...

him : what thoughts??

me : remember when i told you that my dad has brought me the oppesit of my type?? that shes unattractive, thin, dresses old and all that??

him : ohh no, you didnt tell her that did you...??

me : no, but i wrote it in my diary and she read it...

him : uooooo...

me : bad.. she also kind of saw my receptionist

panty on the floor in my office..

him : siya!!!

me : thats not all, she also cought me with my maid..
red handed.. in action...

him : **shocked**

me : yahh, and the list goes on..

him : i need to get myself a village girl..

we laughed.. bongani mara...

me : vele vele, were is your lady??

him : am 37 with no lady, can you imagin..

me : how?

him : consequences of being a slave..

me : sorry grootman, so are you a v..

him : no no no.. dont get me wrong.. i used to bang
the maids man, play them within the castle.. but
never had the one woman that i saw a future with..

me : am gonna tell my father you were banging his
maids..

him : oho

we laughed..

we chilled and spoke more then we fell asleep right there..

[12/13, 21:24] Zozaness: The villagegirl an the playboy: arranged marriage

41

.

.

..

.

.

.

.

****siya****

its friday today and its that day were all will be revealed whether the parents were telling the truth or not...

so i did give them my contacts for them to contact me once they are here...

so i was expecting their call..

it was a nice morning.. mam zondo was already here and wanting to start cleaning.. she cleans the first floor (all of it) then has breakfast with us then continues cleaning the second floor and last floor...

we got done eating and cleaned after ourselves..

siya : so, who wants to go to the park??

nonhlanhla and mbali jumped up and down with their hands on the air shouting "me"...

siya : owk lets pack lunch in a busket and go enjoy the sunny day..

they were very happy...

bongani and i went packing and the 3 ninjas went to sit in the living room..

they were playing a game.. they would clap hands and high5, and all that.. but it was a game of hands.. they also sang the song of the game...

after we finished packing...

i took my tent and 3 camping chairs, then took a blanket/towel.. i was on my way to the indoor to the garage..

nompilo : why you going out from there?

me : the car is this side..

nompilo : we driving a car to the park??

me : yes..

nompilo : but the park is 10 minutes walk away..

me : 3 minutes drive away..

nompilo : petrol usage..

me : ohhh come on... it barly even uses up alot of petrol...

nompilo : a good exercise will do.. you are really gaining weight.. umgaba...

i stared at her.. could she be serious?? hai...

i just smile and look away and forget about the car... she laughs and continues playing with her siblings...

i looked at my belly.. i saw it to be owk, there was no difference...

well i just ignored her...

we took everything and called the 3 ninjas.. they held the busket and the small speaker.. we held the tent and camping chairs...

we got to the park... mbali and nonhlanhla wanted to run to the swings already and there are alot of people there...

siya : wait, woooohhh

mbali : can we go play..

nonhlanhla : please...

i looked at nompilo... she looked worried..

she was probably thinking what am thinking.. that they might get stolen or get lost...

bongani : its owk i will go with them.. plus i need some fresh air away from you mahn.. i have been stuck with you like am your wife...

me : ohhho.. suka..

we laughed..

nompilo : thank you bongani...

****nompilo****

bongani left with my siblings minutes after they set the tent up and placed the food on the blanket that was placed down...

siya opened 2 camping chairs and we sat there...

me : thank you..

him : for??

me : taking my siblings in as your own..

him : i would make a great dad wouldnt i??

i gave him a "what??" look, then he laughed..

me : no baby talks, its not happening...

him : ohh no, no nononono.. i didnt mean for it to come out that way.. am not saying i want kids, i was just boasting about my parental skills..

me : ohh

him : yah, i am not expecting you to have my kids

anytime soon.. you still have school to finish, vacity to finish and atleast some years working.. then we can talk..

me : ncoooooow, thanks....

him : anyway i didnt want to tell you this because i thought it would be a suprise, but since the surprise doesnt seem to be happening i figured i should just tell you..

me : what is it??

him : your parents had promised to come back today.. but i have not heard from them..

me : what do you mean??

him : when they left on sunday, they said they will be back with the rest of their stuff and live here with nonhlanhla and mbali..

me : well another promise broken.. am used to their broken promises...

him : yah.. your parents are really something else.. but they have been through a lot..

me : mxm, thats one of their best excuses..

him : no like really, they told me what has been going on, and its tough.. they have been through hell..

me : what did they say??

him : its not my place to say, they will let you know once its time..

i was about to say something then his phone rang..

****siya****

i checked it was an unknown number...

me : hello

voice : siya, its kevin..

me : kevin...

nompilo looked at me with a surprised look.. i looked at her..

him : yes.. huh!! we on our way..

me : ohh, huh.. so have you got a taxi yet??

him : not yet, we still in the house, but we all packed and done..

me : oh owk..

him : yah

me : huh!! can you please take a taxi to cape town..

him : huh!! why??

me : well thats were i stay and thats were the kids are..

him : oh owk.. we will let you know when we capetown in town..

me : sure

him : sure..

i hung up...

nompilo : was that my dad??

me : yes..

her : so they really coming??

me : yes..

her : phoooooooo

me : relax..

her : ****sighed****

me : listen, please keep an open mind when they get here.. be gentle to them please..

her : so they going to stay here??

me : yes, untill we figure something out...

her : oh owk..

i took her hand and kissed it...

me : everything will be owk, dont you worry

[12/13, 21:24] Zoaness: 42

.

.

.

.

.

****siya****

we are back home now.. we had a great time at the park, wont lie..

my 3 ninjas were sitting with bongani in the living room, i was in the kitchen.. well i had just received a

call from nompilos parents saying they in town, they arrived with a taxi.. so i told them to stay there and i will fetch them...

but before i left i wanted to sort a little problem out..

see in this house there were 3 guests rooms and as you know nompilo and i sleep in different rooms (remember we never got along at first, then we bacame just friends.. now we dating yes but we never really arranged our sleeping state..) so 2 guestrooms remained..

nonhlanhla and mbali are now using 1 and bongani is also using another one.. so now i need to ask nompilo to either move in with me (it wouldnt be inapropriate because we practically married, lobola is paid..) or she moves in with her siblings.. either or..

so i called nompilo in the kitchen..

she came..

her : yes??

me : i am leaving now... going to fetch your parents...

her : owk..

me : but we have a slight problem..

her : petrol??

me : no silly.. room..

her : huh??

me : we dont have an empty bedroom..

her : ohh... so what now??

me : well i was hoping you would move in with me, then your siblings move in your room, then your parents take the 3rd floor room were your siblings sleep in..

her : you think you smart huh!! well my siblings can just move in with me.. problem solved..

me : i really wish you fell for the first one.. phela my room is cold..

her : you never complained..

me : well i am now..

her : too late..

me : come on... plus your parents are coming, what

will they say seeing us sleeping in different rooms..?

her : well they wont say nothing.. if they do, tell them you were just being respectful because the elders are now living with you...

me : nompilo mara..

her : i love you.. now, have a safe trip...

me : mxm

she laughed as she kissed my cheek and went back to the others..

i took my keys and went.. telling everyone that i would be back soon...

****nompilo****

its a bit late now and siya has been gone for an hour to fetch my parents..

mbali and nonhlanhla were so much fun at the park.. if only you could see how dirty they look.. hai...

me : mbali, nonhlanhla were are yall??

i couldnt figure out were they were... i went to living room dololo..

i then saw uncle bongani coming down from upstairs..

me : uncle bongani, have you seen my sisters??

him : they already asleep...

me : you took them to bed??

him : yah, they looked really tired..

me : which room did you take them to?

him : the one they used to sleep in..

me : huh, i forgot to tell you.. they will be sleeping in my room from today on.. my parents will be taking that room..

him : ohh, huh, let me go take them....

me : yah, let me go help.. you will pick nonhlanhla and i will pick mbali...

him : owk..

we went and picked them and took them to my room.. then we took all their clothing and took them to my room..

they didnt have much, just their clothing and bathing stuff thats all.. so it was quick to pack all their stuff and take them to my room..

after that we went down to sit in the living room..

him : they sure very tired hay

me : i dont blame them shame, they have been playing since we got to the park..

him : yah.. so how do you feel, since you will be seeing your parents anytime now??

me : well, am very happy that they decided to take responsibility, and that they are going to stay with us permanent..

him : dont you think its rather a bad idea to have your parents living in here??

me : why do you say that??

him : they will feel less powerful, less control because its not their house.. besides that, you really going to act jolly with siya, with your parents in the house??

me : aslong as am close to them, the rest we shall

see..

just as we were speaking, i heard the car..

ohhh owk, they here.. am kind of nervouse.. what if they lied, like they always do.. what if they were not in town?

i was so nervouse... then the living room door that goes to the garage opened and siya got in holding suitcases... then my mom followed then lastly my dad....

just by looking at them, i felt like i would just cry..

mom : nompilo..

i just looked at her...

they came towards us..

i just kept looking at them then as they came i attempted to leave...

mom : nompilo please...

i stood and looked at her... then left..

****siya****

that scene was not awkward at all.. nompilo is really upset and i understand why, but its all in the past now and they all need to learn to forgive and forget...

me : let her cool down.. she will come around..

her : hope so..

him : thanks son, for letting us stay in this big house of yours.. it kind of reminds me of my previous one..

me : its awkward.. let me show yall your room.. please follow me..

i led the way taking them to the 3rd floor... i opened their room and placed their bags in there..

me : i will leave the packing to you..

him : thanks son..

her : you are a really kind man siya.. i see you took my twin brother aswell

me : god blesses those that bless others...

her : god bless you..

i then went and opened the door..

me : am just glad that you took the decision to take responsibility..

i smiled and left

[12/13, 21:25] Zozaness: The villagegirl an the playboy: arranged marriage

continuation

- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .

****sbongile****

i wasnt really feeling happy about staying in my inlaws house.. but it surely is big.. am proud of the life nompilo is living... i must say god has really blessed her..

so we started unpacking

****nompilo****

i was in my room.. crying.. well i was happy that they are here, but then what do i do?? jump to them and say mommy i missed you.. its been awile since i had time with them...

i was sitting and tearing up... looking at nonhlanhla and mbali as they sleep piecefully on the bed... then i heard a knock on the door..

i went to open.. it was siya..

me : siya

him : mamas, are you owk..?

me : yes am fine..

him : are you sure??

me : yes am sure..

him : then why were you crying??

me : i wasnt crying..

him : yes you were, your eyes are red..

me : am sure my eyes are just sore..

him : you forgot i know you..

me : ****sigh**** owk, you got me...

him : so whats wrong??

me : am not sure if am ready to live with my parents yet.. i mean should i now play happy family with them?? call them mommy and daddy?? should i now laugh and share jokes with them?? i dont know siya..

him : mamas, look.. you dont have to play happy with them.. you dont have to jump start the relationship.. start small, start by getting to know them, start by giving them a chance... just start by trying thats all am asking from you..

me : but why siya?

him : because they are your parents, nomatter how much they hurt you, they still your parents, and the only people that really matter in your life because they brought you to life..

me : no, i mean why you doing this.. i mean you spoke with them, managed to get them to open up to you, managed to get them to take responsibility..

why??

him : you are my life now.. when you sad i need to make sure i make you happy.. when you angry i need to make you calm down... when you stressed i need to make you relax.. you and i make 1.. same viceverse..

i smiled..

him : am gonna go down to make dinner.. wanna help??

me : yah, it would keep my mind off things..

him : lets go..

i stood up and we went down..

we got to the kitchen

****siya****

we got to the kitchen.. bongani was alone in the living room..

i went to him...

me : lonely, i'm mr lonely, i have nobody, i am alooooooone.. (singing)

him : mxm..

we both laughed..

me : hao grootman, why you sitting here alone??

him : were should i be??

me : i dont know..

him : **shaking head** you lossing it boy (meaning am crazy)..

me : mxm.. anyway, mamas and i are going to make dinner, wanna join??

him : nah, will just sit here and relax...

me : come on bro, take it like family time ke..

him : owk owk..

he stood up and we went to the kitchen..

we were almost done cooking when nompilos parents came down...

mom : mhm, smells nice in here..

dad : indeed..

me : thanks, i take the credit..

bongani : oho.. mxm you didnt even tough a spoon..

i laughed...

me : dont mind this one ma hes just jelouse...

mom : i know him, very lazy..

we laughed.. nompilo was just smiling nje and minding her business..

me : you may sit in the living room, once we done we will eat in the living room..

mom : owk son..

they left..

i didnt say anything or commented anything..

after some time nonhlanhla came down with mbali...

one thing you should know about these 2.. when one wakes up, she wakes the other one up.. they always like doing things together and sometimes they include nompilo..

these 3 are very tight.. nothing can seperate their love for each other..

nompilo : ncooow, finally you woke up.. we were gonna eat without yall..

she was joking around with them.. she would never do that, she would rather not eat then eat without them lol..

nonhlanhla : you would never do that..

mbali : haaaaa sisi..

nompilo : ngiyakjela..

me : shes lying she would never..

nompilo laughed..

nompilo : nyiyadlala.. hao..

nonhlanhla : i know you would never..

mbali : sis nonhlanhla lets go watch cartoons..

nonhlanhla : owk..can we??

me : yah sure. we will let yall know when food is ready.. owk??

them : owk...

they went running.. boasting about who will arrive

first.. but as they got there we heard mbali shouting mommy. then daddy..

few seconds from that nonhlanhla came back to us..

me : hao, you not going to watch cartoons kanti??

nonhlanhla : no, i rather watch you guys cook..

i looked at nompilo and she was not even trying to involve herself in this conversation...

me : so, is mbali going to watch cartoons alone??

nonhlanhla : shes not alone so she will be alright..

to be honest i think nonhlanhla is feeling like about her parents because she is informed about the absence of their parents.. nompilo always used to speak to her about how she feels and all that so nonhlanhla knows how nompilo is hurt because of them so she is sharing the pain with her...

mbali doesnt really know much thats why she is free and happy with them..

nonhlanhla is angry at how her parents hurt nompilo more then their absence...

we cooked made dinner and all was well...

[12/13, 21:26] Zoaness: 43

.

.

.

.

.

.

****nompilo****

its saturday morning..

i get up.. my lil sisters are still sleeping..

i go freshen up and go to the kitchen.. i get there and find my mom already in the kitchen making breakfast.. mamzondo is not here today..

you mustve noticed that on saturdays and sundays our helpers dont come in.. thats because we believe in family time..

well i would go back but avoiding her would not help..

me : morning ma..

her : morning my child..

me : how did you sleep??

her : not really like a baby but i slept..

me : is that why you woke up this early??

her : yah...

i then went to get a cup to get water.. i drank water..

she was making a cup of coffee..

her : am making coffee, should i make for you??

me : dont be silly, let me make for you..

her : no, i insist my baby..

me : i also insist.. plus i was planning to make breakfast for everyone..

her : owk, i will let you make coffee if you let me help you make breakfast...

me : deal..

i then made coffee while she fried eggs one by one..

then i toasted bread.. as we sip our coffee, we

making breakfast..

we finished making breakfast mostly in silence.. we would catch a small conversation there and there but it was mostly just silence..

as we were making breakfast bongani came down..

him : mhm.. how nice to wake up to such a nice smell..

we just smiled.. we greeted each other..

as bongani was still making us laugh, siya came down..

him : mhm, sanibonani

we all greeted back..

mbali and nonhlanhla came down running, almost dripping siya off the stairs..

nompilo : mbali, nonhlanhla... stop running..

they quickly stoped..

mbali : its nonhlanhla, she wants to beat me..

nonhlanhla : haaa mbali.. shes lying..

i was busy solving this issue when dad came down..

dad : sanibonani

we all greeted back..

dad : i see the family is having fun huh..

siya : yah fun when i almost picked myself on the floor..

bongani laughed..

mom : why dont you boys go sit down because now you crowding the kitchen..

dad : honey, you kicking us out...jho.. (sarcastically)

siya : mamas, you going to let your mom kick us out..??

me : hate to say this but shes right, uyascrouda..

siya : jho.. i guess i will go play my game, because its the only this that truely loves me..

we all laughed..

dad : you got video games??

me : yah taima, i do, wanna play..

dad : sure, its time i showed you how a game is played..

bongani : come on, we all know am the king of games..

dad : please laity.. your an infant when it comes to games...

siya : owk, lets put the argument to action.. we playing need for speed..

bongani : woooooooooow... lets play..

dad : mxm kids..

they left still arguing about who the boss of speed is..

well siya looks so happy.. mabye this is what he needed.. a brother..

mom : when your dad is playing video games, he could literaly take the whole day..

me : really?

her : yah..

i laughed.. we set the table and dished up the food.. mbali and nonhlanhla were just running around the

house.. upstairs and downstairs..

we were in the kitchen cleaning up.. when mbali slipped and fell from the stairs.. mom panicked so much.. so did i.. mbali was crying very hard and very painful..

she had cut her knee... it was bleeding..

my dad, bongani and siya came rushing in the kitchen....

siya : what happened??

me : she fell off the stairs..

siya : let me get the first aid kit..

mom : thank you son..

to be honest i didnt really know how a first aid is used..

siya brought it and helped my mom to clean the wound and patch it up..

bongani and dad went back to playing games..

siya : done, no running around owk..??

mbali : yes uncle siya..

nonhlanhla was standing there looking really scared.,.

mbali then got up from the floor ..

nompilo : go sit in the dinning room, food is ready..

nonhlanhla follow..

guess what, they were running again... hai.. i give up...

siya was heading out..

nompilo : i hope you not going to play games now..

siya : why??

me : breakfast is ready ..

siya : oh, owk.. i will call taima and grootman...

me : owk..

we laughed and we went...

they came but it was munitis after we have started eating... their food was halve way cold..

but we enjoyed breakfast.. i must say my parents are not that bad.. but imagin if they had raised us...

hapiness as a whole....

[12/13, 21:26] Zozaness: crop top

44

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

****nompilo****

it was preddy late still saturday.. the day was owk..
but something just crossed my mind.. i know we
said my parents are staying here permanent, but we
forgot that nonhlanhla and mbali have school..
nonhlanhla have a farewell next month..

we were all in the living room watching a movie
when i thought of this.. so i pinched siya and

signaled for him to follow me out..'

i stepped out and siya followed..

him : whats wrong??

me : nonhlanhla and mbali..

him : what about them?

me : they got school and i dont think they can allow them to move in the third term...

him ; ohhhh no...let me call your mom..

me : owk..

he went to call my mom..

mom : whats wrong??

siya : i brought the kids here but forgot about the school issue..

mom : ohh, mxm, i also totally forgot..

siya : but not to worry though.. i will try a few primary schools on monday and if they dont except them this week they will go back to school next week.. we will say that the funeral kind of dragged longer..

surely the school will understand..

me : the papers??

siya : i will drive there tommorow...

mom : alone??

siya : i will ask taima and grootman to go with me..
plus we get to have a little guys road trip..

me : but will nonhlanhla and mbali be comfortable
with this.. i dont want them to go through what i
went through..

siya : they wont mamas, relax..

i saw my mom wanted to ask what happened but
she kept quite..

we went back in the room and finished watching the
movie.. after the movie we brought the subject up..

siya : huh.. taima, grootman.. would you mind taking
a 10+ hour roadtrip??

bongani : 10+ hours?? were are we going?? america??

siya : we driving, not flying..

bongani : same difference..

we laughed...

dad : but were are we going??

me : we fetching the kids papers.. certificates..

bongani : for??

me : school..

bongani : oh i totally forgot..

dad : will schools allow them in this time??

siya : i dont know.. but am gonna apply on monday
and if they dont take them this week then they
gonna have to go back to kzn...

dad : owk..

siya : so we going or am going??

dad : am in.. it would give me some fresh air and
time to know my son inlow.. and my honeys twin
brother..

bongani : am also in... a room filled with ladies.. i will
die..

they laughed.. my mom took a pillow and threw him with it so did i..

bongani : you see, baqalile...

we all laughed..

siya : so its sorted.. we going...

you must be wondering were is nonhlanhla and mbali at the moment..

well they are watching cartoons in their room on siyas laptop.. i dont know if now they sleeping or still watching cartoons...

[12/13, 21:27] Zozaness: The villagegirl an the playboy: arranged marriage

(I wanted to rest but i couldnt stay away.. Reading your comments just gives me motivation)

45

.

.

.

.
. .
. .

****nompilo****

its a sunday morning and siya, bongany and dad are going to kzn to fetch my lil sisters certificates and everything thats needed for admissions..

i must say am very happy that my siblings will be here next to me..

so today i woke up early to make breakfast for siya,bongani and dad..

yersterday i spoke of packing lunch but they insisted they will buy something on the road so i wont be packing anything...

i woke up gently not waking my siblings up and went to brush my teeth and wash my face..

then went to the kitchen..

i made oats.. just when it was about to get ready..

siya and bongani came down laughing...

bongani : morning nompilo, already up??

me : yes, gotta make sure yall leave satisfied, dont want yall dying of hunger hay..

siya : thats my wife..

siya came to me to hug me good morning..

me : siya my parents..

him : i just want to say good morning..

me : well you can just say it without touching me..

him : come on mamas, they know that i paid lobola out for you already...

me : doesnt matter, i still need to respect them..

him : a kiss on the cheek atleast...?

me : no siya..

i slightly pushed him away..

he raised his hands to say "i give up"...

bongani : i warned you..

him : i couldve listened...

i dont know what he was warned about but i continued with breakfast...

later i dished up and my sibilings ran down..

me : what did i say about running??

they looked at each other and smiled.. then at me...

hai... then they went to the living room, were siya and bongani were sitting..

as i was about to take the dishes in the dinning room my parents came down..

dad : morning angel

mom : morning darling..

me : morning mama, morning baba..

i then walked on..

i packed all the bowles..and placed a big bowl in the middle that had strawberries and blueberries..

i called everyone and they all came to eat

the reason i made oats is because it is known to be filling, so its a win for them...

after they have eaten, i took the dishes to the kitchen in the dishwasher...

bongani came to me in the kitchen..

him : we heading out now, see you when we come back..

me : have a safe trip..

him : thank you, have a safe stay and please go easy on my sister...

me : when have i ever been hard on her...??

him : just saying..

me : goodbye uncle bongani, safe trip..

siya walked in..

bongani : stay well.. siya, i will be in the garage..

siya : owk..

bongani left..

siya : so, am still not getting a 'go well' hug and kiss??

me : siya, we spoke about this..

siya : no, you spoke about this...

i kept quite looking at him... sigh... i cant believe am about to do this..

me : owk siya...

he came close to me and i went to him..

he first hugged me..

him : am gonna miss you mamas

me : am gonna miss you more papas..

he chuckled..

he pulled back and leaned in to kiss me.. i closed my eyes and leaned forward.. our lips touched but before we could even go further.. someone cleared their throat..

i quickly slightly pushed siya back and dropped my head..

dad : am sorry to disturb, i just wanted to say that am heading out now..

i spoke with still my face looking down..

me : owk baba..

dad : owk son, you will find me out..

siya : owk taima..

he exited..

siya : now where we..

he moved close to me..

me : siya, see what i was avoiding.. now the situation is more awkward..

him : your dad knows that we dating, he knows we bound to do this, besides its our house, we cant live apart in our house... i would understand if we were visiting them, then mabye it would show disrespect.. but they visiting us..

me : you mean staying with us..

him : same difference..

me : they waiting for you..

he looked at me and left looking defeated..

me : siya..

he looked at me...

me : i love you..

he smiled, but his smile was forced.. it wasnt his genuine smile.. i was feeling bad, like really bad..

him : i love you more...

he then looked away and left..

i gave a huge sigh and dropped my head on the counter..

they left around 8am in the morning and now its 7pm.. and they not back yet..

i had made dinner... it was ready.. we were now busy watching tv.. i had tried calling siya from 4pm but he wouldnt take my calls..

he did call around 1pm saying they have arrived..mabye they took a break somewhere..

at around 8pm i heard the car coming in..

i was so worried that i ran to the garage and wait there as the car came in, my mom followed and my

siblings followed..

well while they were away, we hardly spoke with my mom.. i spent my morning cleaning.. and she was also helping but we never really spoke.. i had my earphones throughout the morning..

at around 2pm i watched indian movies...

then after i went to my bedroom to chill with my siblings..

well mbali yena had a great day with mom, it shows how much she longed for her..

nonhlanhla and me were always together.. but sometimes she would leave me and go play with mbali..

well mbali and me.. we fight a lot.. but we love each other..

nonhlanhla is always the middle one..

as they parked and got out, i ran to siya..

me : you had me worried...

siya : am owk..

bongani : we owk..

me : sorry uncle..

they chuckled..

we got in the house...

they all threw themselves on the couch..

me : long trip huh??

bongani : very long.. but awesome..

dad : yah, atleast i got to know a glimps of my son in law and my sisters brother..

they laughed..

me : yall must be tired..

dad : very..

siya wasnt saying much, i take it hes very tired...

siya : am gonna call it a night...

me : arnt you going to eat first??

siya : no thank you, i just need my bed... goodnight everyone...

he left.. i was thinking of going after him but then my parents are here, what will they say seeing me go in siyas room, or know that i was in there??

but you know what, i dont care.. i went after him..

i knocked on his bedroom door..

him : come in..

i went to him..

him : hao, kanti its you??

me : yes..

him : arnt you afraid that your parents will find you in here?? or know that you in here??

me : siya!!

him : am just asking, i dont want to make the situation anymore awkward then i made it..

me : siya am sorry, its just that, i was always thought to respect my parents nomatter what..

him : mamas, i am your husband, not side boyfriend.. i paid lobola for you, i dont owe your parents anything.. all i want is to hold my woman whenever i

want, kiss her whenever i want, play with her without worrying whether her parents are watching or not.. if they watching let them watch and take notes hao..

me : **silence**

him : mamas..

i looked at him and he held me close...

him : i love you..

he came close to me and placed his lips on mine.. he then rotated again and again, i was just following his movement..

he then held my waist, he was brushing it.. he pulled me closer and my heart skipped a beat.. he rubbed my waist and also squeezing it.. i felt my stomach having shivers. he held my neck and i felt something weird happening in my body..

he was kissing me very slow, then he upped the pace.. i would get lost in the routine because my mind is on what was going on in my body..

immediately i felt like my panty is wet.. i quickly pulled out..

me : i must go..

him : were are you going??

me : i think i just started my periods

him : you sure?

he had a smile on his face... this guy doesnt really take anything serous neh...

me : yes..

i then left, walking really uncomfortably and fast..

i started periods when i was 13 and i would depend on the free pads they supplied at school everymonth..

so when i stayed with siya the first time, i had forgotten to take the remaining pack for that month.. so when i started i was scared to let him know that am on my periods because i was scared of him.. so i cut my old t.shird and folded it in a thick form and placed a tissue on top and place it on my panty.. then i would change the tissue every hour.. but at night i always had a problem.. i would wake up and find the tissue filled with blood and the cloth as well..

so i always woke up and washed that cloth and bathed..

it went on for about 2 months, but after that i was now used to him and i could ask him

he was shocked when i told him what i did the first 2months..

so i went to my room took a pad and went to the bedroom.. i got there and there was nothing.. well there was a liquid, like a discharge or something.. maybe its a warning that my periods are on their way...

i touched my private part and it was wet, like really wet..

i wiped my private with a tissue and my panty and dressed up... i washed my hands with soap...

i didnt go back to siya.. i went down to were everyone was.. i sat down at the dining room with them, they had already dished up and for me..

bongani : is he owk??

me : yes..

mbali : sisi were is uncle siya??

me : hes sleeping baby..

mbali : hes not going to eat..

me : no baby

mbali : owk

they were on a topic when i came in.. so they continued with the topic..

mina i was just eating and thinking about the weird experiance i just went through.. see if my mom was here all my life, i would ask her what was happening but look now, i have no one to ask.. i cant ask siya or bongani because this is woman stuff.. phela i have never felt like this.. i have never had such a thing.. my private part was wet, my panty was wet and had a little liquid on it like a discharge?? hai...

[12/13, 21:28] Zozaness: The villagegirl an the playboy: arranged marriage

(SURPRISE, SURPRISE, SURPRISE) thanks for bonding with me guys, love you all....

continuation

.

.

.

.

.

****nompilo****

bongani : nompilo!!

me : huh!!

dad : whats wrong nana, you dont look alright...

bongani : what did siya do??

me : huh!! no am fine..

bongani : nompilo??

me : were is mbali and nonhlanhla??

mom : they went to sleep..

me : i better go aswell..

i left.. i could see that they are all confused and want answers..

i got to my room.. i headed to the bathroom to check if it didnt happen again...

few minutes someone knocked...

i thought it was my mom, so i went to open the door..

as i opened i saw it was siya.. i got nervouse, scared.. what if it happens while am still with him?? what if this time its really periods and hes here.. knowing siya he wont leave my room knowing something is wrong with me, he rather bare me hitting him and pushing him...

i closed the door before he could enter but he held the door with his hands...

siya : nompilo whats wrong?? i went down to go look for you but they said that you went to sleep and you looked off.. bongani thinks i did something..

me : shh my sisters are sleeping..didnt you say you tired, you need some sleep??

him : yes, but after what happened, i couldnt sleep.. and after i heard that you not owk, i had to come see whats wrong

me : well am fine..

him : nompilo mara..

me : what??

him : you always try to shut me out..

i looked at him, looked down.. then opened the door wildly open..

he came in and i closed the door...

he sat on the couch next to the bed and i sat next to him..

him : is this about what happened in my room.??

i looked down..

he lifted my chin up, making me look at him..

him : its normal.. it happenes

me : you dont understand siya, its not my periods...

him : i know its not your periods, its called being turned on..

me : being turned on??

him : yes.. when a girl and a guy are kissing in

motion and touching each other softly it creates motion in your body and prepares your body for the next step

me : the next step being sleeping together??

him : yes...

me : oh, so am not sick..

him : no mamas, you not sick..

me : ohh **sigh**

him : better now??

me : better...

him : i didnt think you would be so worried, scared..

me : i was already thinking of asking my mom..

him : haibo...lol..

we laughed...

me : not so loud..

we looked to see if the kids are not awake.. they were still sleeping...

me : thank you siya, even though you the causer..

him : ouch...lol..

someone knocked on the door..

i went to check who it was, i saw it was my mom..

i didnt let her in, nor open the door fully.. i just opened alittle..making sure she doesnt see siya in my room...

i was also mega scared that she doesnt see siya or hear him..

me : mama??

her : can i come in??

me : huh!! not really ma, i kinda made a mess in the room, plus i dont want us to wake mbali and nonhlanhla up...

her : mpilo whats wrong??

me : am ok mama..

her : you dont look owk nompilo..

me : owk, i was sad that siya came back very late and didnt eat when he came back, so i went to him to find out whats wrong, and when i got there he was

asleep, i tried waking him up but he was not participating, so i am just asking myself if i did something wrong or not..

her : ohh baby.. its probably because he was tired, he will be the siya you know tommorow...

me : i hope so..

her : owk, dont stress yourself.. owk??

me : owk..

her : owk, let me leave you to it..

me : owk.. thank you mama..

her : my pleasure baby..

she left, but her face showed that she was not buying it..

i closed the door ..

siya : woow.. from a village girl to a liar...

me : mxm.. i had to..

him : you couldve just said you not feeling well..

me : well i wasnt thinking straight owk..

him : nompilo, untill when will we act like sneaky teenagers??

me : siya, imagine my mom seeing you in my room..

him : so??

me : siya!!

him : you my wife..

me : i know.. but... ****sigh****

he looked down.. looking as if hes deep in thought...

me : siya!!

him : yes..

me : please understand that i am only 16 and i am not used to living with my parents and my husband in the same house.. i dont know how to balance respecting my parents and satisfying you.. so please be a little patient with me...

him : owk, i will try..

me : thank you...

i went to him and kissed him on his cheek...

him : let me go back to bed.. see you tomorrow..

me : good night...

him : good night..

he blew kisses and i blew kisses to him.. he left..

i was left with my siblings... i got in the sheets and slept.

[12/13, 21:29] Zoaness: The villagegirl an the
playboy: arranged marriage

46

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.
. .
. . .

****siya****

it was wednesday today and i had to go check on my company.. i have been absent for days now, i dont want my employees to feel like i neglected them...

i woke up, did the deeds..

i then sent nompilo a text saying i had left, i got in the car and drove to work...

i got to the company, parked my car and walked in..

i passed through my receptionist first to get my massages..

me :good morning thando

her : good morning sir..

me : how are you??

her : am great thank for asking sir..

me : any massages for me??

her : huh!! yes, plenty..

she handed me the massages and indeed they were plenty.. phew, i hope i didnt miss anything major..

me : thank you...

i headed to my office..

her : huh!! sir??

i stopped and turned to hear what she wanted to say..

me : yes

her : there is a client that has been here for 2 days looking for you..

me : did he/she leave a his/her name??

her : no, but she did say it was urgent..

me : oh, well if its very important she will come back..

her : owk sir..

i then left and went to my office.. i got to my office, placed my suitcase on the table and sat on the chair..

i started with reading massages..

huh.. a message from a very loyal, and high injector of funds, this one i need to call back..

i called and his receptionist answered...

her : ICD how can we help you??

me : good morning, its mr xulu speaking..

her : good morning mr xulu, how can i help you??

me : may i please speak to mr naidoo..

her : please hold as i check his availability..

me : owk..

i kept on hold for about a minutes then she came back to me..

her : unfortunately mr naidoo is not available at the moment, he is in a meeting.. should i take a message..??

me : huh, yes please.. please tell him that i am very sorry that i was unavailable when he called, and he should please get back to me the moment he finds time..

her : got it.. thank you very much..

me : thanks bye..

her : bye sir..

she hung up..

mr naidoo and i are like pals.. well its because of my father that mr naidoo decided to use my services...

so what he does is.. instead of using other ships to transport his cars around the country, he uses my ship...

yes, not only do i sell cars but i fetch them internationally using my ship..

after a few minutes of work, my office phone rang.. i thought it was mr naidoo, but it was my reseptionist..

me : mr xulu speaking hello..

her : sorry to bother you sir, but the client i was telling you about is here again.. should i let her in??

me : yes, bring her through...

i hung up and wondered who was this client that was eager to see me and what would be the reason for her to want to see me so egently...

i waited while thinking.. they knocked and came in...

it couldnt be.. it was mrs ndimande (if you remember, when i came here earlier while me and nompilo were still acting as siblings,you would remember her.. the lady that was here to settle a contract but also her personal "needs")

i looked at her in shock.. i just didnt think i would see her again...

me : thank you thando..

the reseptionist left and went back to her table...

her : we meet again, i almost though you were avoiding me...

me : huh, no... not at all.. please, sit down...

she sat down on the chair facing mine, with the table in the middle...

me : so, i hope you not here to complain about our services..

her : and what if i was??

me : well i would be surprised because we never

dissapoint any of our clients..

her : well, like company like owner..

me : excuse me??

her : your company doesnt dissapoint its clients, so does its owner...

me : definitley, i tend to keep my clients happy...

her : and they are happy...

she said this brushing my hands in a sexual manner and i felt my blood run... i quickly removed my hands and pretended to pick some files...

me : huh! yah.. (clears throat).. so what brings you here today...??

her : well, i have been waiting for your call since the last time i was here, but i never recieved one..

me : well... (swallowing my saliver) huh!!

her : its owk, no need to panic... its all in the past, lets focus on the future....

she stood up and i feared for what was about to happen..

i pull my chair in and try to think about nompilo so that i dont see myself doing this, but her image is nowhere to be found...

she pulled my chair and sat on me.. immediatly my blood started boiling, my man over there started being hard.. my eyes lost sight and i found myself drooling

i pushed her up and stood up.. i went to the other side of the table...

me : am sorry, but i cant do this... am a married man now...

her : come on, what does a 16 year old know about satisfying a man?? come to make some maths, you can only start sleeping with her when she reaches 18, because with that big man down there, you might get arrested for rape even though she did it willingly.. so do you want to suffer??

i was thinking about this.. i never really thought about it.. but again nompilo can never say i raped her knowing that she agreed on it, but what if someone around us does?? but who??

but still even though no one will report it as rape, nompilo would not sleep with me until she's ready and I respect that, but hai... am human, am 25.. I have tasted some cake, Mr Man down there has tasted some cake, so she might be telling the truth.. am going to suffer... but still I won't betray my woman.. she's been putting up with me enough.. can't hurt her...

I rather go through hell...

me : it's awkward, I will wait...

her : wait??

me : yes...

her : how about we put you to a test huh!!

I didn't know what he was talking about... she went and locked my door then took out her blazer.. she walked to me and stood very close.. she held Mr Man and I shivered a little and took out a moan...

she then rubbed it over my pants and I got weak to my knees...

she then unbuttoned her blouse, took out her boobs

and started playing with them..

i was looking at her making all those things with her tongue and all that playing with her boobs...

she then went on her knees and held my belt.. she unbuttoned it and went to the zip...

i quickly got back to my senses and moved away from her going to the door..

i unlocked the door and opened it...

me : please leave...

her : what??

me : i said please leave, now..

she smiled, took her blazer and purse and walked out.. as she got to the door she stood there...

me : thats why i stay single, so that i can satisfy myself anytime i want without having to think that am betraying someone... as long as i condomise am safe.. its not called being a hoe, its called setting your cake free...

him : thanks for the tip, now please leave...

she touched my mr man again and left while smiling...

i closed the door and locked.. i went to my chair and looked at mr man...

me : why are so weak mara?? mxm...

i then looked up... i was still horny...

i had no choice but to ride myself.. its better then having to cheat on nompilo.. not when we in good terms now...

i rode myself while moaning alone..

i later came and released...

i took tissue and whiped mr man (dont laugh or look at me like that, i had to take myself out of this misery)

i dressed neatly up and went top the bathroom..

i washed my hands with soap.. then i stared at the mirror thinking of what just happened...

me : mara god..

wasnt marriage life supposed to be for satisfaction

like this?? but now i have to suffer... mara why did i have to marry a 16 year old whereas am 25.. mara this is not fair... i mean i understand that its not her fault but hai..

i got out and went to my office again...

immediatly as i got in the office the whole image came back...

me : i cant bare this..

i took my suitcase and left...

i passed the reseptionist..

me : thando, i will come back on monday, when i come back for good now..

her : owk sir..

me : if mr naidoo calls please give him my personal number and tell him to call me from it... since i lost my prevouse phone, i never had a chance to update my contact details...

her : owk sir..

i left...

****nompilo****

so i was aware that siya went to work, i read his message...

i was playing with my siblings in my room, mom was cooking, dad and bongani were playing games..

as we were playing.. someone knocked on the door...

i went to open the door... it was uncle bongani..

me : uncle??

him : siya parents are here...

me : what??

him : yep.. they are in the living room as we speak, they asked me to come call you...

me : why??

him : i dont know...

me : nonhlanhla, mbali, continue playing, nyiyeza, yezwa??

nonhlanhla : uyaphi??

me : abazali baka siya bakhona, bayangbiza..

nonhlanhla : owk..

mbali : bazokuthatha futhi??

me : no baby...

they continued playing and i went out, but uncle bongani stopped me..

him : you cant go to them dressed like this..

i had my tights on with my granny t.shirt on.. yah i took some of her clothing to remember her..

me : ohh yah, thanks..

i got in the house quickly dressed in a dress, wore sandals and wrapped a doek around my head...

me : now am good to go..

him : lets go...

we went down..

i got in the launch...

me : sanibonani..

i said bowing my head...

chief : yebo makoti

chief w : yebo makoti

i sat down on the floor..

chief w : its owk my daughter, sit on the couch..

me : thank ma...

i stood up and sat on the couch..

chief : makoti..

me : baba??

chief : were is siya??

me : usemsebenzini baba..

chief : when is he coming back..

me : i dont know baba..

chief : call him, tell him to leave everything and come home in this minute...

me : yes baba...

i reached my phone and called him...

****siya****

i was busy driving when nompilo called... i picked up,

placed it on loudspeaker and placed it on the holder...

me : mamas

her : siya, when are you coming home??

me : am on my way right now, you miss me...??

her : hurry...

me : mamas, whats wrong??

her : just get here fast, we waiting for you...

me : yall waiting for me?? mamas whats happening??

she hung up...

now that was rather weird.. i wonder whats going on with mamas..

i picked up the pace...a

as i got home i was in a rush to park so that i could know what was wrong with mamas... she really got me worried..

i parked, closed the gate and the garage and went in the house..

immediatly i was taken away by the scene i saw in

the living room..

mom and dad looked at me with the " wazewafika nx " look.. nompilo looked up then down, she seemed very scared.. i hope and pray they didnt say anything to upset her.... nompilos parents looked rather confused and scared... bongani looked a bit relaxed but also scared, mara yena he knows my father, he served him for 37 years....

[12/13, 21:30] Zozaness: The villagegirl an the playboy: arranged marriage

continuation

.

.

..

.

.

.

.

****siya****

i was still standing and observing this crowd in the living room.. i was also sensing the silence.. there was a sense of fear, nervousness and more...

chief : uzomalapho kfika nini??

i snapped out and went to sit down..

i sat next to nompilo..

nompilo : may i make yall some tea??

chief : yebo mtanami

chiefs w : please makoti..

she stood up and went to make tea...

i greeted and they greeted back... but dad looked rather angry.. mom was owk, she was chilled...

chief : siyabonga!!

normally my dad calles me "son".. when he calls me by my name, i already know that kshubile...

me : baba??

chief : kwenzakalani la??

me : what do you mean baba??

chief : la??? **points out to the rest of the people in the living room**

me : ***silence**

chief : am talking to you siyabonga...

i looked at him, then at mom, then looked at everyone then i looked down...

nompilo came in with a tray of cups of tea...

she bowed, gave to my mom and dad then went to give to her mom and dad and bongani.. then she gave to me... i took and mimed thank you.. i was taken away by her innocent beauty, respectful manner.. like jho..

they all said thank you, but there was a question hanging in the air...

chief : makoti..

i looked at nompilo, she answered while looking down..

nompilo : baba??

chief : what is going on in this house??

nompilo : i dont understand baba...

chief : what is your mom, dad and bongani doing here??

nompilo : i wanted to be close to my parents and my siblings..

chief : so you let them come stay here??

nompilo : yes baba..

chief : siyabonga and you allowed this

me : yes baba, it was actually my idea...

chief : yaz siyabonga uyislima... are you not married??

me : i am baba...

chief : so how does a married couple live permanently with the inlaws?? huh??

chiefs w : baba, yehlisa umoya...

chief : maxulu, ungalinge uzingene lezindaba..

chiefs w : kodwa baba...

chief : maxulu..

my mom looked down defeated...

me : baba, nompilo didnt get to grow up wit her parents, so i took this appportunity to bring them together..

chief : hao, ndodana, you didnt tell me you gaduated to be a social worker...

he was being sarcastic...

i didnt say a word..

chiefs w : mama ka nompilo, i understand that you wanted to get to know your daughter, but what the chief is trying to say is, rather get a place near them not live with them...

nompilos mom : i understand..

chief : aikho lento le, you sbongile and kevin yall were always in the city, never cared about your daughters.. now your daughter is in hold of a million rand company and married to a man who owns a million rand running company and now you have time to know your kids??

me : baba!!

chief : hini, its true.. am sorry makoti mara these

people that you call your parents are not only here to bond with you, but they also here to bond with what you can bring to the table...

chiefs w : baba..

chief : kulungile, but please let the young couple breath, i also need grandkids before i die...

me : baba!!

hai u baba godwa... jho...

chief : speaking of grandkids, siyabonga, the wedding..

me : we have set our own date...

chief : what do you mean you have set your own date?? the date was set to august, which is next month...

me : i know dad, but we moved it to after nompilos graduations..

chief : ini??

woooooooooow, i just woke a monster from sleep...

chief ; maxulu, bese sithini ke thina?? nangu,

umtwanakho akafuni kulalela, ngiyenzi ke mina??

chiefs w : why so far??

me : i want nompilo to finish school first...

chief : see why i didnt want nompilo to go to school...

sbongile, kevin, see what we have to deal with??

they didnt say anything..

me : baba, i dont know why you rushing for this wedding... its going to happen.. its not like all the failed attempts that yall had.. nompilo and i have fallen inlove... so wether the wedding is in 2 years or a year its going to happen.. i would never cheat on her, and she would never cheat on me...

he sat back and looked at me, then at nompilo... he was debating in his head...

chief : when exactly is the wedding??

me : next of next year january...

chief : thats.....like 14+ months away...

me : yes baba

chief : you do know that alot can happen in those

months..

me : yes baba..

chief : if you promise me that you will look after nompilo and promise not to dissapoint then i guess i will wait...

me : i promise dad...

chief : the consequenses of having 1 son, all the fathers staborness goes to him...

we all eased up a giggle...

chief : hope you wont be this stubborn when you start serving the people..

i just smiled..

chiefs w : hao baba, you not that hard, so he also wont be hard...

chief : well he will be hard the first moments but after his 3rd wife, he will be relaxed.. phela these woman soften us, imagin having more then 1.. thats times more softness...

i got a bit uneasy because nompilo was here hearing

this...

i just smiled...

chief : makoti, thank you for some tea... next time please have some biscuits...

chiefs w : hao baba...

chief : am just saying...

me : if you do warn us before coming, then you will get them..

he just looked at me and shook his head.. well i gave him a smirk like am a boss...

they stood up to leave.. and they bid goodbye.. well my mom bid goodbye, my dad just up and left..

chiefs w : sbongile.. am sorry about what my husband said about you wanting money..

sbongile : its owk..

chiefs w : i know you mean well..

sbongile : thank you..

my mom also left and they finally left...

most times kids are happy to see their parents, but me... i rather just call them..

the house became awkward after this.. everyone took out sighs..

nompilo didnt say anything, she just excused herself and left..i followed her..

me : nompilo...

she kept walking to her room and ignoring me..

i ran to her and held her arm..

me : nompilo...

her : yes...

me : whats wrong??

her : nothing..

me : nompilo..

she let loose and went in her room.. as i tried to open it she locked it..

****sigh**** what have i done now?? i pray and hope its not what i think it is..

[12/13, 21:31] Zozaness: 47

- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .

****nompilo****

i was in my room.. well its been almost 30 minutes since i have been in my room.. my siblings were sleeping, actually i found them sleeping.. seems like they played till they got tired...

i was halve asleep and halve on my phone busy serching `about royalty stories, and indeed most chiefs, kings, almost all of them have more then one

wife...

i dont why i say almost all because i have not yet read about a chief with only one wife...

well it says here that chiefs are most likly to marry from royalty.. and to think about it, am not from royalty therefore siya will have to marry from royalty....

as i was busy on my phone, i heard a knock..

i thought it was siya...

i went to open.. it was my mom..

her : can i come in??

me : sure..

her :they already sleeping?? (speaking about my siblings)

me : yes!!

we sat at the couch..

her : nompilo, i know i have been absent from your life eversince you were very young, and am really sorry about that.. i know i wasnt there to teach you

things about woman, marriage, being a girl.. but am here now, let me help you...

i am not the type to answer back to elder people but at this moment am boiling words.. words want to come out but am holding myself.. but they burning me too much that i really cant hold it...

her : nompilo, please, i am your mother, let me close the gab that i left when i left you...

me : what is it that you were doing in gauteng that made you dump all of us, ALL OF US, with grandma, then abandorn us??

her : nompilo, i....

me : what was it ma?? what was so important?? the truth please...

her : nompilo,i really cant tell you right now...

me : wooow, what was i thinking, believing that you would open up to me like you did to siya...

her : did he tell you??

me : no, but he did say that he understands reason why you guys were absent... if you could open up to

siya, why cant you open up to me??

her : baby, you have been through alot, and this is going to tear you even more...

me : ma, its not like am 5 years old you know?? its not like am gonna be sitting up everynight asking my granny,'when is my mom and dad coming home' you know, yall werent there for my first gratuation from grade R to grade 1, you were not there in all my award ceremonies at school, yall were not there when i was first bullied at the netball court when i was trying to be in the team and kids would push me around and not throw the ball to me, you know what they would say?? 'you too skinny to be playing netball, we dont want the ball to crack you', you were not there when i first had my periods to explain what was going on.. yall never attendent any parents meeting, yall never accompanied me to any camps... where were yall when i was bullied to the point were i landed in hospital because my eyes were affected?? did you even notice i have contact lenses on?? i grew up seeing other children being fetched by their parents, fathers putting their kids on their shoulders,

moms running around playing with their kids.. and i had to sit down and watch like i came from an aeroplane.. mom, am in a marriage.. i dont know how to behave, most of the time i behave like siya is my brother and not my husband, hes 25 mom, very matured, married to a 16 year village girl, who doesnt know how to act, apeak, or behave... i act childish, silly and stupid.. but can you blame me.. mom i have never had a relationship, i have never dated a boy, they alway say that we should take baby steps, but i jumped my baby steps because of you and dad.. i jumped the dating phase, the relationship phase and jumped to marriage at my first attempt.. now i dont only have to learn to be a wife, but i also have to learn to be a girlfriend, a partner all at the same time.. yall were not there for my hearing.. not there to protect me and tell me everything will be owk.. do you know my favourit colour?? do you know my dream job?? do you know my favourit sport?? do you know what kind of movies i like best?? owk not me, nonhlanhla, do you know her favourit colour?? mbali?? do you know?? mom.. i had 14 great birthdays without you... no call, no texts.. no

christmas wishes, no happy new years.. this year you came after so long, after years you came, but not to live with us, but to send me to be married... you never sat me down that day to tell me how marriage life will be, you never sat down with me to explain.. what a mother you are...

.

those were the words that were burning inside me, i know they were kind of harsh but after saying this, i felt like a huge load has been lifted of my shoulder..

.

there was a moment of silence.. just me snifing and wiping my tears.. i then realised she was also crying...

.

her : there is no amount of words that can explain how sorry i am.. even sorry cant bring back the years i lost.. but theres nothing i can do to bring back the past, but i still have time to mend the future..

me : ****sigh****

her : am really sorry nompilo, really sorry...

i was feeling sad now, i felt like i could hug her.. i went to her and hugged her, she hugged back and cried bitterly... her cry was loud enough to wake my siblings up..

but these are a little heavy sleepers so no worries..

i calmed down...

her : thank you..

me : its owk..

her : i will make up for the past..

me : owk...

her : huh!! i know its going to be a little of bringing up this but, siya spoke to me about you being angry at him..

me :ohh, am not angry at him..

her : then why would he think that??

me : i was upset..

her : what made you upset??

me : i heard siyas father speaking about siya being married again...

her : ohhh, huh!! no baby, siyas father was just making an example of how siya would be if he would marry again like him..

me : didnt sound that way..

her : believe me, siya will not take another wife, he loves you..

me : **sigh** here goes being stupid again..

her : no baby, you just didnt know how to act, but that can be fixed.. see in marriage, communication plays a big role..

me : so i have to talk to siya??

her : why do you always direct him by his name??

me : what am i supposed to direct him with? his surname??

her : yes, or baba..

me : haaaaa!!

her : yes..

me : ah..

her : (laughs) so as i was saying, whenever you feel sad or upset or angry, talk to him, dont shut him out..

me : oh owk..

her : may i ask a personal, uncomfortable question?

me : owk..

her : please, if you dont want to answer just say skip, owk...

me : owk..

her : have you and siya been intimate??

ohhhh ohhhh mama... what a question...yhooooo...

me : huh! not yet...

her : is that why yall sleep in different rooms?? you uncomfortable around him??

me : well, no, i dont know..

her : well, just a little advice.. since you married already, you need to satisfy your husbands needs or he will find someone to satisfy him..

me : cant he wait till am done with school?

her : he could, but remember, he has been there, hes 25, his body is processing in a mature way, so it could be deadly hard for him to keep away...

me : huh??

her : its like eating meet.. once you eat it and taste it.. you will always crave it...

me : i still dont get it..

her : what was your favourit dish??

me : rice, chicken and beef stew...

her : now, lets say you are used to eating that every Sunday, would you keep away from it for months??

me : am gonna have a lot of cravings for it and end up making it before even 2 months pass...

her : thats the same with intimacy..

me : ohhh..

her : yes, and last thing.. whenever you decide you ready, please protect yourself, unless you want kids..

me : not at all...

her : exactly, i dont want to make you feel anymore uncomfortable so you can google ways to protect yourself..

me : owk, thanks mom..

her : owk,i will call siya for you owk..

me : its owk i will go to him..

her : owk..

we hugged again, then she left..

few minutes later i went out to him.. he was not in the living room, dinning room and the kitchen, so i take it hes in his room.. nor is bongani, could they have gone out..?

i go knock in his bedroom but hes not there.. i go to bonganis bedroom and he opens for me..

me : is siya here??

him : yah.. siya!!

siya : yes..

him : your wife is looking for you mahn..

he came to the door..

siya : mamas..

me : can i speak to you..

siya : sure..

he came out and closed the door...

me : can we go to your room..

he ****sigh**** and he led the way to his room...

we got there, closed the door..

him : whats wrong??

me : am sorry about earlier, i shouldnt have..

him : its owk, what got you angry..??

me : i heard your father talk about you marrying another wife..

him : i thought it would be that.. listen mamas, i could never do that to you..

me : then why didnt you say anything??

him : he was just making an example, he wasnt saying that i will..

me : ohh.. again am sorry..

him : its owk..

i thought about what my mom said about intimacy... and looked at siya.. he was looking down nje..

i thought of doing it, but i was not ready... i just killed the idea..

there was a weired silence and its unlike siya..

me : am i forgiven ??

him : yes, you are..

me : owk.. ohh and can you help me pack?

him : pack?? where are you going...??

me : am going with my mom...

him : mamas, you cant leave..

me : am sorry..

him : mamas please, please dont leave, i will do anything, anything you want..

i was actually pulling his leg.. i am not going anywere, leave siya with who?? no..

me : am just playing papas, am not going anywere..

him : ohhh you got jokes now?

i laughed...

me : but still please help me move my stuff..

him : mxm, quit playing mamas..

me : am serous.. dont you want me to sleep in your room anymore??

him : you kidding right??

me : am not..

him : baby!! dont play like that....

me : am not..

him : you moving in with me??

me : yes...

he jumped up and picked me up throwing me on the bed..

him : thank you mamas, i love you..

me : i love you too...

he leaned in to kiss me.. mind you he is laying slightly ontop of me..

his lips touched mine and he rotated.. then shortly he pulled out..

him : dont worry i wont make you feel things...

i smiled at him then we went to go fetch my stuff...

[12/13, 21:32] Zoaness: 48

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

- .
- .
- .
- .

****16 months later*****

****nompilo****

its been a very long matric year..

so a little update, my mom, dad, nonhlanhla and mbali are living here in port elizabeth with us but they live a few blocks away from us..bongani stays alone in an apartment further away....so now i stay with siya alone, no more full house...

as for the weight gain process, its going great.. actually i gained weight yes.. but its nothing massive.. i didnt grow massive bums, boobs and hips... i dont have abs.. noooooooooo...

my boobs are a little grown, they no longer teabags, they lemons now.. as for my bum.. its noomore flat..i have a some fatcakes
now...yahhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhh

my tights fit as tights now, they nomore look like trackpants... i must say i have really gained...

so siya and i gym together, we dont do anything heavy... 3 days a week we do hard workouts like lifting weights (sometimes i get lazy and back out).. 2 days a week is cardio.. so we do basic stuff because we planning on making this a lifestyle not a once off thing...

we eat nice healthy food during the week, then have a cheat 2 days on weekends... NICE...

so let me stop talking about my gains because i will never stop talking...

today i was writing my final paper... life science... we finished and i waited for siya outside.. i was with brenda and lucy.. we were shedding tears because we were not going to see each other again... others would come to us so that we can sign their shirts... so lisa, amanda and lizzy have come back to school but they redoing grade 11...

they did ask for forgiveness infront of the whole school so i forgave them and am moving forward...

siya came after sometime and i got in the car, he drove...

him : so was your final paper??

me : great, other learners were so crazy talking about going to drink and all that..

him : yah, they going to celebrate leaving school, if only they knew its only the begining of life...

me : yah, cant wait to see what life has for me..

we got to the house...

him : how about a treat out today??

me : yess, to celebrate me being officially done with school right??

him : exactly...

me : owk, let me go change..

i went and wore my jeans and a black sweater..(yes yall, siya and i recently just went shopping for a whole new whodrop)...

i came down..

him : ooou my girl looking fresh...

me : mxm... you look fresh too..

he had also went to change and he was looking fresh himself..

we got in a car and he drove to the restaurant...

we got in, orderd and ate...

him : so, mamas, you really ready for varsity life??

me : yah, cant be that bad hao

him : hay, people change when they get to varsity..

me : change?? how??

him : they just change nje, you know...

me : there is no such thing, wena you just dont want me to leave..

him : owk, true that, phela thats far and i dont want you to forget me..

me : i wont..

him : and those varsity boys, please stay away..

me : ncooooo, carying papas..

we laughed..

him : so, have you decided which university you going to choose, since 5 accepted you...

me : well, i was thinking wits, but UCT also is quite inviting, ohh and UFS.. but all in all i think UKZN...

him : and UP??

me : no..

him : then why did you apply there??

me : just to weigh my options..

him : how many universities did you apply to kanti??

me : 8.. 3 havnt responded..

him : which are??

me : UJ, stellenbosch and UNISA

him : owk...

me : dont worry, we still have 2 months together..

him : that 2 months already feels like 2 days..

we chilled and enjoyed ourself... then later we decided to leave... he paid the bill and we left..

we got back home really late...

him : i am tired...

me : same here.. i feel like just jumping in bed full kit..

he laughed..

him : watching any movies??

me : nop, am going straight to bed..

i went upstairs and he followed me... i was surprised to see siya following me when i got to the room..

me : and then wena, arnt you going to watch a movie kanti??

him : nop, i rather sleep, if you sleeping...

me : lol...

i went to change and wore my pjs, he was also in boxers alone... it was a hot day shame..

we got in the covers and started having pillow talks...

me : siya..

him : yes...

me : can i crack your mind on something??

him : owk...

me : if our parents never had arranged us to marry eachother, do you think we couldve met??

him : yah..

me : were??

him : at the reed dance... we never had it this time because i was arranged to marry you..

me : ohh, but i doubt you couldve picked me..

him : why do you say that??

me : i wouldnt have been your type..

him : owk, right.. mabye thats why god didnt make it possible for me to choose a wife by means of a reed dance..

we laughed..

he the turned and looked at me.. i also layed on my side and looked at him...

him : am actually glad that i was arranged to marry you.. you are a very kind girl, very different and i like that.. plus you have made me a better version of

myself.. thank you...

me : you have also made me a better version of myself.. thank you..

he smiled and held my cheeks, pirked my lips...

him : i so love you..

me : i love you to..

he came close, and i leaned forward to meet him halve way... he started out slow, he rotated.. his lips were soft, he was also gentle..

he held my weist tight, he brought his whole body close to mine.. the feeling came again, i was having butterflies, i was wet.. atleast i know whats going on, am wet... i then thought about the words of my mom again, "if he doesnt get satisfied by me, he will be satisfied by someone else." he then held my bum...

i was feeling different feelings at the same time, and i was decided that today i will satisfy him..

he then pressed my boobs, and played with them using his hands... the feeling became high... but our lips never departed..

he then took off my shirt and i was left with my
boobs...

then he started sucking my boobs like a little baby.. i
actually got confused alone because i never really
thought this happens.. i thought only babies suck
boobs.. but that brought a feeling as well... i was
high like i needed something...

then he pulled down my pants and i was left with my
panty.. he opened my legs and my heart was racing
but same time i was high in feelings.. my body would
lift itself off the bed now and again...

then he came back to kissing my neck.. ohhhhh my
word.. i was getting shivers, my lady down there was
pumping... he then stopped and looked at me.. his
eyes were so low like chinese eyes and red...

him : mamas, are you ready for this??

me : yes..

he then kissed my neck and went to whisper in my
ears..

him : you sure??

me : yes..

him : why do i have a feeling that you lying??

me : siya, you my husband, am done with school, so am ready, am serious...

him : owk.. i love you..

me : i love you more...

he then continued kissing my neck and played with my lady down while brushing it...

i would lift my back like am floating... he then slightly took my panty off and his boxers and underwear.. we were now both butt naked.. anytime now, i will be giving siya my all...

he came in between my leg and i could feel his man down there... i was scared but same time hype, and also nervous....

him : do you wanna do the honour??

me : huh!!

him : do you wanna do the honour of putting it in.??

me : me?? huh... owk..

me : ahhhh siya...

him : sorry...

his man down there got out of position... i then reached for it to position it right...

he picked my legs more higher... i just felt that trouble is coming...

him : am gonna make a once push owk, if you wanna scream do it, if you wanna pinch me do it owk..

me : why do i sense its going to be very painful..??

him : its going to be a once push.. fast and easy..

me : owk..

i grabed him with both my hands, and barried my head...

he pushed a little then shot himself in very fast and hard... i screamed like a maniac...

me : ahhhhhhhhhhhh, siya, siya, siya...

he then stayed in that position for few seconds.. it was in, i was feeling in, it was fully in.. the pain was unbearable, i had the blanket in my mouth, i was

biting it.. i ha one hand on siyas arm, pressing it like crazy.. i had my other hand grabing the sheets like crazy...

he then started moving in and out.. he started slowly, the pain was there.. its like i could push siya out... he moved in and out slowly...

i feel like my lady is torn, i feel like am gonna die...

after a moment he picks up the pace... he moves faster.. the pain is still there but it has gone down a little but its still there... but now the pain is mixed with some pleasure, its mixed with a feeling...

the feeling comes and i am grabing siya as he is moving very fast... i also get a moment of feeling and i start shaking like a shiver but it was like am releasing something.. then i become weak.. the next second he also pushes himself for few minutes and falls on me...

we stay like that for few seconds then he slightly takes his man down there out of my lady down there...

i buried my head in the blankets..

him : you owk..

i nod..

him : should i make you something to eat??

i say no using my head..

him : how you feeling??

me : am owk..

him : why you burring your head in the blankets??

me : just..

him : please look at me..

me : no..

him : please..

me : no, i want to sleep..

he gently pulls the blankets down and i put my hands on my face.. i guess i was feeling ashamed....

him : you dont have to feel shy mamas, its me siya...

me : i know

i could feel that the sheets are wet, but i thought it

was our sweat...

him : can i dress you up??

i nodded...

he got up and went to take my pjs to dress me up...

as he removed the blankets he spoke in worry

him : mamas, you bled alot of blood baby, was i really that big??

i didnt answer..

him : i will go run you a bath...

as he went to the bathroom i peeped an truely the sheets were full of blood... i wasnt alot of blood but it was like i had just started my periods.. but that wsnt my period blood becouse i just got off my periods 3 days ago...

he came and picked me up to take me in a bath... i still had my hands on my face..

i heard him chuckle..

him : owk, i will leave you to bath, since you wont show your face to me..

i heard him leave, I removed my hands and started bathing.. he then came unexpectedly and i quickly hid my face again..

him : sorry, i just came to give you a towel..

he left it on the tub and left.. i finished bathing.... the water was actually hurting my lady down there.. there would be sharp pains but bearable pains...

****siya****

i was feeling really bad to have to tear her so much... i took the sheets and took them to the washing machine and washed it.. then placed another sheet and did the blankets..

i went to give her, her pjs and still when she sees me she hides her face.. she must be feeling shy, but its ok, she will wake up ok tomorrow...

i laid in bed and waited for her.. she came back looking down and avoiding eye contact with me.. then she got in the sheets and buried her head on my chest.. i hugged her...

me : you really ok??

her : yes..

i brushed her hair.....

her : siya...

me : yes..

her : i love you..

my heart melted at that moment, i felt her love.. i even smiled..

me : i love you too.....

we laid and slept....

[12/13, 21:33] Zozaness: The villagegirl an the playboy: arranged marriage

49

.

.

.

.

.

- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .

****siya****

its early in the morning... well i woke up first so here i am watching mamas.. she looks so innocent, she looks so beautifull...

her dark skin, her eyebrows, her eyelashes, her nose, her ears, her lips her hair, her cheeks, and her neck.. i am just observing everything on her face...

i have been watching her for about 15 minutes now.. she moves and openes her eyes... she finds me looking at her and she smiles as she shys away...

today is the 18th of november.... her birthday....

her : siya.... (hides)

she closes her face with her hands.. i gently remove her hands and she allows me...

i lean in to kiss her.. i first kiss her forehead, her right cheek, her left cheek, her chin then i kiss her lips.. we kiss for a while.. then i pull out..

me : happy birthday mamas..

she smiled as she got shy...

her : thank you...

me : you finally 18...

her : yah.. am big hay..

me : mxm..

she laughed...

me : am i not gonna get an award??

her : for??

me : i must say you have become a great kisser...

she smiled and shyed away..

her : thanks to the teacher,...

me : mhm..(boasting)

she laughed...

her : so are not going to work today??

me : nop

her : why not??

me : i wanna spend your birthday with you.. plus i have something nice planned for you....

her : really??

me : yes...

her : what is it??

me : i cant tell you..

her : why??

me : its a surprise...

her : woooow...

we smiled an chilled alittle more..

see last year on her birthday we didnt really do much since we were still freshly from alot of confusion.. the moving out of her parents, siblings and bongani... plus the going back to school was also getting to

her.. so i just took her to a restaurant and we ate.. then i took her to the cinema.. that was about it.. i did buy her some things.. i bought her a nice perfume and some nice jewelry..

so this year i wanted it to be amazing...

i know you might be asking.. (what about matric dance?? did she go??) well yes she went.. and no, she didnt go with me, she went with her friends... i was only her driver...

so i dont know if you know, but nompilo, mbali and i share a birthday month.. shes of the 18th, mbali is of the 22nd and am of the 28th.. days apart.. we recently made a birthday party for nonhlanhla in october, it was so amazing shame...

after a while we woke up to freshen up so that we can go celebrate her birthday party....

when she walked i noticed that she was walking very differently..

me : mamas.

she looked at me..

me : why you walking like that??

her : how??

me : how you walking??

her : well, my lady is painful..

me : your lady??

she nodded.. then i coughed on..

me : ohhhhhhhh... really??

her : yes..

i went to her and hugged her..

me : am sorry..

her : its ok, maybe it would be ok after i bath..

me : ok..

we go brush our teeth.. after she left me washing my face to go fix the bed.. then as i shower she came to wash her face,....

when i was done, she went to shower...

when i was done i went to make breakfast..

she came down later.. and we had our breakfast...

so last week we had gone to buy some outfits for her birthday party... well she thinks we going to have a party like nonhlanhla, but actually we going to have her birthday at the rollerskater club... its a venue were there is a center were people skate and a small part were othere sit and watch or eat..

mamas has never been on a skater before and i would be honoured to be the first one to teach her...

so the theme is colourful colours.. so you wear anything colourfull...

so i had a red sweatpants and a shirt that had stripes and many colours on it.. she wore a green jean that looked like it was thrown paint (colourful) on it and the same shirt as mine.. she tied her hair in a bun.. and i had a fresh haircut..

so after breakfast we got in the car and went to the venue... ohh i forgot to mention, we had colour powder in snall tissue paper and we would throw it around after we have eaten the cake..

we got there and she was amazed..

her : is this were my birthday will be??

me : yes..

her : but i kind walk in those..

me : just hold on me..

we went in and as we got to the entrence we were given the skater shoes.. we put them on and started riding...

she actually fell down while trying to stand up.. i helped her up and held her as we skated to were her family was..

her : ma, baba, bongani, mbali, nonhlanhla.. they all here..

me : yep they all here...

we got to the family and they hugged one another.. kevin was holding mbali, sbongile was holding nonhlanhla.. they also couldnt skate..

sbongile : happy 18th birthday my baby...

her : thanks ma..

they hugged..

kevin : happy birthday my darling, finally a legal being now...

me : legal to vote not for other stuff..

we all laughed..

her : thanks dad..

she hugged her father..

bongani : hao mshana.. wazewakhula.. happy birthday..

her : thank you uncle..

they hugged...

nonhlanhla : happy birthday sisi

her : thank you nana..

they hugged...

she looked at mbali who was looking around and minding her business..

her : mbali!!

mbali : huh!!

her : do you have something to say to me??

mbali : happy birthday sisi...

her : thank you mbali..

they hugged..

mbali is drama on its own, i have studied her..

nompilo

there were alot of people there.. my friends from school and i know siya asked brenda or lucy to invite some of my school mates... and some neighbors of ours and my family..

i was having a great day.. siya was here teaching me how to skate.. he would hold my hand and let me balance with him..

we even had a fun skate race.. mom had nonhlanhla on her back, dad had mbali and siya had me.. they had to skate around the circle 2wice with us on their backs.. bongani yena complained of his back being sore.. so we made him the judge..

well we came second.. dad and mbali came first.. and mom and nonhlanhla came last, thats because mom would drop nonhlanhla now and again because

of laughing too much..

dad : hay we win...

me : come on dad, thats because you had mbali, she doesnt have weight and you strong...

dad : siya is also strong...

siya : hai baba, my strenght retired..

they laughed..

mom : nonhlanhla is heavy jho..

dad : haaaa my honey bun, wena you just lazy nje...

mom : no, it was one woman against 2 men, very unfair...

we were sitting on the table now and had orderd..

dad, bongani and siya had some alcohol, as for us we had some juice and some food...

the food was nice shame, very nice.. i then started a topic to see their reaction...

me : well since am 18 now, am i allowed to drink??

siya and dad choked on what they were drinking..

mom looked at me... bongani choked on food...

mbali : you drinking moss already, you drinking juice..

me : i mean alcohol..

mbali : ohhh

she then wenty back to eating.. nonhlanhla was also minding her business..

me : well??

dad : i know am supposed to say no, but am gonna be honest and say, just dont overdo it..

saying this she looked at my mom....

bongani : i agree with your father...

mom : no..

she said this looking at my dad...

siya : owk owk...

i saw they were getting tense...so i broke the ice..

me : am just kidding, why yall suddenly got personal??
am not drinking mina...

they all took out sighs and continued drinking...

we then went again and this time they sang for me.. i cut the cake.. it was big... after cutting it.. they brought more already cutted cake so that everyone can get.. then they told everyone can come take..

we started with family then everyone else came.. after eating and when the cake was finished.. i couldnt find siya..

as i was looking around i felt something hit my shoulders, i looked to were it came from, it was siya.. he has hit me with a colour powder.. in just a blink more came in..

i couldnt skate so i couldnt run.. dad came to my rescue, he put me on his back and skated with me to were mom was.. there was a bukget there filled with those balls.. i took as many as i can and told dad to take me to siya..

we sneaked to him and i cought him.. he started skating away but we skated behind him throwing him with the balls.. he stopped and threw some at us.. dad slipped and we both fell.. well we were not hurt and we were laughing..

siya came to help us up...

we went to stand on the side as we watched the powder being thrown around.. then as people threw powder, a romantic song played..

siya : may i have this dance??

me : i cant dance (wisper)

siya : doesnt matter..

me : oek..

we skated there, with me balancing with siya so that i wouldnt fall.. we slow danced.. i saw mom and dad dancing too.. bongani was dancing with nonhlanhla and mbali...

as we danced we locked eyes and leaned to kiss.. as always he starts slow...

few minutes in we were hit by a colour powder, we checked who it was and it was mbali and nonhlanhla.. when they saw that we looking mbali placed her hands on her eyes, nonhlanhla placed her hands on her mouth.. and bongani shruk his shoulders...

we laughed ...

i really had a great day...

[12/13, 21:34] Zoaness: 50

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

nompilo

its 10am, and i just woke up... well since am done with my exams, i dont have much to do...

siya left for work long ago and i am here with mamzondo...

i get up, make my bed, clean my room, brush my teeth, freshen up, get dressed and head down to the kitchen...

i find mamzondo catching her tea break...

me : hay mamzondo..

her : hay nompilo, how are you??

me : am fine thanks and you??

her : am also fine..

me : hows everything back home??

her : hai, nothing much nana, just kids messing with my head..

me : school??

her : besides school.. growing up..

me : ncooooo, kuzolunga ma..

her : as'thembe njalo...

i went to pour a glass of water to drink...

her : mhm, i almost forgot, siya left food for you in the microwave, you might need to warm it up am sure its cold now..

me : ohh thanks ma..'

her : siya is a great guy, keep him close...

me : he really is a very good guy..

her : i know its not my place to say this but i have seen how he looks at you, talks to you, plays with you, holds you and how he treats you and takes care of you... he truely loves you... man like that are rare to find...

me : thank you ma...

her : my pleasure baby,... let me get back to work before i get extra lazy..

we laughed, then she went upstairs...and i attended my food..

ncoooo he has made me some nice breakfast.. i warmed it... poured juice and went to the dinning room to eat, alone...

after.. i went out to chill at the park, since its 10

minutes away...

so i looked for mamzondo to inform her..i found her in one of the guestrooms..

me : mamzondo..

her : yes nana...??

me :i am going to the park to just relax, will you be owk??

her : oh yes, i will be fine.. you can go but please take care of yourself...

me : owk ma...

i left and went to the park....

as i got there, i went to sit at one of the benches...

i was looking at the beautiful people, the fresh green trees, the children laughing and playing around... i must say, everyday is playday at this park... i have never seen a dull afternoon...

i have been sitting there for about few minutes...

then a guy came to join me...

him : hi..

me : hay.

him : how are you??

me : am fine and yourself??

him : am fine... may i join you??

me : yah sure..

him : thank you... anyway my name is lucky

me : oh, am nompilo

him : beautiful name...

me : thank you..

him : new around??

me : its actually my 2nd year being in this place..

him : ohh well, i hope you enjoying it.

me : well yah, i havent really got to see the place because i have been always in the house, focusing on my books, but since am done with school, i will surely take a good look at this place...

him : so were you from??

me : kzn...

him : mhm, nice, am sure you miss the beach...

me : me?? noo, i have never been at the beach, i lived at the village..

him : ohh owk... so were do you live now??

me : not far from here...

him : ohh, i also live close by.. about 10-15 minutes away from here

me : oh owk...

him : i must say, i like your hair, and your eyes, that colour really suits you, i sometimes see girls walking around with blue contacts, like it doesnt even suit them.. but hay, when we try to tell them to help them, they go crazy..lol...

me : am not wearing contacts...

him : sorry??

me : i said am not wearing contacts.. these are my real eyes, i was born like this.. its a defeact i was born with..

him : ohh, and the hair??

me : also my hair...

him : wait, you zulu right??

me : yes..

him : with this type of hair??

me : yes, well, my mom is zulu but my dad is coloured..

him : ohhh, makes sense...

me : yah..

him : not to be forward.. but, i see you have a ring on the engaged hand... are you??

me : yes...

him : you look very young to be engaged... do you mind if i ask how old you are??

me : not at all... am 18..

him : WHAT???? thats way too young to be settling down.. you got a whole life ahead of you...

me : well it was an arranged marriage..

him : so you were forced to marry him??

me : yah.. but we grew inlove..

him : for how long??

me : 2 years..

him : ohh, well cant say anything hai...

me : yah..

him : ohh, so you engaged??

me : lol.... engaged and married...

him : huh??

me : traditionally am married because he has already paid lobola for me.. but, we have not made a wedding..

him : ohh, snap, that means am late...

me : lol... right...

him : he is so lucky to have such a kind, lovely, humble wife like you...

me : thanks, but actually am lucky to have him...

him : yah... so how hold is he??

me : 26 going to 27...

him : 9 year gab.... woowoow...

me : yah...

him : like you seriously love this person, you not just saying it because you forced to say it??

me : no, i genuinly love him

him : oh owk..

me : yah.. listen i have to go now, am sure siya is already home...

him : oh owk, well i guess i will see you around..

me : yah, sure...

i stood up and went back home..

i got in and realised that mamzondo has left... she left the note saying that she has left and that she has left the keys under the carpet... we all have our own keys.. but i hardly use mine because am always in and out with siya and we use his.. but today i had mine...

i then made spagetthi and mince for lunch..

later i heard the car come in.. siya is back...

after a while he comes in the house and i run to him and hug him...

me : good afternoon

him : good afternoon..

we kiss and he starts getting deep...

me : wooo papas, am cooking...

him : let them burn...

he continues kissing my neck..

me : then i should cook start again?? no thank you...

him : i hate those pots...

me : lol.. let me go run you a bath owk then i will give you a killer massage.. hows the sound of that??

him : not so bad...

i kissed his cheek, took his briefcase, jacket and shoes to our room... i ran him a bath.. placed all his stuff in order, then brought him a pair of slippers

me : there you go, all done...

him : i have been calling you but you were not picking up, why??

me : sorry after your bath.. now go before your bath becomes cold...

him : owk.. thank you..

he kissed my forehead, my cheek then my lips... he actually started a french kiss and everytime he french kisses me, feelings takeover and am not trying to be weak right now, am cooking...'

me : please go before you start something i cant handle..

him : something you cant handle?? lol.. mamas mara..

me : phela am cooking.. so please save your energy for later...

him : ohhh i like the sound of that... first the bath then the massage then the mistry...

me : uyaphapha wena..

we laughed and he went to take his bath

[12/13, 21:35] Zozaness: The villagegirl an the
playboy: arranged marriage

continuation

*****NOMPILO*****

after cooking, i went to chill in the living room,
watching soapies...

after some time, siya came down wearing his sweat
short, long socks and slippers.. he had no shirt on...

me : ooooo, you love showing off neh??

him : hao mamas, if i dont show off now, when will i
show off?? phela when i am old it wont be a
pleaseant view....

me : hahahahaha.. yah right...

him : i came to fetch you...

me : for.??

him : my massage hao..

me : ohhh, owk, lets go...

he led the way busy dragging his feet...

me : can you pick up your feet...

him : nop, i want the neighbours to know that am wearing slippers...

i died with laughter.. hai, what a husband i have....

we got to the room.. he then threw himself on the bed laying on his stomach... then he played music with his phone...

i got hold of lotion and sat on his bum...

i put a little of the lotion on my hand and rub it on his back, then start massaging him....

we were busy talking about random things when i remembered that his birthday is coming real soon and i still have no idea what to get for him or do for him...

i was thinking of buying him some sweatpants, sweaters, sneakers, caps, binnies or some casual jackets.. but also i was thinking some suits, watch, something fancy... but again, on my birthday he did something that i never had before.. like i have never skated before and he made my first time skating to

be special so i want it to also be that special...

whait!!! siya has never had an outing.. like before, when i first went to live with him at his fathers palace, he was a player and spent most of his time going out partying and dancing with girls, and now that hes not that kind anymore he is burying himself in work... so for his birthday we could do something new...

but then i need to dig out that info from him without him knowing what am playing... ohhhhh, his fears!!!!

i finished massaging him... i took the lotion back and came to lay with him in bed..

me : papas..

him : yes??

me : lets play a game..

him : what game??

me : Q and A

him : Q and A?? you ask questions and i answer??

me : yes, but we both get to ask 5 questions each

about each other, and no lies...

him : owk...

me : owk, i will go first..

him : owk, cool...

me : 1st question what are you most afraid of??

him : how??

me : like, for example, am afraid of heights..

him : ohhhh... well...i am afraid of anything that moves in water... so i avoid being in water, because i always think that something is inside...

me : really?? is that why you never go to the pool?? cause whenever its too hot, you just prefare to chill outside on the chairs, not swim..

him : yah..

me : but theres nothing in the pool..

him : we never know...

me : then why buy a house with a pool if you are afraid of deep, broad water??

him : it was the only house near my workplace...

me : mhm.. owk... is that all??

him : i fear trains, cant be next to them..

me : serious??

him : yah...

me : oh owk, 2nd question, what do you like doing??

him : like doing??

me : like things you wish to do..

him : i always wanted to travel around in a train, you know, break my fear... but i have never accomplished that.. am just soooooo scared of even being close to a train, like my heart beats to the core... i wanna travel on a ship on day, i wanna travel by aeroplane and i would also want to explore the world... i love adventurous activities like, sky diving, mountain climbing, mountain bicking, cycling, bungy jumping, bridgeclimbing, rock climbing, sky swinging, exploring the outdoors, skiing and many more...

me : ooooouuuuuuuu, i dont know halve of what that is but hay.. good one...

him : lol.. oneday you will know..

me : owk 3rd question, whats your favourit colour??

him : colours!! blue, black and grey and white...

me : nice.... but dont you have the one you love most??

him : black..

me : oh owk... 4th question, do you prefer casual or formal??

him : casual...

me : owk last question.. you are 26, why didnt you do all those jumping, mountain stuff??

him : i never really had time.. plus, when i did have time i never had someone to go with me.. i mean all the girls i met, they only enjoy shopping, patying and going to restaurants.. there was never one that was willing to do any activities, now that am with you and i dont party much or be around girls, i spend my time working or here with you...

me : oh owk..

him : owk, my time to ask you questions...

me : shoot...

him : 1st, do you like any adventurous activities??

me : the adventurous activities are those that you said you liked, right??

him : yah..

me : the mauntain what what??

him : lol... yes..

me : well nop.. none

well i was putting my surprise plan in motion... very fast thinker hay...

him : not even 1??

me : no... you on your own there..

him : ouch, so no adventurous activity goal with my wife... that hurts...anyway 2nd... what are your fears??

me : i am afraid of heights, flying, ballons and firecrackers..

him : ballons?? firecrackers??

me : well i get scared when i go close to a ballon, i can even cry.. i get too afraid that mabye it might pop... and firecrackers, i can handle them once they are on the air popping.. but i dont want a firecracker to be light up next to me.. i always have that feeling that it might just shoot on me...

him : ohh owk... gwala lam... 3rd... do you wish to travel the world..??

me : yes, but since i have fear of flying i think that would be difficult..

him : jho.. i really got an opposit person then me...jho...

me : yah.. but even though we are really different, we complete eachother.. who knows mabye we will help eachother face eachothers fears...

him : you think??

me : we different for a reason..

him : smart... mhm.. mamas...**smiles**.... 4th question... what do you like doing??

me : well i have seen sports being played on tv and i

really liked netball and i wanna learn it and be in a team... and thats just about it..

him : you dont like swimming, dancing, racing non of that??

me : i grew up in the villages, not vegas..

him : ***laughs** uyaphapha kanti??

me : mxm **laughs**

him : owk mrs vegas.. last question.. whats your dream destination??

me : india..

him : why??

me : thats your 6th question..

him : hai mamas, am just curious why india out of all...

me : why not india??

him : just please tell me why..

me : well i love indian movies and my favourit actors and actress' are shahrukh khan, akshay kumar,

deepika padukone, alia bhatt and many more..

him : you even know their names?? ****shocked**** i just hope i dont get a stina from an indian man hay..

we laughed...

me : mxm..

we then spoke about places to go to one day and all that sort...

i think i have figured out what am going to do for him on his birthday.. he gave me ideas.. but question is, were to get the money.. i mean i fully depend on him...

hayyyyyyyyyy, i could ask my parents right?? or uncle bongani?? i mean they are handling mkhulus business so am sure they wont mind sparing a few rands for me right??

mhm... i need to think hard and fast...

[12/13, 21:36] Zozaness: The villagegirl an the playboy: arranged marriage

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

****nompilo****

it is siyas birthday and i on the other hand, am nervous... so i thought of a plan and got bongani, my mom, dad and my siblings in the plan..

well since he did something for me that i had not done before, am going to help him fight his fears and also do something he always wanted to do all in one go...

so we are going to first go horse riding.. i know i havnt been on a horse before and as its siyas first time doing the ride, its also my first time.. plus we wont really stress because there are coaches there who will help us...

then after we going to have a waterfront cruise tour... yes yall.. so since siya is afraid of water we are going to try and ease his fear... we wont push hard but we will try to get him to atleast move around water in the boat as we explore the beauty of port elizabeth..

then lastly we get a cab back home and thats were everyone will be.. as he comes the party then starts... (the party was not my idea, it was bonganis idea...)

i know you probably asking.. "nompilo were did you get so much money??" well it wasnt much money.. and bongani, my mom, dad, chief and siyas mom

contributed to pay for all of these.. i didnt speak to the chief or his wife.. bongani did... and they said they would be here at the party, but they wont stay.. they will only come to wish their son a happy 28 and thats it, then they will go back...

and all these activities were found bu bongani, i just told him what siya want to do one day and he searched around and booked for us.. he went to pay and brought the tickets to me.. i couldnt go because it wouldve been suspicious and siyas surprise would be ruined...

so today its his birthday,.. its 7am in the morning.. we got a booking for 9am to 12pm.. he made my job easy by not going to work becouse he wanted to stay indoors with me today for his birthday....

i woke him up...

me : siya!! siyaaaaaaaa!! wake up.. siyaaaaa...

well i had no idea how to wake him up.. phela i need to get him to be freshed by 8am so that we can leave and its already past 7am..

him : i dont think this is how you suppose to wake

me up on my birthday... (still sleeping)

me : yes it is..... now get up...

he was still closing his eyes and laying not showing any sign of getting up.. so i sat up and pulled his hand to make him get up.. but his whole weight was laying and i couldnt get him up by pulling him up.. so i lay on him and started kissing all over his face...

him : mamas, mamas.. woohhh.. mamas mahn... morning kisses are supposed to be romantic...

me : says who??

him : the municipality of romance..

me : (churckle) and let me guess, you are the municipality??

him : ugggggggggg!!! wrong..

me : then who is??

him : romeo...

me : romeo??

him : juliets boyfriend...

me : lol.. oho... siya just go freshen up too

him : its wayyyyyyy still early..

me : no its late... we need to leave by 8am..

him : going were??

me : huh!! bonganis house...

him : for?? i thought i was spending today with you alone...

me : mabye later but he has a present for you and i need to get you there before 9am...

him : this doesnt make sense... but owk, i will go freshen up..

me : great...

as he went in the shower i went in the bath.. dont mind us, am just avoiding long hours of being in the shower.. yes most of the times i shower with him, we end up taking hours doing stuff...(cleared throat)...

we finished, lotioned and got dressed... bongani got us a personal all day driver to pick us from home to

the sardinia bay nature reserve, then from there to the waterfront and from there back home...

after a while while we were having breakfast my phone opened and i saw a notification.. ohhh its a notification from our driver.. hes outside..

me : siya, the driver is here...

him : what driver, i can drive, and i have my own car..

me : you cant be driving on your birthday, let your hands relax and be treated...

him : oh.. owk...

we hurried, got out, locked all gates and went in the car... we greeted the driver and off we went...

****siya****

so here we are in this car.. we going to bonganis house...

as yall know its my birthday today and i think i know what mamas and bongani are up to...

so nompilo gets me to bonganis house to "fetch a birthday present" but actually am going to get a

"SURPRISE" from everyone i know.. from family, friends to mabye colleagues... then we going to have a party...

see i am aware of what might happen.. but then i will act surprised... i must say she really went out for my birthday.. i thought she wouldnt do anything since she doesnt have any income.. plus she has never taken the cards to shop....

as i was sitting in the car, i notice that the car is not taking the route of bonganis house, its taking a complete drive...

owk, now am lost...

me : mamas, does the driver know were he is going??

her : yes...

me : you sure??

her : 100%

me : oh owk...

she smiled and looked out the window.. i then also faced my window and took a good look at how port elizabeth really was...

it was really beautiful, its a pity i am always busy with work stuff to explore this wonderful place...

besides i cant really do all those adventurous activities i always wanted because my wife doesnt like that.. and i cant do all that alone.. i would but it would be more fun wen doing it with a best friend or loved one... but hay, one day is one day...

after a while we enter a huge farm wise place and as we drove further in, i saw people on horses riding from one point to another... what a great experience.. but what are we doing here...??

me : what are we doing here??

her : our first destination...

me : you mean we get to ride the horses?? (surprised)

her : yes..

me : mamas, mamas.. dont play like that..

her : am not playing..

i looked at her surprised as ever....

me : i thought you dont like adventurous activities??

her : i was just joking, i just didnt want you to ruin your birthday surprise..

me : ohhhhhhhh...

i kissed her and hugged her tight... the car parked and we got out.. we were then attenderd by one of the assistance there and she took us to a room were we would change to their clothing to be safe and comfortable...

then we went through instruction and being showed around.. i was listening but mostly i just couldnt wait to be on that horse...

the assistance finished and we were taken to another assistances.. the male assistance helped me out becouse it was my first time being on the horse, not mentioning riding a horse... and the female assistance was with nompilo...

we were there, being tought how to indicate to the horse to go and how to indicate to the horse to stop... we had a great time there.. i really enjoyed myself to the fullest.. our last hour i was riding the horse.. not fast though, but little by little..

then lastly nompilo and i rode our horses round the block together.. we were busy talking and laughing.. and our horses were just slowly jogging...

around 12:20pm we were back in the car.. we said our goodbyes and left...

me : woow mamas, what a birthday surprise...

her : you deserve it..

me : how did you manage??

her : ask no question just enjoy...

i layed back and gave a sigh....

me : so, were to next??

her : huh??

me : you said this was our first destination...

her : OH, well wait and see..

we drove...

as we were going, i saw the waterfront.. she must be kidding.. i told her that am afraid of deep, broad water and she brings me here...

me : i hope by all means we not going there..
(pointing at the place)..

her : we are..

the car parked and i didnt move..

her : siya, come..

me : nop, am comfortable here....

her : please..

i stared at her and got out.. we then went to a boat
that was next to the waters..

we greeted him and i stood my distance..

i looked at the water, i swear i think i saw a fish..
what if there are there vele?? am not going in there..
boat or no boat..

i stood there as nompilo hands our tickets..then
nompilo came to me..

her : its time siya.. you always told me that fear will
always haunt me if i dont fight it.. so now its time to
fight your fears..

me : not happening...

her : you not alone, you with me..

am listening and responding to nompilo, but my eyes are fixed to the water.. the small waves, my heart is also racing.. i feel like i wanna run away but my feet are heavy..

me : you dont get it mamas.. i cant..

her : you cant or you wont??

i looked at her and looked back at the waters without saying a word...

her : papas...

she comes infront of me and holds my face to look at her...

her : fear will not win.. i got you...

i feel like her words are easing my heart and relaxing my body from running away... i nod...

her : we will go to the boat, you will get dressed... we will go.. i will hold your hand, whenever you feel scared just squeeze my hand and look in my eyes..
owk..??

i nodded and we went to the boat..

the closer and closer i went towards the water my heart would pick up pace again...

i have never felt so scared in a while.. the last time i was this scared was when my aunt took me to the pool when i was 8...

i got to the boat and my eyes was just fixed at the water...

nompilo kept holding my hand and brushing it.. her touch kept me strong..

after i got in my safety kit the boat got further away from the land...

now i was surrounded by water.. water filled with fish.. maybe sharks, whales and all that..

as we were still going.. i let go of nompilos hand and told the guider to turn back.. i was now panicking and shaking.. fear has taken over..

me : sir, please turn back..

him : sir I...

me : NOW!!

nompilo came to me and held my face making our foreheads touch each other... she took my hand and placed it on her chest.. i felt her heart, it was racing, it was beating hard, shes also scared.. but then if shes scared then why is she doing it...??

with still our foreheads together, a conversation begun..

me : if you scared, why do you continue to do it??

her : a wise men once said, "if you dont fight the fear it will haunt you forever".. i dont want this fear to haunt me so am fighting it...

i was the one who said that to her months ago.. its time to really believe and live my own words..

i breathed and she held my hands..

i took my head out of the thought of whats in the water and focused on seeing the beauty of port elizabeth... my heart relaxed, my body relaxed my pressure went down.. i was now calmed down...

i looked at the skies, i closed my eyes and took a

deep breath.. then i opened my eyes and smiled.. i then slowly placed my hand in the water.. i saw some fishes under but they were minding their own business.. when i first saw them i got scared but nompilo touch was still there.. so i relaxed.....

then the boat turned around and we got to the land...

when we got there i took off my kit and went to lay on the sand and faced up....

nompilo came to join after she took off her kit..

her : you ok??

me : am amazing.. being in that boat i felt like anything could happen, i was full of fear, i felt like dying.. but your words, your touch made me at ease.. thank you..

her : you are stronger than you think.. you just took a step into fighting the battle of fear... dont give up..

i kept quiet and let the words recess in my mind...

i never had a girl that helped me challenge my fears that encouraged me to go against my fears.. i never

had a girl with such a mindset that nompilo has...

i have never thought that i would actually be this close to water... I NEVER THOUGHT.....

i was looking at the sky and tears just flowed on their own..

her : papas?? you owk??

me : dont worry, am not crying, its tears of joy... i just never thought this day would come..

her : i love you..

me : i love you more.. can we stay here a little more??

her : sure..

we layed like that for a while, in silence... no words, no laughs.. just us looking at the sky and thinking..

after a while we went back to the car.. we spent almost 30 minutes in silence but it felt like we had a very nice conversation.. lol.. crazy right...

we got to the car and all i felt was joy.. in all my birthdays this is the most joyful, happiest and loving birthday ever.. i love being 28 already....

we got home.. we bid goodbye to the driver and went in...

as we have got in and closed the door the lights went on and everyone shouted "SURPRISE"..

i was really surprised.. my mom, dad and my aunts (dads other wifes) sisters, and sisters from my aunts, nompilos parents, nonhlanhla, mbali, bongani and some of my colleagues.....

me : everyone is here.. even dad...

yes i was most surprised that dad is here...

what a birthday..

i looked at nompilo wondering how they got in.. she smiled as to admit that she gave bongani her keys... ohh and mamzondo was there with her kids.. for the first time i get to see mamzondos kids.. its 2 boys... am sure they are nonhlanhlas age if not older..

i enjoyed my birthday and all was well..

i did figure out that all this was paid for by my parents and her parents and bongani.. i did ask why she didnt take money from the card.. she said " were

did you see shopryte stocking from itself".. her words not mine....

but hay,.. nompilo really made my birthday very extra special....

[12/13, 21:37] Zozaness: The villagegirl an the playboy: arranged marriage

52

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

****nompilo****

its january, the day of the results..... so in november i sent a late application to nelson mandela university.. the application closed september but they took our application and we paid a late application fee....

i applied there because siya was not comfortable about having me go to another province...

i was woken up by siya jumping on the bed, busy singing jaiva pez'kombede...

him : jaiva pez'kombede, jaiva pez'kombede, ao k'vuku muntu hay wena, k'vuku muntu hay wena... (repeat)...

me : siya maneeeeeee...

him : guess who got the newspaper to your results??

i looked at him and became freshly awake..

me : did i pass??

him : well, yes you passed, but...

me : but what??

him : you got a high certificate pass.. no

distinctions...

i slowly got dissapointed but then i saw siya trying to not laugh..

me : papas, quite playing..

he laughed...

him : you couldve seen your face...

me : mara siya...

him : am sorry, am sorry mamas, am sorry...

me : can i see..

him : say please..

me : please..

him : pretty please...

me : pretty please..

him : please please..

me : hai siya manee...

i started hitting him with the pillow..

him : owk, owk.. here...

i took the paper and searched for my name...

i looked and looked and yay..... I PASSED....

i got 7 distinctions...physical science, life science, accounting, maths, LO, english and business studies.....

i was doing 10 subjects.. the remaining subject were zulu, economics and geography...

i was so over the moon.. i got up and jumped up and down shouting..

me : i got 7 distinctions, i got 7 distinctions....

him : oh please, you bragging about getting 7 distinctions, i got also got a wife who passed with 7 distinctions..

i looked at him and hit him on the shoulder...

him : ouch.,.... truth hurts ha??

me : mxm...

him : so why dont we freshen up and we can go celebrate??

me : a picnic...

him : oh owk.. a picnic..

me : great...lets go..

so we got in the shower... i first washed his back, then played with his butt while he twerked.. i tell you guys.. siya is just crazy nje... then he says i make him look gay.... then he washed my back and said i should twerk.... i was not in no mood to twerk because i cant...so i did the tsipa tsipa... he laughed so much that he almost slip and fell...

him : wena hai.. mamas... hai...

he continued washing my back then he turned me and started washing my front.. well i was already aware were this would lead...

he then lifted up my chin and we locked eyes.. he leaned in and we kissed.. slowly he rotated.. then he came close and started holding my waist more tighter.. then he moved down to my bum then up to my waist.. then as things heated.. he lifted me up and i wrapt my legs around his waist..

i was hungry for him... i wanted him in...

then finally he went.. i felt pleasure... with the shower spilling water like rain on us.. warm rain and the pleasure high.. just makes this session very much amazing... he placed me against the wall.. it was cold so i arched my back.. he paced up and up and the pleasure just builded up...

then after a while of pleasure i came and he followed...

then we showered and got done.. we dried ourself, lotioned and got dressed....

i went to pack some food and snacks in a basket...

we wrapt up everything and left to go to the park.. we locked and off we went....

as we got to the park we placed a blanket on the floor under a tree.. then we unpacked the blanket and sat down.....

him : its really a nice day today huh?

me : yah it is..

we started enjoying the day laughing and having fun.... eating and being marry...

him : so have you decided which varsity you going to??

me : yah.. 1st option is NMU.. if it rejects because of late application i am going to uj....

him : so far?? why not ukzn atleast...??

me : come on i will visit every june and december.. besides even if i stay here and study in NMU i am still going to stay at school...

him : why?? you do remember you married right??

me : owk owk.. i will see, we will talk about this when we get home can we just focus on this celebration first...

him : owk...

we chilled more and had fun...

[12/13, 21:37] Zozaness: The villagegirl an the playboy: arranged marriage

53 (am not cheating am just tired.. So forgive me for the short insert)

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

****nompilo****

finally our wedding is in 3 weeks yall... so we have already done packing our clothing and packed them in the car... we going back to KZN..

my parents left the day before yesterday with my siblings.. phela we have one car and that is siyas car..

so today i am going down with bongani...

we got done and hit the rode...

him : am really gonna miss you...

me : i will miss you too, but hay its only 3 weeks..

him : 3 weeks its like 3 years..

bongani : hao, love birds.. did yall forget am here??

siya : mamas, whos talking?? i heard something..

me : i dont know, do you have someone locked up in the boot??

bongani : nidlalangam' ne??

him : did you hear that??

me : i did, theres a gost in the car...

then we both looked at bongani.. siya looked at him through the mirror and i looked back at him.. he acted angry and we laughed.. he ended up laughing with...

bongani : niyaphapha neh? wena nompilo u will be alone when we get to kzn, usiya uyakibo...

siya : grootman, ungalinge..

we all laughed...

bongani : i still cant believe you really changed siya..

me : i tried...

siya : wena ba'chinchu nini??

bongani : soon.. ungasabi...

we spoke more in this long ride.. but it didnt feel really long because these 2 were keeping me entertained...

we got home.. siya dropped us..

him : see you when i finally make you my wife.. openly..

me : will be missing you..

him : me 2..

me : i love you and please drive safe..

him : i love you 2.. and thank you...

i kissed him on his forehead, cheeks, chin and mouth...

me : papas i love you...

he kissed my forehead, cheeks, chin and mouth...

him : mamas i love you too..

we hugged and he left.. i was standing in the yard and waving...

after he left i sighed and went back in the house...

3 weeks later

it is my wedding date.. its very early in the morning and already am preparing...

i wore a full zulu attire that gogo made for me and placed in the hut...

after getting ready and all that.. we walked our way to the place more like a field that was near our place..

as we got there the boys were already there, dancing and singing.. the girls were also dancing and singing.. we made our way to our stand.. the boys danced.. then we danced. then our families danced..

then he moved towards me and placed something on my head and my wrist..

then he went back.. i went to him and placed the spear down next to him.. like stabbed the ground with the spear...

then everyone hulated and i moved back...

he danced and i danced.. then lastly we danced together...

the wedding went on..

i was happy, that finally i was actually marrying a guy that i loved...

i mean when i first saw siya i thought that my life would be miserable... i thought he would mistreat me my whole life...

i thought i was destined for failiar.. but here i am.. happy then ever, life complete...

siya brought my scarted family together... made me and nonhlanhla forgive our parents.. brought pieace to the family..

today i have a husband, a brother, a friend and my father sometimes and a teacher lol... all am saying is that he is my everything....

the wedding went we;;..

****siya****

the day finally comes.. she is now officially mrs xulu...

she has really made a huge difference in my life.. she changed me to a better me.. i wonder if our parents never arrainged me to marry her, were would i be today??

i dont think there was a lady in this entire worls fit enough to be my wife apart from nompilo...

shes different and unique..

i love her energy and the fact that i can be totally free with her..

i love her so much that i fear loosing her... now i

have never loved a girl that much...

i enjoyed the wedding, the food and seeing how beautiful nompilo looked...

****2 weeks****

well my parents asked that we stay for 2 more weeks exploring my grandfathers hut.. alot was found.. even letters he was always writing for all his grandkids.. even the ones that are not here..

siya does come to check on me but mostly he is also busy with his father...

i enjoyed myself.. being back home was relaxing...

but hey its also almost back to school... eash... varsity neh... konje i still need to have a whole conversation about that...

[12/13, 21:39] Zozaness: The villagegirl an the playboy: arranged marriage

54

.

.

- .
- .
- .
- .
- .

****nompilo****

its varsity orientation today and i am running up and down getting my things together.. am excited but same time am scared.. i wouldnt want to be bulied again...

so, we spoke with siya and he spoke to me, making me aware about the issues that i should consider before choosing a varsity... he was right, i am a married woman now, yes am only 18 but am married.. also i still need to be close to my parents to mend the gab that was created and also be around for my siblings...

so i am not a free teen, i have responsibilities...

so siya got me a driver who will take me to school and fetch me... yes, i got accepted at the nelson

mandela university for medicine.. yes i know that i wanted hospitality but i changed my mind...

the driver was outside waiting for me and mina am busy going up and down not knowing what am looking for...

siya : mamas, you going to be late, what you looking for??

me : i just want to be sure that i have everything...

him : well hurry, i also need to get going..

me : owk, 2 minutes..

i checked my things and got out..

me : bye papas..

him : bye mamas, enjoy your day..

me : you too...

we baby kissed and hugged then i went to the car... he went to take out his car..

as the driver drove, i was looking at the house... i was a little sad.. i didnt want to leave... but i was also excited and couldnt wait to get to school...

so today they are showing us around the school.. i think they going to be showing us part by part this whole week...

i got to school and saw that there were alot of people walking in.. like alot.. i immediatly got scared.. i had a jean, and a jacket that had a hoodie.. i tied my hair in a bun...

owk atleast i covered all my skin.. now i need to cover my face or look down...

i hesitated to go out..

driver : mrs xulu, are you owk??

me : am just a little scared...

him : no need to be scared.. just go there and be you.. thats it..

me : yah thats exactly whats making me scared.. i have always been myself and got bullied and hospitalised for it...

him : its all the past.. this time it will be different... these people look mature enough to know how to behave and know what beauty is...

me : thank you max, thank you so much...

i took a deep breath and walked out.. my heart was racing...

i placed the hoodie over my head and looked down, i had folded my jeans and showing my ankles.. so i unfolded my jean and covered my ankles.. i didnt want to show my skin, not even a bit of it... then placed my hands in my pockets..

i walked looking down slightly looking up to check were am walking...

as i got to were everyone was standing i also stood there and looked down...

later a lady came to talk to us... she greeted us, introduced herself and handed out papers.. it was like a map on it to show us were we are and were we are going and how big the school is.. she also said they would be splitting us into groups..

there was a girl standing on the side next to me with a group of learners.. she would say something then they would laugh...

i just thought they were talking about me.. i couldnt understand what she was saying because she was speaking another language i dont understand...

even when the lady was talking, she would just be there making jokes...

as the papers came they got to her.. she passed one to me and i pretended to not see the paper... then she tapped my shoulder..

my heart raced and i took my hand out and reached for the paper..

she passed on the and that was it.. as they continued laughing i thought they laughing at me, at my dark hand.. i just kept quite and looked down while listening...

then we got separated and i ended up with her in one group.. most of her friends went to other groups... there were alot of groups...

i walked still looking down not saying a word.. she tapped my shoulder.. i didnt know why becouse i didnt hear the lady talking about giving out papers.. i thought mabye its a mistake so i ignored it.. she

tapped again and this time i didnt have a choice but to look up to her...

i looked up to her and she changed her face from being curious to being shocked...

her : hello..

me : hay..

i looked down again...

she held my shoulder, i looked at her again??

her : u shap??

me : yah...

her : yanung why udula ushebile hatse??

i didnt know what she was saying so i decided i am just going to say yes..

me : yah...

her : no, i mean why you looking down??

me : ohh sorry, just..

her : no need to be afraid, i dont bite..

me : mhm..*smiles*

her : oh my manners.. my name is masabatha, but you can call me mase..

me : am nompilo...

her : ohh you zulu??

me : yes..

her : nna kemo tswana..

me : you tswana?

her : yes... so you dont understand setswana??

me : nop, not a bit..

her : i almost said you from outside southafrica..

me : oh...

her : so were you from??

me : kzn

her : so why didnt you go to ukzn??

me : am married and my husband stays here..

her : unyetse??

me : huh??

her : you married??

me : yes..

i showed my hand to her so that she can see the ring...

her : woow.. chesa mogal...

she then took my hoodie off my head..

her : umuntle kgure mogal, you look so beautiful.. indeed dark is beautiful..

me : thank you.... you also look beautiful...

her : keatsiba mogal, kele chisa nna...

i didnt understand that but i laughed because it sounded funny...

we spoke more and sometimes keep quite and listen..

after the orientation she took my hand and pulled me to her group of friends... they were standing outside..

her : bo lovie, bona kekopani lemang.. yo ke nompilo..nompilo these are my lovers.. its

nthabiseng, lerato, lebo and katlego..

me : hay..

they greeted me..

nthabiseng : so nompilo, uappliedse course efeng??

(what course did you apply for)

well i just heard apply and course so i guess she wants to know what course i applied for...

me : medicine..

lebo : ncoooo, rekaufela babe le mase... (we are together with mase)

mase : halekwe mutho, ke mozulu.. so its eaither zulu or english.. (she cant hear you this girl, shes zulu)

katlego : so rekamoseba akeserekwe?? (so we can gossibe about her, she wont hear us??)

mase : yes, mara lemosebe keleteng ketlale kgama, ke mogal waka oo.. (yes, but gossib when am here and i will strangle yall, shes my girl.)

nthabiseng : mxm..

i was just there trying to make sense of what they were saying but, no luck...

nthabiseng : owk, yena shes beautiful shem..

lebo : jwale why akentse dicontract?? (so why is she putting on contacts??)

katlego : nekere keyabutsa.. (i also wanted to know)

mase : mubutseng hao. (ask her then)

lebo : tse grey leteng, ale montsho so.. (grey ones even? And she's so dark)

mase : botsho bahae, bobotle, di contact tseo hadimotsabisi.. wena on the other hand, you need beauty tips, hubani lemakeup yapala.... (her darkness is beautifull, her contacts dont make her ugly.. you on the other hand need beauty tips, because even makeup failed you)

they laughed.... exept for lebo... she was just smiling...

i didnt know what they were saying but i heard contacts so they talking about my eyes...so they must be laughing at my eyes saying its contacts..

me : am not wearing contacts, these are my eyes..

katlego : umaka.. (u lying)

mase : serious??

me : yes.. its a defeact i got from birth..

lebo : ohhhh..

nthabiseng : waphapha lebo.. (you forward lebo)

me : and my hair is not fake.. my dad is coloured..

mase : so this is not a weave??

me : nop...

nthabiseng : haaaaaa...

katlego : can i see..

she came to check..

katlego : ene... (it is)

lebo : you one weired human being..

we all laughed....

so they did see my ring as we were talking and i had to tell them about siya.. they wanted to see him but i

just told them that they would one day..

they were actually shocked that i am married at 18...

i didnt really go into this being an arraigned married..
i just said we were friends, then we fell inlove and
now we married... end of story..

after a while my driver came.. we were standing at
the gate...

me : bye guys, see yall tomorrow, my driver is here...

mase : is it mr bae??

lebo : keyena?? (is it him?)

me : no, hes my driver..

they said owk and i went in the car waving goodbye..

driver : i see you made friends already..

me : yah, i guess you were right.. instead of bulling
me, they complimented me and were nice to me..

him : thats better...

me : but hay, they speak setswana and i dont
understand that language.. so most of the time i just

look at them when they speak to each other..

him ; you will learn, dont worry..

me : mase is the crazy one.. shes very talkative, free spirit and just speaks..

him : thats great, is she also your friend?/

me : yes...

we spoke as he took me home..

when i arrived, siya was still at work.. and mamzondo had just finished cleaning and wa just waiting for one of us to come back...

so the driver that i use is the same driver that brings mamzondo to work then take her back home...

me : hay ma..

her : ohh you back, how was it??

me : great, i even made friends..

her : on the first day? great..

me : yes..

her : i would like to know more, but max will kill me,

goodbye..

max is the driver... he was waiting outside..

me : bye ma...

i just went to my room washed my face, brushed my teeth and went down to make lunch...

i ate and watched tv..

[12/13, 21:40] Zoaness: 55

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

****nompilo****

this is the last lesson before lunch time... i share a

class with mase.... nthabiseng is in the same faculty with us but not in the same class... lebo is in the faculty of law.. katlego and lerato are in the commercial faculty....

we dont all meet everyday.. we only meet on fridays and chill at the tuckshop a street away... max already knows that monday - thursday he gets me at the gate, then friday he comes an hour later and gets me at the shop...

today is friday... and we in the last class before lunch.. mase doesnt like mrs kisha, she says shes too slow for her.. but i dont mind her.. i actually like her class..

we were then given classwork and the teacher left the class..

her : hoooo, its about time. kana mme o walapisa jho..

me : mhm.. (laughed) didnt know what she said but i know lapisa is tiring you.. she says that a lot and mogal is girl.. hay am learning...

her : so, you sure you dont want to come to our

house warming tomorrow??

me : no, i rather not..

her : what about todays trip??

me : still no..

her : well i respect your decision.. nna i need to make sure the driver comes and the guys also pull through...

me : seems you have everything undercontrol....

her : thats mase for you mogal....

the bell rang and we packed our books going to our blomspot...

we met nthabiseng there with 2 boys....

mase : lovy...

nthabi : ntwana..

they hugged..

me : hay..

nthabi : nompi

we hugged..

then we sat down on a big rock...

boy : hao, intro nyana..

mase : ohh, nompilo this is ma11.. ma11 this is nompilo..

ma11 : sho nompilo..

me : sho

we fist bumbed...

ma11 : owk bogal, lare dintsang ??

mase : rehotsi cab..

ma11 : owk, so how much is eash taking out??

nthabi : 150

ma11 : lebakae??

mase : can we stick to english or zulu please.. mogal haretlwe..

nthabi : mogal havai moss, so??

mase : still nthabiseng, kempinchi yarona e...

nthabi : yahao... nna kemotswana nna hakemzulu...

they are arguing, i dont know about what.. but mase looks pissed.. i wanna ask whats the problem but am scared..

mase : nthabiseng!!

nthabi : keng..??

ma11 : nthabiseng haoyeste shap..

she looked at them then at me..

nthabi : sorry kge.. ketlabuwa skguwa..

mase : good.. now ma11 you were saying??

ma11 : i was saying that how many are yall??

mase : girls we 5.. guys we not sure...

nthabi : minimum they are 4..

ma11 : owk.. so the money is 1500..

mase : yes..

ma11 : how much is the cab??

nthabi : 800.. thats becouse its not all night.. its from 2pm to 10pm...

ma11 : oh owk.. so we buy snacks for 200 and

alcohol for 500.??

mase : yah...

i was just there listening to them plan.. ma11 nmade calls to verify and then left and we had our lunch...

me : so you guys will be in the cab driving around from 2-10pm??

mase : yes.. we will be making stops at places like parks to dance and chill and drink and smoke.. but mostly we will be in the cab driving around.. we only have 2 or 3 stops...

me : oh owk... but is it a must to be with the guys??

mase : yes mogal.. phela once you hit the light we need some kissing and feeling loved..

me : lol...

nthabi : i mean you have a chance to go with us but hay, you married..

mase : hai nthabiseng..

i think nthabiseng doesnt like me, shes always so sour towards me.. but hay its owk...

the bell rang and we headed to class.. we only had 1 class after break but katlego and them had 2..

after the class we left and went to the shop.. then we bought some snacks and icecream and stood outside...

the rest came..

after a while a cab came... it was white..

it stoped and ma11 opened the door and got in.. the door was left open.. mase and i stayed out nthabiseng also went in..

they played music very loudly..

mase : there comes the rest but lebo is not there..

i looked and it was about 8 people there.. it was katlego, lerato and 6 guys...

mase : theres more guys..

i just kept quite.. i was now waiting for my transport to come...

they arrived and greeted then mase introduced me..

mase : owk guys, this is nompilo.. gal, this is sbu,

daddy, kenny, itu, kb, kg, bra k and siya..

me : nice to meet yall....

they all said the same thing going in the cab and some stayed outside.. they also asked about my eyes thinking its contacts, but mase explained to them and my hair.. they were shocked but got over it..

so let me tell yall something real quick.. everytime i had my ring people always asked if i was married.. sometimes i would say yes but sometimes mase would switch them off... so they told me that to avoid attention to myself i should always put my ring in my pocket when i enter the school and put it on when am in my transport..

well i didnt like the idea but i didnt like the attention as well.. and SIYA DOESNT KNOW....

i sat there with them as they smoke their pipe....

sbu : so nompilo you going??

me : huh, nop..

kb : why??

me : i dont drink, smoke and party.

sbu : serious??.

me : yah...

kb : just go with us and have fun.. we will take care of you..

daddy : kaniyekeni u nompilo tuu..

kb : hai suka wena daddy..

daddy : nompilo, kaobaxelele ukuba bakyeke..

i laughed..

we pushed a topic..

they were really nice people... like great people... am amazed.. a song goes on.. the guys start dancing, mase and them start also dancing...

as lebo came, my driver also came..

me : i will see yall guys.. my driver is here..

mase : bye mogal.. see you on tuesday..

me : lol, owk...

ma11 : serious uyavaya??

me : yes..

ma11 : ngiyakcela mfethu just today..

me : mabye next time...

daddy : hambe kahle negal.. hope to see you soon..

sbu : suka daddy... usile kanti..

daddy : hao, bendisho njena..

kb : bye nOMPI...

all the guys were busy about who would say bye last and whos bye will i find pleasing... siya even sang his bye through the window..

siya : byyyyyyyyyyeeeeeee

noooooooooommmmmppppppiiiiiiiiiiiiiioooooo..

everyone laughed i also laughed.. i got in the car and everyone waved goodbye... these guys are really crazy.....

i got home, entered the house and this time i found siya in the house..

me : hay babe...

him : hay mamas..how was school today??

me : great.. and work..??

him : awesome... hungry?? i made some toasted bread and scrambled eggs..

me : hay... but i just ate sweet stuff.. but i will have a little..

him : great now come here and give papa a.....

he was coming to me and i was taking off my bag..

him : were is your ring??

i froze and looked at him.. i looked at my hand and shucks i forgot to put my ring back home...

[12/13, 21:41] Zozaness: The villagegirl an the playboy: arranged marriage

continuation

.

.

.

.

.
. .
. .
. .

****nompilo****

me : its in my pocket

him : what is it doing in your pocket?? isnt it supposed to be on your finger??

me : yes it is...

him : so what is doing in your pocket??...

me : ahhhhhhhh, see... i.... my friends..... i mean.....
(clears throat)..

am stuck, i dont know what to say... my mind is not putting words together for me to say... am shivering, am blank.. what do i say?? if i tell him the truth he will say that i love my friends more then him... and if i lie?? eash, a lie futhi? i cant lie hes my husband... what to say??

him : so you not going to say anything??

me : ****(mouth attempting to talk but the voice and the words are no were to be found)****

him : nompilo teslyn xulu.....

am now scared, the fact that he called me with all my names just made me shiver more and made my heart beat faster.. i looked up in shock... he is getting angry.. hes looking at me.. hes still waiting for an answer..

am just standing there, not saying anything.. am very scared, i wanna tell him why, but his facial expression just stops my voice and words from coming out... am stuck...

him : is this who you have become??

me : siya!! i.... **swallowed**i can explain

him : am waiting??

me : it was a mistake, i was in class.. one of my classmates wanted to see my ring and they were asking alot of questions about my marriege.. so i showed her my hand, then she asked to fit it and see how it would look on her.. i took it off and borrowed

it to her.. she fitted it and admired her hand then gave it back.. but 2 seconds later the lecturer came in so i just slipped it in my pocket... thats how it got in my pocket.. i forgot to put it back on..

him : really??

he came me the facial expression that stated that he doent believe what am saying.. sorry i lied...

me : yes, really....

him : (churckles) nompilo, have you forgot that i know you...

me : but its true..

him : if you want to lie to me, get a proffesional lier to help you come up with something believable..
owk??

he walked away from me and headed to the living room.. i ran after him...

me : mara siya.....

him : i dont want to hear it nompilo... its only been 4 months in university and you already taking out rings at school... how long have you been doing it??

me : i havent b.....

him : how long??

i was standing there.. am in a corner now.. i need to tell the truth, i need to come clean.. he looks very angry, what if this makes him worse.. eash nompilo mara nawe....

i took a deep breath and looked down..

me : 2 months (wispering)

him : what??

me : (clears throat) 2 months..

him : 2.... (sigh and chuckles)... 2 months nompilo... 42 days..... nom.....

he turned away before finishing his sentence.. he goes to the living room.. i follow but this time i follow him slowly..

he walked in and kickes the coach and hit his fist on it... then he bend leaning on the coach with his arm on the couch and head on the arms.. i looked at him.. he stayed like that for a few minutes...

he then stood straight and looked at me... he came close to me and lifted my chin...

him : do you not love me??

the question cut deep.. i felt it... my heart teared up and i bled...

me : siya i.....

him : do you not appreciate me??

my tears were now threatening to come.. the pain that is in siyas eyes is unbearable.. i feel his pain... my blood is now pumping even more harder...

me : i do.....

him : are you ashamed of me??

my tear dropes down and i look down.. i quickly while my tear and he lifts my face up again...

him : if you so love me like you say you do, why lie??

me : i... i... was scared that if i told the truth you would say that i loved my friends more then you...

him : nahhh, you just wanted to be free right?? hide the fact that you married so that you can get all

those varsity guys attention...

me : no siya... i...

him : who knows how many you are dating..
probably 2 now....

me : siya...

him : do you love them...

me : siya..

him : do you love them (whispering in anger)

me : siya mahn (shouts in tears) i hide my ring
because i am trying to avoid attention and people
saying am trying to grab attention.. theres no guy am
entertaining, i promise..

he kept quite... he moved away from me and went to
sit down on the couch.. i stood there and didnt
move...

me : i am sorry.. i just couldnt stand the pressure...
plus my friends also said its better to hide the ring or
leave it at home.. its not like am hiding you..
everyone knows that i am married...

him : nompilo.. hiding your ring symbolises that you are ashamed of me... that you dont want people to know that you married.. you are giving all those guys a thought that you a free woman.. lastly you making these kids desrespect me.. when they see me walking with you tomorrow with the ring on, what they gonna say?? have you thought about that??

me : no, i didnt think about that...

him : what if i was the one hiding my ring whenever i go to work and say my colleagues are always looking at me and that am drawing attention to myself... would you like that??

i looked down.. indeed i would be angry.. i would think hes cheating..

him : nompilo, you not 16 anymore.. grow up..

he then switched the tv on and layed back to watch tv...

i was alittle by his final words... i then turned and went to the room...

i placed my bag on the bed..took out my takkies and

wore my slippers....

i then receive a call, its sbahle...

sbahle is also in my class but shes the nerdy type... shes from jhb and she lives in campares.. we work together and help each other with homeworks via whatsapp or video calls.. she has always warned me about this thing of taking my ring off but as stupid as i was i actually listened to lebo, lerato and katlego... sbahle is also fond of mase...

mase has 2 personalitie... she is wild and out but then when she is with sbahle and me, she becomes calm and focused... i like the fact that even though she parties and all, she still stays focused on her school work and doesnt loose herself...

i answer the call...

me : sbahle..

her : hay mpilo... how is your friday??

me : started out great but now its terrible..

her : i get you...lol.. so have you started with your assignment??

me : not yet, but am looking at it at this moment and thinking of attempting it, but my mind is not in great function...

her : whats wrong??

me : nothing i cant handle.. wena did you start??

her : well, i did the first question... i wanted us to do the second one together becouse am kinda lost...

me : let me tackle it and then i will get back to you..

her : do you need help with question 1??

me : if i do catch a problem, i will facetime you...

her : owk...

me : bye..

her : bye..

she hung up... we actually got the assignment today.. but sbahle and i just want to do it and finish and get it out the way.. mase waits till the last days but believe me she still passes it..

i try to really focuse and do this assignment but dololo my mind is really stuck... my thoughts are just

on siya and how i actually treated him.. i went down..
i went to him in the living room...

me : siya!!

he kept quite...

me : siya!!

still quiet..

i go to him and sit next to him.. he is still fixed on the
screen... no movement...

me : siya, please.. am trying to write my assignment
but i cant...

him : so?? **still looking at the screen**

me : i cant concertrate becouse you angry at me,
please forgive me..

he kept quite..

me : siya please..

he looks at me.. then he sits right and faces me..

him : i never believed you, nompilo, would do
anything like this..

me : am really sorry... i didnt know that it would
couse such harm, i thought it was an harmless act...

him : thats because you still wanna think like a baby
when you a grown up...

me : i guess i deserve that...

****he sigh**** (he looks down and holds my hand)

him : mamas, marriege is not just love on its own..
its commitment, care, appreciation, communication,
consideration, actions, understanding, valuation and
all that... if those stuff are not there in a marriege
then love alone will be too weak to hold the marriage
together.. same as a relationship...

me : i understand.. again am sorry...

he looked down playing with the remote in his hands
then he looked at me...

him : you one big work... come here...

i get close to him and he huges me while seated..
then i lay on his chest as i listen to his heartbeat..... i
shall never put my marriage on a mess again..

[12/13, 21:42] Zozaness: The villagegirl an the

playboy: arranged marriage

56

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

****nompilo****

its wednesday.. we in class.. i have now adjusted to ignoring all that is going on... students saying that i am seeking attention with my ring... others look at me weired...

well i have pulled the dont care attitude, thanks to mase...

so we in class discussing our friday plan.. we are having an event at school on friday, so we the others are planning on sneaking in alcohol in juice bottles and weed... and arrange a cab to fetch them and take them to one of the guys house for a house warming...

as for me and sbahle.. we talking about what snaks to buy.. sbahle drinks but not heavily.. she only drinks on special occasions...

so we decided on a mini picnic and she will have small sips of alcohol...

after school we went to the gate, as usual... we got there and got ma11, sbu and daddy there... since i will be standing there and waiting for my driver i just joined them with mase and sbahle..

we greeted them and they greeted back...

sbu : hao, nompilo kaminaiza..

mase : haisuka wena, hakguna nompilo wahao moo...

we laughed as sbu acted hurt...

daddy : kanitjho, seniyagoduka ngok??

mase : ewe sana..

everyone laughed.. i just smiled, guess i missed the joke... this thing of not knowing languages is making me miss out...

daddy : uyaqala ngoku

mase : askies mahn, its just that, you remind me of that guy.. bare kemang?? hai mahn, bare kemang?? the xhosa guy... velaphi!!

they all laughed and daddy kept trying to catch mase to hit her.. they were being funny nje.. they always on each others throat like they want each other...

nthabi : ma11 so you going to be with us on friday right?

ma11 : sho.. if nompi will be there..

me : hai, am a married woman owk..

i then wave my hand at them....

they laugh..

sbu : akga, you bought this for R2 at the makula shop..

ma11 : but it looks legit nje...

daddy : hai, its impossible, shes not married...

mase : haike, believe it or not, she is...

they were all shocked....

sbu : so no more chance nje??

me : nop.'

sbahle : hai its too late....

ma11 : on a serouse note though, i really like you..

mase : haisuka ma11.. go hunt somewhere else..

we talked and talked untill my driver came and took me home...

(its friday morning and i know, i know that i am ready for it, i am ready for it.. i love fridays, fridays are fun.....) ****singing****

i am so excited about this day.. its fun day at school...

i get ready, have breakfats and am done 30 minutes earlier then my usual finish time..

siya : wejabulele lefun day neh??

me : well, is it obvious??

him : very, its like you a grade 1 learner happy for her first day of school...

me : mxm, waphapha hle..

him : heeeee, you speaking setswana now??

me : yes moboy...

he laughed...

i went to him, kissed him, hugged him and pulled away...

me : buy papas..

him : have a nice fun day mamas.. mtwana waskolo...

me : lol...

i took my bags and went to the car...

the car drove and in minutes we got to school...

i got off, said goodbye to max and went in...

i met the girls and we all went to the field...

as we were settled on the grounds and all of us are having fun.. ma11 and siya come holding a bag.. this is not my siya, its siya from school... definatly not even close to how handsome my siya is...

we sat there and people started drinking.. they couldnt smoke so they saved that for after school...

i was having my drink, its juice.. i was always having a drink and my snaks...

am feeling abit dissy, more like a weired feeling.. but i guess its this son...

we talking and talking and am laughing my buttocks out...

after school we head to the cab... i am walking but i feel like i dont have balance.. does the son have a strong effect on me kanti..

we walk.. am capable of walking alone.. but little and little am loosing balance.. we get out and we wait at the shop..

the boys are playing the speaker and dancing.. am

cheering and cheering.. i need something to drink.. i reach in the cooler box.. i take a bottle of stone.. i take a sip.. mhm, this is nice but doesnt tast like stone.. i wonder what drink is this..

but becouse i wanted a nice cold stone.. i went in the shop and bought a fresh one..

i drank and yes it hit the spot.. mabye the dissyness will go away...

i finished the stone then sat down.. now am waiting for my driver and they are waiting for their cab.. i reach for the drink i was drinking before the stone and gulp it like water.. its really nice..

i had 3 bottles of that sweet nice juice.. whoever bought it will really kill me.. mabye i gotta stop..

i held back, then i saw my driver...

i tried standing up, but i failed.. i was cought by sbahle.. and now they fighting...

****sbahle****

i am sbahle, nompilos friend and classmate.. i am known as a nerd, yes i take my school work serious.

but that doesnt mean i dont party, i do.. but only when needed to.. i drink mabye 5 times in a year.. my birthday, june 16, september spring, dec 16, and dec 31st... if theres more then i add them... and today are one of those added....

it had been sometime and am having my cidar very smoothly... i see that nompilo is starting to talk too much.. she is babbling and laughing alot, this girl is even fansing with ma11 and nthabi is not pleased about that.. but question is when did she drink, because she always had her juice...

i reach for a what she was drinking and i drank...

OMW, its dashed... she probably couldnt taste it because she hadnt tasted alcohol before..

me : mase!!

mase : yes gal..

me : i think nompilo is drunk..

mase : how??

me : she drank this storm and thought it was juice.. and seeing her, she was drinking sitting down and

gulping like juice..

mase : ohhh no..

everyone was minding their business but they
cought on..

me : her driver is here, lets get her to the car..

we tried taking her...'

nompilo : ahaha... angiyi lapho.. siya cant see me like
this.. nop..nop.. **shakes her head**

athers are laughing..

mase : its not a joke yall, we gotta get her home...
sbahle uskaretsa nompilo.. we taking her to the
driver...

the cab was hiding us from the driver so the driver
couldnt see us.. but he already knows that nompilo
bloms here afterschool on fridays.. its about time
before he comes here to ask were is nompilo...

sbahle : owk..

ma11 : let me help...

nompilo : no guys.. yall always wanted me to loose..

manje ke.. ngiloose.. areye mogal.. get me in the cab
and dont tell max.. uyaphapha he will tell siya and
siya mhm mhm mhm.... trouble.. siya love me
toooooooooooooooooo much but gets pissed
toooooooooooooo fast.. trouble... trouble in paradise..

shes going on, shes blabbling.. mase and i are
defeated.. others come..

sbu : the driver is coming, get her in...

we get her in the cab and close it.. then the driver
came after few minutes..

driver : hello everyone..

we greeted back..

driver : has anyone seen nompilo??

nthabi : no, we didnt..

driver : owk thank you...

he left.. lebo and katlego and lerato started going
crazy over the driver.. hai..

the cab left and we went to sbus house.. mase and i
are not really enjoying ourselves.. nompilo is here

dancing with ma11 and other guys.. nthabiseng is jelouse becouse she wants ma11.. when we try to get her home she refuses to tell us were she lives so now we here trying to think of what to do...

me : mase.. we need to do something..

her : lets try and make her to drink plain juice and water so that she calms down..

me ; good one..

we were busy coming with a plan.. as we looked, nompilo is not on the dance floor.. we looked around.. and still nothing...

me : go to the rooms i will check the toilets..

we separated...

****mase****

i was checking the rooms and nothing.. i went to the other room and what i saw was not pleasing...

me : nompilo!!!! kg!!!!!!

kg flipped and moved away.. nompilo kept pulling him close and asking him were he was going....

we all know kg is a f**k boy.. that is what he is.. and i wouldnt be surprised if he sweet talked nompilo to this... poor nompilo is drank unintentionally and almost slept with kg..

kg is a kiss and tell.. he sleeps with you and tells the world about it.. thats kg for you...

me : kg, tswa..

i take nompilo out and we go outside... mabye some fresh air will do...

as i am waiting for sbahle i hear her phone ring, it was in her jean pocket.. i take it out and the caller id is hubby with hearts.. i answer..

me : hello..

him : mamas, were are you?? you got me worried sick..

me : nompilo is owk but we have a problem...

him : who is this and were is nompilo??

me : my name is masabatha, nompilos friend and nompilo is here.. shes drunk..

him : WHAT?? were are yall??

i let him know the adress and he says he will be here
in a sec... nompilo was now laying on the couch...
sbahle is back..

her : you found her..

me : with kg..

her : what??

me : dont worry nothing happened..

her : damn kg..

me : her husband is coming..

her : how did you.....

me : he called...

her : trouble..

me : we have to take the blame..

her : shoo.. owk...

[12/13, 21:43] Zozaness: continuation

..

- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .

****sbahle****

we waiting inside the house.. nompilo is sitting on the couch, shes talking nonstop, laughing alone.. she stands up to dance then sits down again... she is a mess..

kanti isnt nompilo a "non drinker" i wonder what happened..

we waiting for her husband, he said he would call nompilo's phone when he gets to the address that we told him, which is here... mase is holding the phone.. we stressed.. could nompilo be in trouble?? could his husband do something bad to her..??

anyway am also looking for kg, he must be the one that spiked nompilos drink.. wait konje they took alcohol and poured it in juice bottles so that the teachers dont see, so what if nompilo got hold of the wrong bottle of juice thinking its her juice..

but again that cant be because her drinks were not mixed with the alcohol, plus when i tasted it, it tasted like juice but you could taste the alcohol was there, so this was intentional...

ma11 and daddy came to us...

ma11 : she good??

they dont know about the kg story...

me : yes, shes good.. her husband is also coming to fetch her..

daddy : how did you get hold of him??

me : well he would call all the time but nompilo was not answering, luckily he called again and mase was with mpilo, so she answered the call and told him that mpilo is here and drunk.. so he asked for the address to fetch her, we gave him..

ma11 : haibo, wont he come with other guys to beat us, since we brought nompilo here?

me : i dont know dude, lets hope not..'

daddy : lets hope hes a calm dude.. futhi i dont want to be around makafika apha...

mase : lol.. daddy, he is meeting us outside..

daddy : oh owk..

ma11 : kanti didnt yall say that she doesnt drink??

mase : she doesnt vele..

me : someone spiked her drink...

daddy and ma11 looked at each other for quite a long time in shock.. like they know something or heard something..

mase : whats wrong??

ma11 : thing is, we saw kg holding eye drops and kodin...

daddy : when we asked were hes taking those stuff he said he is on a mission, but later changed and said its not his..

me : can i ask what does eyedrops and kodin do??

ma11 : if you mix eyedrops and kodin in a juice or alcohol, it makes you loose yourself.. you do things you dont normally do, you go loose and crazy... it makes you loose your mind...

me : but why would kg do that??

mase : obviously to sleep with her and tell the whole school about it..

me : but this is like drugging her...

daddy : it is becouse those eyedrops are not regular once...

me : really??

ma11 : but kg would never do that.. he would just get her drunk and try his luck, he wouldnt go as far as doing that...

mase : we need to find kg and ask him..

me : but first we wait for nompilos husband to come fetch her.. look at her...

she was dancing, acting all mad and busy laughing

alone... i so hate kg for this...

ma11 : it sounds so weird when you say her "husband" is coming..

daddy : neh?? its unbelievable... am not used to it...

me : me too.. i mean shes only 18..

mase : yah.. mind blowing...

the phone rings and its "hubby" her husband.. mase answers..

mase : hello...

him :.....

mase : owk..

him :.....

mase : we on our way...

she puts the phone back in nompilos pocket...

mase : usafihlile...

me : lets go... ma11 help us..

ma11 : me?? hai, hai.. i dont want to come back with a blue eye... daddy hamba ndoda..

daddy : sorry?? ufuna ndibuye nelihlo elilodwa??

me : hai, yekani...

we pick nompilo up, shes protesting but she is not resisting.. my heart is actually beating very hard.. am not sure what kind of a person this guy is.. and am also thinking how his reaction will be...

we walking towards the door.. am shivering.. i look at mase and she looks at me.. we both scared..

well on nompilos phone her wallpaper is his husband and herself together.. he seemed big and abit light.. but we couldnt see his face becouse the phone was locked and needed a pincode and the time and all that info was hiding his face...

so we unsure of which one is her husband and were he is standing...

a guy comes to us.. his body is big.. he is tall... and he looks like the guy on nompilos wallpaper, this must be her husband...

he didnt say anything, he looked angry, he looked pissed, like he could beat someone up... he comes

and takes nompilo.. he puts her over his sholder... he looks at me, then at mase, back at me then lastly at mase...

he then walkes away.. mase stops him..

mase : sir...

he turns around and looks at mase, he looks very angry.. mase takes a deep breath...

mase : please dont blame her.. its not her fault.. she didnt know she drank.. its my fault.. i gave her alcohol and said it was juice.. i also hid her when the driver came and said shes not here.. please do trust me, she has no idea what happened...

what?? mase?? woooooow... owk i guess i also need to add.. i cant let mase take all the blame..

me : true sir..

his eyes came to me.. i got even more scared...

me : i was also there.. also contributed in making nompilo drunk.. its not her fault.. she didnt want to drink and go with us.. so we dashed her drink... we are sorry.. we didnt take her serious when she said

she is married, we thought it was a front to avoid having fun...

he didnt say anything.. instead he just looked at me, and mase... and walked further away.. we stood there and looked at them till they got in the car and left...

i then looked at mase..

me : you think he believed us??

mase : i think he did.. nompilo is going to wake up not knowing what happened, that will confirm our story..

me : but get us in trouble...

mase : atleast we wont die.. he wont beat us, we girls.. but he could report us and we could be expelled..

me : i cant believe i just risked my studies becouse of nompilo..

mase : yah.. i never thought i could do that for a friend.. nompilo is very different and comes with that unique energy.. i wouldnt want to couse harm for

her..

me : yah.... but atleast we saved her marriage..

mase : yah.. thats if he believed us..

me : yah.. its cold outhere, lets go inside..

we went inside..

****siya****

am driving, am pissed, am angry.. am running through emotions its not a joke... shes laying on the chair in the backseat.. shes busy singing, laughing and talking nonsense...

i cant bare this.. i am conentration on the road but again am not.. i fear i will couse an accident so i pull over and relax a little...

i look at her and this image i see of her drunk is really disgusting.. mabye this school thing was a bad idea.. she couldve gone to ukzn.. whould it be better?.... i turn the music loud so that i dont hear nompilo at the back...

i hit my head on the steering weel it makes the honk sound.. i dont care i hit it severial times and then

drop my head back.. eyes closed...

after a while i gain strength to drive again.. so i start the car and drive..

halve way i look at nompilo, shes asleep.. i look forward and just drive... at this moment am emotionless..

we get home, i get the car in the garage, lock the cate and the garage and pick nompilo up and we enter in the house through the garage door leading to the living room..

i go straight to the bedroom.. she is slightly awake..

nompilo : trouble, trouble.... trouble..

i ignore her and tuck her in bed...

i look at her and all i have is disgust.. i take my pillow, i grab one blanket and i go out.. i look at her for the last time.. i then close the door and go out..

i go to the living room.. i guess this will be my bed for somedays... i call the max...

max stayed at school till around 4 then called me telling me that nompilo is nowere to be found.. i was

stressed.. i told him to not move.. he should stay there untill we know were he is.. yes he stayed there... i was busy calling her parents and bongani to ask were she is.. they also got worried.. after minutes of stressing.. i have been trying to reach her but fail but later at 6 thats when i got through and the friend answerd.. i called max to come back.. i actually felt bad that i had to make him wait the whole 5 hours alone... i also told the fam to relax.. max answered my call..

him : mr xulu..

me : i hope your wife didnt shout at you..

him : i explained mr xulu, she is owk..

me : thank her for me.. and tell her am really sorry..

him : will do sir, its not a problem..

me : i will surely award you for your patience and loyalty..

him : thank you sir.. is madam owk?

me : shes fine, thank you..

him : am mamzondo?? since i couldnt take her to her house..

me : i dropped her off myself..

him : oh ok sir..

me : thank you max..

him : no problem.. goodnight sir..

me : goodnight..

he hungs up.. i had not eaten and i now feel that am hungry...

i have some light dinner.. i had some food that i made earlier.. i had left it for nompilo to eat after school...

i dished up, warmed it up and had it.. then i drank some tea.. i then went to lay on the couch as i watch tv... as i got a bit sleepy i switched off all lights and the tv and slept.....

[12/13, 21:44] Zozaness: The villagegirl an the playboy: arranged marriage

- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .

****nompilo****

i woke up.. damn i have a headacue.. i look around, am confused.. how did i get here?? what happened??

i feel weired, i feel heavy.. am tired, plus this headache is also on my case... i get out of bed and head straight to the bathroom... i wash my face.. i look in the mirror.. am a mess... i even smell really bad, my clothing smell terrible... my breath is also smelling terrible..

i slept full kit.. but am still confused at how i got home, i mean the last thing i remember is being at

the shop, i remember my body was acting weird so i decided to get a cold stone and maybe i would be ok.. but i don't remember going into my driver's car and coming home... which gets me to a question.... where is siya?? he was not next to me when i woke up... and his pillow is not there as well..

what's happening kanti, am i dreaming?? i then wash my face.. freshen up.. actually i took a long relaxing bath. i was in need of it since i was not myself today...

finally after a while i get out, wrap a towel around myself and go lotion myself...

i lotion myself and got dressed.. even after a bath i still felt the need to sleep again.. like i was still tired..

i head down and there is no sign of siya in the kitchen.. i go to the dining room.. he is not there.. i check the living room he is not there.. but i notice that a blanket was neatly folded and a pillow was placed on the blanket and they were on the couch.. his pjs were also neatly folded on the couch...

could he have slept on the couch?? why though??

this better be a dream because non of this makes sense.. i go up to the balcony on the second floor to check if mabye he is not sitting at the outside dinner set.. and yes he is there...

i then head down and go out to him.. ohhhh damn the son is draining me.. i now feel more tired...

i get to him...

me : papas!!

him : **silence**

me : siya??

he is still quite, he doesnt even look at me.. kanti whats wrong??.. i shake him, but it makes no difference.. its like he cant here me..

he does joke like this but then he ends up laughing.. now he is dead serious.. he keeps still while drinking his juice, playing on his laptop.. yes hes playing soduko...

me : am sure i can break your record...

still no word, no nothing...

me : should i make you breakfast??

still no answer...

i look at him for a while and hes really not giving me no attention... like not even a greeting, kanti what did i do?..

i go back in the house.. i keep looking back to see if mabye he would look at me and stop me but he is just fixed on his laptop...

i am now in the kitchen, i make something to eat, i also make tea.. i sit in the living room and watch tv.. plus this headache is also persistentafter eating i go wash my plate and my my cup.. then i head back to my room...

i get there and look for pills.. i find siyas panados, i take 2 and drink with the water from the tap of the baisin.. i was lazy to go to the kitchen..

i then tidied up my room and opened the curtains... then after cleaning i laid on the bed and went through my phone...

i had several missed calls from sbahle...

i called back.. its around 11am now...

her : girl, unjani??

me : am owk.. wena?

her : am owk now that i know you alive..

me : what do you mean??

her : phela after siya took you from sbus house he was angry, like he could kill someone.. he didnt do anything to you right??

me : no, he didnt..

her : did he believe that its not your fault that you were drunk??

me : me?? drunk??

her : yooooo girl, you were a mess..

me : so thats why.....

her : thats why what??

me : no i meant, thats why i am so tired....

her : girl, we have a whole story to tell on monday..

me : owk, thank you...

her : well thank mase, because if it wasnt for her,
you couldve slept with kg...

me : WHAT?? (shocked)

her : yah.. mase found you before anything could
happen...

me : sbahle, i will call you back owk...i need to go..

her : owk..

i hung up and ran down.. i was about to head at the
background but i saw that siya was now in the living
room, watching tv...

i went to him...

me : am sorry...

he looked at me.. finally.. but then he goes back to
watching tv....

me : siya, i know why you giving me the silent
treatment.. am really sorry.. i dont know what was
going on in my head.. trust me siya, my intention
was not to sleep with kg.. i was not myself...

he shot straight at me with his eyes.. anger arose..

his face changed.. he looked straight in my eyes.. i was now uncomfortable, i felt like looking down.. well i did...

him : you slept with who??

finally he spoke, but am surprised now.. isnt that what made him give the silent treatment?? now hes all shocked... kanti whats up???

me : i didnt sleep with him, i almost slept with him...

him : who??

me : kg.. isnt it what made you angry???

him : you slept with kg??

me : no, i almost...

him : agggg mahn, same thing.. fact is you wanted to...

me : siya...

him : shut up!!! you disgust me..

he moved passed me bumping me in the process..

i just looked down.. if he didnt know about kg, then

why was he giving me a silent treatment??... ohhh
mabye its because i was drunk....

jho...

.

its now time for supper.. yes he has been giving me
the silent treatment the whole day.... he has moved
to the guest room on the third floor... he has been in
there since he bumped me earlier today.. hes been
there with his laptop...

****siya****

i am in the guestroom, i have been playing soduko
the whole day.. just going from one level to another..
just like that...

i get a call and its bongani..

me : grootman..

him : yes boy.. how you??

me : am great, and you??

him : am great man.. just sitting here alone and
bored, at least you got someone keeping you

company...

me : lol... see, its time you got yourself a wife
grootman....

him : hai, soon soon.. you will have an aunt...

me : lol.. hay, you wanna do drinks today??

him : you still get a chance to do drinks??

me : lol.. i take that as a yes.. i will fetch you in an
hour...

him : sho... will be waiting..lol..

i hung up...

i got up, took my jacket, my binnie, my keys and
headed out.. i passed the kitchen and saw this girl
dishing up... the way am so dissapointed and
disgusted i cant even say her name...

i just pass her and head out to the garage.. i dont
even look at her... i get in the open the garage and
the gate and off i went to bongani....

i drive and get to bongani, i pick him up and we drive
to a hub that we know.. very classy hub... its very

chilled and down to earth that's why i love it...

him : you know, i never thought you will come..

me : i need to go out and relax..

him : oh owk..

we get to the hub and we get in and chill..

time passed... its now 11pm and we laughing and having fun with bongani...

then a group of girls come.. they chill on the other couch... they keep looking this side.. trust me am not even interested.... even the craving is not there.. i mean yes they have shorts, others skirts, others tights.. they thick and there are some with big asses and some with big boobs.. but they all lacked something.. self respect, self love and uniqueness... the qualities that someone had but lost...

bongani is looking...am sure he wants a slice..

me : i see you want a slice...

him : yah, but if i go ahead i will looking for aids moss...

me : hao who said they have aids.?? they look fresh..

him : never judge a book by its cover..

as we were speaking, 3 girls come to us.. i am in no mood, so i take out my hand from my pocket and place it on my thigh.. i guess i wanted them to see that am married...

they get here and these girls dont even care about the ring...

girl 1 : hay lover boys..

we just look at them and say nothing..

girl 2 : are we shy now?? well we can help...

me : thanks but we not interested.. we would like to chill alone as guys...

bongani : yah we would like a guys night..

girl 3 : theres no guys out without girls...

bongani : we would like to be the judge of that..

thank you..

me : exactly...

they leave.. bongani starts speaking about them and laughing asking if these type of girls exist..

him : yaz, some girls have no shame.. you dont know a guy but already you wanna get him in your legs..

me : yah hay.. its funny how they advertise their body to get men but when men only see them as sex objects they cry and complain... kanti where on earth do we have coca-cola cumpany advertising coke but selling soap.. doesnt make sense..

him : yah.. its really rare getting a respectfull, self love, humble woman.. you lucky you found one..

me : untill they lose all of it in the name of impression..

him : what do you mean??

me : i am just saying.. phela i know a girl that was very respectfull, loving, humble, gentle, kind.. very different.. but as she experienced the world and moved to another province... she changed.. and turned to being the regular girl type..

him : sad.. its so sad..

me : tell me about it...

him : bro its almost 12pm.. you sure nompilo wont be angry at you.. phela as much as you wanna have fun you gotta now you married..

me : nahh.. we will leave at in the morning, shes probably sleeping already..

him : owk...

we chilled...

[12/13, 21:51] Zozaness: The villagegirl an the playboy: arranged marriage

58

- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .

.

.

****siya****

its 4am, i just dropped bongani at his house.. am not drunk but am also not sober... i drive home.. i get in park my car in the garage and get in the house...

i walk in and the living room light is not off... i close the door and notice that nompilo is sleeping on the couch in the living room...

i look at her.. shes not wearing any blanket, she must be feeling cold.. damn why do i even care??
mxm..

i walk to her and look at her... were is that humble, respectful, loving, amazing nompilo i know?? where did she go?? has this varsity eliminated her??

i then go to the bedroom... i took a blanket and went down to cover her with it...

after tucking her in i sit on the one seat couch... i sit there looking at her.. finally i feel sleep coming to devour me... i sit there and immediatly my eyes gave

in...

****nompilo****

i wake up... firstly i see that am covered in a blanket.. then i see siya sleeping on the one seat couch... i wonder what time he came back.. and am certain that he is the one that covered me with this blanket.... i stand up, take the blanket and cover him with it.. he is sleeping in the most uncomfortable way..

well i know yall gonna think am stupid but i got to try hay...

i gently try and pick him up.. he is heavy and my arms are small and weak... i try again and this time he wakes up..

him : what are you doing ?? (sleepy voice, halve asleep)

me : i was trying to pick you up and get you to bed so that you can sleep comfortably...

him : (churckles) nompilo.....

his little smile gave me life... its been long since i last saw a smile from him.. even though he gave me a little smile, but it counted alot to me..

he walks and leaves the blanket behind...

me : siya the blanket...

he turns and looks at me.. he wants to come back and fetch it.. but i take it and go hand it to him...

him : thank you..

that thank you gives me more life...

he then goes upstairs..

i smile to myself.. i keep replaying the part were he churckled and smiled at me and also said thank you, in my mind... my mind relaxes.. my mood enlightens... i guess this sunday wont be as bad as i thought...

well i start cleaning and doing the deeds.. i wasnt sure which room siya was in.. whether the guestroom or main bedroom... well i take my chances and clean guestrooms first.. well he is in non of them.. its obvious he is in our room...

i dont go in, i skip it and clean everywhere else... as you know on weekends mamzondo doesnt come to clean.. she only comes on weekdays..

when i was done, i make breakfast.. well i do know that siya wont wake up anyminute now... i make myself cereal and eat... yes, call me disgusting or whatever but i ate before bathing and brushing my teeth... thing is.. siya is in the room and i dont want to wake him up.. so i will shower once he is awake..

****siya****

i am waken by my phone ringing.. i check the caller id.. its bongani..

me : grootman...

him : hao.. why does it sound like i just woke you up??

me : thats becouse you did...

him : boy, its 2pm in the afternoon and you still sleeping??

me : yes, its not like i need to be somewere..

him : hai, owk.. i just wanted to check if you not dead...

me : why would i be dead??

him : you came back to your wife at 4am, didnt you get the most lecture?? am sure the reason why you dont want to get up is becouse you know she is going to be on your case...

me : nah, non of that...

him : serious??

me : come on.. its not like i went out with friends and got myself onto some nasty stuff.. i just went out with her uncle and we were chilling... besides, the fresh air did me good..

him ; hai boy, aslong as you good...

me : thanks grootman.. even though you enterrupted my dreams..

him : hahahahah, hai suka...

i hung up and laid for few more minutes.. i am tired.. i go and take a shower, mabye i will feel great again...

****nompilo****

its now 2pm and siya has not come down.. i have

been sitting in the living room since i got done cleaning and having breakfast.. well i did go outside and chilled in the sun...

i decide to go in the room and get my toiletries... i will go bath in the guestroom.. i dont know why i didnt think of this long ago, i couldve been fresh by now..

i gently walk in trying to not make a sound.. but as i walk in, i find siya standing with only a towel around his waist..

me : oh sorry, i thought you were still sleeping.. i just wanted to get my toiletries..

him : owk!!

i go in and get all that i need.. then i head to the door...

him : were did this whole thing start....??

i turned to look at him... he was now standing at the window.. looking outside, with his hands in his pocket.. he was now wearing a swagshort, ankle socks and slippers.. with no shirt on...

i went close to him.. i tried finding words, but they

had dissapeared...

him : i thought i asked you a question??

he was still facing the window..

me : we were at school.. my friends and other guys planed to bring alcohol in school.. so they poured the alcohol in juice bottles.. sbahle and i bought plain juice.. i had 3 bottles of diferent types of juices and snacks.. i was drinking my juice and eating my snacks.. after school when we left to go to the shop, were i usually wait for max on everyfriday, i wasnt feeling owk.. but i thought it was the son, i thought i was overheading becouse i felt kind of dizzy... but it didnt get any better... i then went to the shop to get myself stone.. but it also didnt help.. i sat down waiting for max and finishing my juice.. when max came i wanted to go to him but as i stood up i fell down again.. i had no balance, i was weak, i couldnt see properly, my eyes was heavy..

him : so instead of coming home with max, you decide to sleep and go to some house party...

me : house party??

what is he talking about..??

him : so how did you go without max seeing you??

me : am not sure, but sbahle and mase helped me when i fell..

him : must be the 2 girls that told me where you were... so what happened after??

me : i really dont remember much.. i dont remember going to a house party and i dont remember coming back home..

him : so how do you remember "almost" sleeping with kg??

me : sbahle called me this morning.. telling me that you looked really angry when you fetched me, so she wanted to check on me... thats when she told me..

him : so you also dont remember that insident??

me : no...

him : so you personaly dont know whether you slept with kg or not??

me : no...

he then turns and goes to sit on the corner of the bed, with one leg on the bedcouch.. he then looked up to my face..

my heart is now racing..

him : do your friends know that you married??

me : yes..

him : do they believe you??

me : yes...

him : you know what your friends told me??

me : what??

him : that its not your fault.. that they fed you alcohol saying its juice.. that they got you drunk because they thought you lying when you said you married..

me : they said that??

him : yes..

me : then why were you angry at me knowing that its not myfault?? they told you moss..

him : am no fool... who steals and tells the owner of whatever they stole that they stole it?? who murders someone and goes to the cops to hand herself in?? do you think if truly they did that, do you think they would be open about it, knowing that they could be suspended??

i just kept quite..

him : and you know what else got me thinking that all this is a lie?? you first were hiding your ring at school.. now you going house partys and also busy nabo kg.. whos this kg guy??

me : he is a student at the school..

him ; same class??

me : no, in the faculty of commerce..

him : i really dont know what to do.. you loosing the nompilo i loved.. you turning into this human i am unaware of.. continue like this and you will find yourself in a loveless marriage..

i didnt say anything.. i just looked down..

him : to think i faught with my dad because of this

school thing.. but am starting to think mabye he was right..

i still looked down...

him : nompilo, ngiyakthanda... kakhulu futhi..

ngizophinda futhi.. nompilo ngiyakthanda...

ngiphinde futhi??

my heart was breaking... i didnt know what to say...

him : nompilo ngiyakthanda...

my tears dropped...

he stood up and came to me... he lifted my chin and leaned in... he then kissed me.. he placed his lips on mine and stayed like that for few seconds then he pulled out..

him : maxulu, ngiyakthanda, but they way you going on, my love for you will fade away.. and once that happens, i dont know how life will be, but i do know that tears and pillows will have a relationship...

he then left.. tears flowed like river going down the downfall.. i sat on the bed and let everything out.. i cried so bitterly.. i have never cried like that my

whole life... my heart was shattered..

[12/13, 21:52] Zozaness: The villagegirl an the
playboy: arranged marriage

59

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

****siya****

its monday morning and i need some clarity on really
what happended that evening... i have been thinking
about it the whole night.. the fact that i dont know,
and nompilo doesnt know ineed to find out and the

people who can exactly tell me what went down is
nompilos 2 friends.. masabatha and sbahle..

nompilo is upstairs getting ready, max is already
outside.. i make my way to him...

me : max!

him : yes sir..

me : how are you??

him : i am great sir, what about you?

me : i am owk.. listen i need a favour..

him : yes??

me : before fetching nompilo from school, call me..
and drive here, am not working today so i will be
home.. we will drive together.. i will tell you later
what happens when we get there...

him : owk, no problem...

nompilo comes out all dressed.. she wasnt happy
though.. well non of us has been happy these past
days, this party thing ruined our weekend..

her : goodbye..

me : bye..

she gets in the car and the car leaves...

***nompilo**

i get to school and i am all of a sudden feeling uncomfortable.. i just head straight and see that the crew is sitting on the rock were they normally sit and wait for everyone to come so that they move to our blom spot... well sbahle doesnt blom with them, she just sits with them when am with them but when am in classes, she chills alone.. i stand at the gate looking at them.. nthabiseng raises her hand to wave at me, the rest look at me.. mase raises her hand to signal to me that i should go to them.. i stand and just look.. then i go a different direction...

i went to a sit in the building at the cafeteria... they also chill in there but not at the table that i was sitting in...

at exactly 8am, i go to my first class... i find mase and sbahle already sitting at the back laughing... i make my way to sit next to them...

mase : hay.. how are are you??

me : am great...

sbahle : how are things with bae?

me : owk..

mase : we really sorry..

me : can i ask??

them : sure..

me : what really happened that day...??

they sighed and started telling me the story from going in the cab, to getting to sbus house, to dancing nabo ma11 and daddy to flirting with ma11 to nthabiseng being very jelouse becouse she wanted ma11 and ma11 started wanting me from the first day he met me...

they told me all to me almost slepping with kg and mase walking in on us.. practically mase saved my life.. to siya calling me and mase answering my phone and to siya going to sbus house to fetch me and finally to mase and sbahle lying and saying they got me drunk...

me : woooooow.. i really was a mess hay??

sbahle : yah... so did he believe us??

me : who?

mase : your husband...

me : ohhh, no.. noone does something wrong and immidatly tells on himself.. thats why he didnt believe yall..

mase : but truth is your drink was spiked.. and ma11 and daddy say they saw kg holding a unregular eyedrop and kodin.. so i think thats what they mixed in your juice..

me : but kg was not at school when yall started drinking..

sbahle : yes.. what were you drinking at school??

me : it was the kingley stone.. small one..

mase : that was your first mistake.. we forgot to tell you that we didnt buy anyjuice for yall, thats why we only bought more juice once we were outside..

me : so the stone i drank was not stone??

mase : no, it was storm inside.. you wouldnt have

tasted it because vele it doesnt have that nasty tast or strong tast..

me : ohhh damn...

sbahle : but it was owk becouse you only had one bottle.. but for the fact that you drank it like juice, just galping it.. it made you a little dizzy..

me : shamit...

sbahle : but then when did kg spike your drink?? did you have anything at the shop??

me : yes, i opened my tropica juice when i started feeling dizzy thinking it will cool me down but it didnt.. so i left it down next to the coolerbox and went in the shop to buy stone..

sbahle : they mustve spiked your tropica juice kge...

me : but why kg would do this??

mase : to sleep with you and tell the whole school about it...

me : but why?? isnt that stupid??

mase : thats kg for you.. whoever dates kg and think

kg loves them is a fool...

i was dissapointed at myself.. well hai, i hate all this..
i hate kg for doing this...

****siya****

its school out for nompilo.. i just got a call from max..
i get ready and in minutes, max is outside...

mamzondo is here so i dont worry about locking up..

i take my car and follow max as he drives to fetch
nompilo.. as we were about to get there i call max...

him : hello sir..

me : change of plan.. you pick the 2 ladies,
masabatha and sbahle, i will pick nompilo up.. i dont
want to mix myself with kids..

him : owk sir, but how do i.....

me : go to nompilos friends and ask for those 2
friends then take them to the car and ask them
about friday and kg.. make sure you record them..

him : owk sir...

me : i will pick nompilo up first then you can drive to

the gate..

him : got you...

i hung up and drive to the gate...

****nompilo****

i am standing at the gate with sbahle, mase, nthabiseng and ma11... firstly i see these 3 looking at something and looking all shocked or rather scared... sbahle pokes me to look at whatever they looking.. and boom its siya.. he has come to fetch me...

some girls who were walking in and out of the gate were going crazy at siya and guys saluting his car.. he looked serious with his elbow out the window.. he didnt entertain anygirl nor even looked at them.. he just looked at me and looked forward...

well a part of me was very gloatful to have siya fetch me from school.. but the attention at that time was too much...

i got in the car and most girls at school were just shocked.. then siya drove...

me : i thought max was fetching me....

him : dissapointed??

me : no.. but now i need to be extra carefull..

him : about??

me : so that these girls dont take my husband hao...

him ****chuckles**** yah right...

i laugh...

****max****

i see siyas car drive off, then i make myway to the gate...

i get out the car and go to were her friends were standing.. my phone was in my hands and already recording...

me : hay ladies.. and gentleman..

them : hay..

ma11 : aitha grootman..

sbahle : if you looking for nompilo she has already left..

mase : yes, her husband picked him up...

me : i know.. am actually here to speak to yall..

sbahle : owk..

me : friday.. what happened??

they looked uneasy, uncomfortable.. they were out of words...

me : listen, you better give me the full story or i might have to report what yall did to nompilo to the dean..

mase : owk owk..

mase and sbahle were the once who told most of the story.. ma11 added on the kg part and someparts.. but this other one didnt even say anything.. actually she even left and said she had to go...

after they were done...

me : thank you, i hope you telling the truth...

they nodded... they were in fear shame and i could see that... i bid goodbye and drive back to siyas

house..

i rang the bell.. nompilo opened..

her : max??

me : hay, is siya here??

her : no, he drove mamzondo home..

me : owk..

her : would you like to leave a message??

me : nop, its owk... thank you..

i go back to my car and call him..

him : max!!

me : its all done.. they told me everything..

him : goodwork.. thank you..

me : pleasure sir, i will send the recorder via whatsapp...

him : owk cool...

me : goodbye sir..

him : bye max...

i hung up and send the recorder via whatsapp and go home..

****siya****

i drive back home from dropping mamzondo.. in minutes i get home..

i drive in, park my car and get in the house...

her : you back.. i made lunch...

me : thank you.. i am very starving..

her : let me dish up for you...

well we were on good terms now but not the siya and nompilo we were before.. we still had cold conversations like we forced to speak to one another.. we still have cold dinners like eating in silence.. even though we talk, we still not complete..

i go in the living room, sit and put my earphones on.. i listen to everything they were saying...

ohhhhh nooooo.. here i was thinking all of this was a front story to cover nompilos doings but it seems like it wasnt her fault... kg!! that bastard is to be blamed...

but then even though she didnt know she was drunk why didnt she go to max when max came looking for her?? instead she told mase and sbahle that they should tell max that shes not here.. now that i cant say its a mistake.. she couldve let max bring her home.. and mabye i would say it was not her fault...

who feels that theres something wrong but still denies going home.. that doesnt make sense...

but i was also feeling kind of stupid.. i gave her the silent treatment.. i was angry at her.. but truth is it wasnt her fault.. but not wanting to come home makes me think i also wasnt wrong...

guess we were both wrong.. its always important to listen to the full story before acting... but mina it wasnt me.. my anger just rose up.. for the fact that she even mentioned almost sleeping with kg.. it messed me even more.,...

i was in the living room, thinking about this kg guy and were i would get him... he needs to pay for what he did to mamas.

[12/13, 21:53] Zoaness: continuation

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

****nompilo****

siya was listening to music on his earphone when i brought him lunch... i sat there eating while he just listened to whatever song.. he had his hands locked together and placed on his chin covering his mouth.... he looked serious in space, leaning forward with his elbows on his thighs, thinking very deep...

i would eat then look at him... he stayed fixed in that position... you would swear he was listening to someone speak and is trying to pay extra attention...

finally after a while he took his earphones off and leaned back.. he looked at me for the longest then sighed and dropped his head back...

he then took his plate and played around with his food... he tried eating but you could see that he is forcing himself to eat...

me : siya?? whats wrong??

he didnt answer me, his attention was still on his plate and playing with the food...

me : siya??

i touched his shoulders... he looked at me..

me : whats wrong?? you hardly touched your food...??

him : nothing.. i need some rest..

he stood up with his plate and left... i thought of running after him but i thought otherwise.. he is probably still angry about friday...

well since i know the whole story i might as well just tell him.. but i will do that when he calms down...

i finished my lunch and went to wash my dish.. i then went back to the living room and watched some movies.. but my mind was not there, i was just thinking about siya.. i am sure i sat there for about 30 minutes..

i was now enough with the tention that was in the house.. i went to him..

i opened the bedroom door and found him laying on the bed playing with a rubber ball... he does that when hes stressed or angry...

i closed the door and locked it and took the keys and put them in my pocket... i was doing this so that he couldnt leave but be forced to listen to my story...

me : siya!! am sorry.. i know i had a chance to come home that day but didnt and for that am really sorry, but the rest i wasnt aware of it...

him : i know....

me : no, let me explain... firstly i drank storm not

knowing.. but after that my drink was spiked.. word is..... wait did you say you know??

him : yes, i know...

me : how?? how do you know??

him : it doesnt matter how, but fact is i know..

me : oh... so you do know its not my fault??

him : yes.. and i do know that it is kg that spiked your drink since he was seen with unregular eyedrops and kodin..

me : ohhh...

i looked down and made my way to the bed.. i sat down with my back facing him and eyes facing down.. i am not sure why i cried, but my eyes just dropped tears...

in a few seconds he stood up and came to my side... he squatted in front of me and held my hands looking at me as i look down... he wiped my tears then held my hands again...

him : mamas, am really sorry.. i have been a jerk.. instead of first knowing what really happen i decided

to act in anger.. i am truly sorry.. ngiyaxolisa maxulu
(i am sorry maxulu)

i didnt say anything my tears just flowed even more
then before...

him : mamas, please say something...

me : (cryin but also smiles) am just glad i get to here
you calling me mamas again...

him : (chuckled) you will forever be my mamas.. i
love you.. please forgive me for acting that way.. i
promise i will do things differently next time....

me : i forgive you (sniff) i am also sorry for being so
reckless.. first it was the ring issue now this.. mabye
your father was right, mabye i shouldve stayed a
housewife and not be a student...

him : nonsense.. the problem is not school its who
you befriend.. mamas you married.. you should be
with much mature people who will lead you and
teach you not mislead you and break you...

me : understood..

him : why do you think am always here with you or

just cooped up in my office.. friends might mislead me and i might end up loosing this precious diamond..

i blushed a little.. siya is really good with words...

me : now i see why all those girls i found you with believed you when you said you loved them...

him : why do you say so??

me : you are very good with words.. you are a educated smooth talker.. its like your father is shakespeare...

him : hahahahahaha, mxm..

he got up and sat next to me still holding my hands...

him : so does that mean you dont believe me??

i looked up and he had a smirk on his face and his eyebrows slightly lifted... i then looked down again..

me : nop.. not a bit...

i looked up to look at him.. he held his chest and looked amazed at me popping his eyes out.. i laughed...

he then then faced his back at me and looked the other way...

i laughed as i held him...

me : am just joking... (laughs) papas... papas am kidding...

him : nah.. nah...(laughs)

he then looked back at me.. he is one great drama king jho...

him : its so amazing seeing your smile again... your laughter, your eyes, your touch.. i missed it all just for a misunderstanding..

me : i also missed your voice, your jokes, your eyes, your touch and also your decieving words..

him : ouch...

he pouted and he looked around as though he was looking for something.. then he looked at me and spoke with his mouth still pouting..

him : so..so.. my words are deceiving...

me : yes and coniving..

he continued posing then he laughed and looked at me..

him : coniving?? (looking at me with popped out eyes and a smile on his face)

me : yes...

him : woooooow... since my words are coniving and decieving i think you should get yourself a new husband...

he stood up, i held his arm and pulled him while laughing...

me : baby... baby..stop... (laughing)

him : no, let me go..

he was playing serious.. but he couldnt keep the serious face.. he would smile then hid his smile and act serious again..

i pulled him till he finally fell on the bed... he was pulling too hard or too much so thats why i managed to pull him...

me : i dont want another husband, i want you..

he came close to me in such a way that his face was few cm away from my face.. he held my waist.. we lay on our side on the bed facing each other... i had my one leg in between his tighs....

him : so you want this guy with a deceiving, coniving words??

me : yes..

he baby kissed me..

him : you sure??

me : sure..

he baby kissed me again...

him : 100%

me : no, 1000%

he baby kissed me again...

him : i love you mamas..

me : i love you more papas...

him : no, i love you more mamas..

me : incorrect, i love you more papas..

him : more...

me : more...

him : rock paper scissors??

me : sure...

we did rock paper and i won...

me : see..??

him : mxm.. i still know that i love you more..

me : drama king...

him : drama queen..

i smiled and he smiled back.... we were now looking into each others eyes.. we were having a conversation, one that was communicated by the eyes..

i was craving him and he was also craving for me..

he leaned in and kissed me.. he started out slowly then he moved pace.. i went on him.. it was my 1st time trying the woman on top thing.. but i knew what to do because i have watched some porn on it..

(dont look at me like that... phela after my first time

with siya i had to educate myself)...

i took off my shirt and was left with my sports bra... i took his shirt off and started feeling his upperbody...

as i went down to kiss him he held me and took off my sports bra...

after we were kissing for a while.. i went down kissing his upperbody.. planting kiss by kiss from his chest down to his abs...

i hear him moaning that means am on the right track... as i kiss his abs i pull his swag pants down and his underwear...

i have never imagined myself having mr man down here in my mouth and i wasnt even going to start... i did some handjob and he held my head.. a signal that i should put it in my mouth.. hell no... in my mouth?? nop..... that stuff be nasty.....

i still play around with it in my hand.. he is moaning and sending signals that i should put it in my mouth.. i then go up kissing from his abs up to his lips...

as we kissed, he is now rough... it looks like he is in

need of me at this moment.... he helps me out of my jeans and my underwear...

i am now sitting on him.. mr man is not yet in me.. (i saw this tactic in one porn video and here i am trying it).. i rub mr man down there with my lady down there.. i rub him while shifting front and back... he is not yet in..

i see siya being miserable.. i smile to myself.. siya has his eyes closed.. damn am making his weak and worthless.. arnt i??

i then teas him.. i place mr man down there on the entrance of my lady down there.. i go circles.. siya keep upping his lower body so that he could enter, but i dont let him... i guess i like being in control..

he is now holding me very tight and now wants to be inside.. i see it all on his face...

he tries coming on top but i press him down.. he slightly opens his eyes..

him : mamas... (breathing heavily) you hurting me...

his eyes are red, small and scream hunger... i then

get mr man in my lady and sit like that...

him : mamas...auhhhhh.. am gonna get you for this...

i smile and i slowly ride... he doesnt even wait for me to pace up.. he just lifts my body up and picks his body and he does the riding... he went fast and fast and as i felt my body shiver he pulled out..

me : siya!!!.. dont....

he puts me down and lays me on my back with my behind up... he rode me like that... i was feeling pleasure.. i was going crazy.. he went faster and continued moaning and i also moaned...

as the feeling became more pleasant and i felt that am coming.. he pulled out again.. i was soo pissed...

me : no no no no.. dont... papas.. no...

he then layed me on the bed facing up and entered..

him : look at me.. i wanna see your eyes when you come...

me : haaaaaa...

i always hid my face when i come.. all the time.. so

why does he want me to open my eyes today... did i wake a monster today??

him : please..

i open my eyes..

as he rides faster i look away... he holds my face straight with his hands and rides faster again... this time i tried looking away but i couldnt.. i closed my eyes...

him : dont close your eyes..

i opened them.. i looked in his eyes as he was moving faster... i shivered.. my body shook and i released.. he also came..

he fell on me.. and slightly fell aside.. then after catching a breath he reached for his shirt and whiped my lady down there as well as his man down there..

i burried my face in his chest.. i always do this.. guess i dont want him to see my face after a session... he pulled my face back and i hid my face with my hands..

him : please look at me..

i shook my head into a no...

him ; please...

i slightly let my hands off and looked at me..

he kissed my forehead and kissed my lips..

him : am starting to worry, who thought you that??

me : what??

him : what you did to me...

me : guy, i have a phone, data and porn videos are free...

him : hahahahah, look at this.. a fellow village girl watches porn...

me : mxm..

he laughed...

him : i hate this porn videos, now you made me feel powerless..

me : you paid your revenge, so please..

him : hahaha.. hows the taste of your own

medicine?? nice huh??

me : mxm..

we laughed..

[12/13, 21:54] Zozaness: The villagegirl an the
playboy: arranged marriage

60

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

****nompilo****

its friday.. we just got out of our last class.. we came

out a bit early today so the crew was standing at the gate...

i have told max to fetch me at the campus gate even on friday.. i am not willing to mess my marriage because of friends... so i dont chill with them anymore.. well in the morning i go straight to class, during the day am with mase and sbahle, at lunch time we are joined by nthabiseng, then afterschool i chill with them at the gate untill max comes...

we got to the gate.. nthabiseng, ma11 and daddy were at the gate... we got there and greeted..

ma11 : jho, we have been waiting..

mase : hai suka..

daddy : am sure the others are at the shop, lets go..

sbahle : yall can go, i am going to stand here with nompilo untill her driver comes.. cant leave her alone..

nthabi : kanti driver wahao is not picking you up ko shop??

me : nop, i asked him to pick me up here..

ma11 : why??

me : after what happened, i realised that you can never trust anyone.. people can just do stuff to you for no reason...

daddy : mara kg vele inja.. i still dont understand why he would such a thing...

ma11 : something doesnt add up... remember all the girls that kg slept with?? he never spiked their drink, he just got them drunk and slept with them.. and all of them were girls that like to feel themselves.. manje now?? hai..

mase : hai suka, kg is crazy nje.. he is sex bipholar...

we laughed.. sex bipholar?? hai mase mara...

sbahle : worse part he knows that mpilo is married...

mase : worse...

as we were standing there, we saw the rest of them.. (lebo, lerato, katlego, kg, sbu, siya and the rest) coming towards us..

mind you, the only people who know about this kg issue is me, mase, sbahle, nthabi, ma11 and daddy...

the rest know nothing...

as they came closer, i noticed that kg was leaning on sbu, he was walking as if he was beaten up.. he had his hand on his stomache...

when he was now here.. i saw that he was bleeding.. he was beaten.. whoever beat him really messed him up.. i know that what kg did to me was wrong but this guy had to be taken to hospital... like yesterday... he could have broken a rib or have internal bleeding.. i read about these stuff, i mean i study medicine...

we all looking at kg in surprise and question to what happened..

ma11 : and then?? kg??

sbu : we were at the shop waiting for yall.. a car pulled up, we didnt really pay attention because cars pass and park there.. 1 guy got out he looked really big.. he came to us to ask who was kg.. kg asked them who was asking.. the guy asked again and kg told them that he is kg.. they asked if he knew nompilo.. he said yes.. he pulled him to the other

side of the car where the other 2 were.. we wanted to follow but we saw them talking to him.. kg then got in the car and after a while they opened the door and closed.. when they drove away, we saw kg on the floor, he was bleeding, in pain and couldnt move..

me : why didnt you take him to the doctor??

siya : he refused..

i looked at kg, he looked at me then he looked at nthabiseng..

kg : (speaking in pain) nthabi, i was told to tell you that you are lucky you are a girl, or else you couldve been next.. but they said you should prepare for your punishment is coming.. no one messes with nompilo and gets away with it...

me : what??? wait, what??

mase : sorry??

sbahle : nompilo??

ma11 and daddy held their head and started making sounds like they know the meaning of this.. mina i was lost, what is my name doing in this mess..

lebo : nompilo?? kg, what are you saying??

kg : nompilo.. am sorry about what i did to you at the party, i was wrong.. i know that they probably told you that i am the one who spiked your drink and wanted to sleep with you just to gain clout.. just to tell everyone at school that i have slept with a girl that has been rejecting everboy... but thats not true..

after kg said this he looked at nthabi.. why is kg always looking at nthabiseng.. did she mabye organise those guys to rough us kg for me?? why??

me : if its not true kg, then why did you do it??

kg : see, all this was nthabisengs idea... she is the one who spiked your drink not me...

everyone : what??

we all looked at nthabiseng, she looked down...

mase : nthabiseng?? sies..

ma11 : nthabi??

she just kept quite, not saying a thing...

daddy : but you had the unregular eyedrops and

kodin...

kg : nthabi gave them to me in the morning.. she said the eyedrops was nompilos.. i believed her because nompilo vele has eye problems.. then she said kodin is to mix.. well i didnt see a problem because we all do mix kodin in our drinks for an extra push.. but to kow that shes mixin kodin with eyedrops.. that i didnt know.. and i also didnt realise that its unregular eyedrops...

sbahle : so, wena you saw an opportunity to sleep with her??

kg : no.... nthabi said i should sleep with her, so that her wedding could be over....

my tears were threatening to come out... i couldnt believe this was happening.. well i knew that nthabiseng never liked me, mara this was way too much...

me : (crying) nthabiseng?? why??

she didnt say anything... she just continuously looked down...

me : (crying) why?? whY??

mase : calm down mmata...

mase held me in her arms as i took some breathing....

ma11 : why would nthabi do that??

kg : she said she wanted her to be thought a lesson of keeping her hands, eyes and laughs to herself as a married man.. and that you didnt appreciate your husband, busy flirting with varsity boys.. so she was saving nompilos husband from hurt....

daddy : nthabiseng???

nthabiseng : (crying ashamed, still looking down) i am sorry.. i was just jelouse that nompilo was wanted by all the guys here.. and even though she was married yall still flirted with her.. well i got extra jelouse when she started being close with ma11..

ma11 looked at her surprised... well i wasnt listening much..

we stayed there a little longer.. kg still grinching in pain, nthabiseng still ashamed and crying.. the

others shocked and surprised... mase and sbahle were just comforting me since i was also just not well.. how could nthabi do this...

after a while all tears were dry, i was just standing there just starying in space waiting for max....

as i was thinking the thought came... kg was beaten and nthabi is next.. wait a minute... could this be siyas work?? becouse apart from us, siya is the only one who knows about this.. and kg said that these people said that no one messes with me and gets away with it... SIYA!!!!!!

me : kg?? did you see these peoples faces??

kg : yes... 2 of them... the driver never looked back.. he just said no one messes with you and gets away with it..

me : what specific this does the driver have??

kg : he had a watch, it was silver with the black surroundings...

me : anything more specific??

kg : ohhh, he has a dove tattoo on the back of his

neck....

ohhhhh shamit.... it was siya.. mara siya... i stared at him for the longest but never said anything... no one coughed on...

max arrived.. i moved to get in the car.. but i couldn't leave kg in this state, especially if i know that siya did this...

i opened the door..

me : max, could we please transport someone to the hospital??

max : i don't think siya would like that...

me : please, he needs help...

max : ohhh owk...

i then opened the back door....

me : sbu, please come with kg.. we're taking him to the hospital..

sbu : owk..

kg : am owk..

me : i wasnt asking you, i was telling you.. sbu
please come with him..

kg hesitated a bit but ended up getting in the car...
we drove to the hospital... max and sbu helped kg in
the hospital...

since its a public hospital the nurses took long
before attending to us... after they took him in we
stood outside her ward...

sbu : thanks nompilo.. thanks sir..

max : sure..

me : its not a problem.. will you be fine if i leave yall
here??

sbu : yah, i will call my his pops and he will come
fetch us..

me : great.. bye..

sbu : bye.. thanks again..

we walked out and drove home...

as we got in the car.. maxs phone rang.. he
answered...

him : hello..

.....

him : am on my way sir..

.....

him : we first passed to the hospital..

.....

him : nompilo asked that we do..

.....

him : no shes owk, it was one of her friends..

.....

him : yes, a guy..

.....

him : owk sir...

.....

him : bye sir...

he hung up and drove on.. i knew it was siya who called.. so i didnt even ask...

we got home.. i went in the house.. i bumbled into mamzondo going out...

me : sanibonani ma...

her : yebo mtanami.. how was school??

me : not bad...

her : oh owk mtanami, let me get going..

me : bye ma..

she left and i closed the door.. i hurried to the living room in anger... well i assumed that he would be in there... and i assumed right.. he was watching tv...

me : really siya?? really??

he looked at me and continued looking at the tv...

me : siya you didnt have to do what you did, ugumshaya pho...

him : i didnt touch him, if i did he wouldve been dead by now...

me : you sent guys to rough him up while you just sit there enjoying his pain..

him : listen..

he stood up coming to me..

him : i will deal with whoever messes with my woman owk... i will kill if i have to... no one messes with my woman and walks free without learning a lesson.. understood??

me : but that was not the way to deal with him...

him : is that why you took him to the hospital??

me : he was badly hurt, i couldnt leave him there, knowing who caused this.. plus he couldve had a broken rib or internal bleeding.. do you know what that means??

him : am sure you wanna tell me...

me : you dont feel remorse do you??

him : would you feel remorse if a guy almost rapes nonhlanhla or mbali??

i looked down...

him : exactly...

me : what about nthabiseng?? what you gonna do to

her?? beat her aswell??

him : i dont beat girls..

me : you going to send your guys to do it??

him : i dont like violence on woman, i also dont wish it on anyone.. why do you think i didnt rough up those bullies of yours in high school??

me : so what you going to do??

him : am not sure yet...

me : can you please not hurt her...

he came to me, looked in my eyes...

him : (chuckled)...

he then kissed my forehead and left the room...

i stood there, defeated... i dropped my bag on the couch and sat down with my forehead in my hands...

[12/13, 21:56] Zozaness: The villagegirl an the playboy: arranged marriage

61

.

- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .

****weeks after****

****nthabiseng****

its been weeks.. its almost exam time..

i have been living under fear wondering what kind of punishment i am getting since the people who roughed up kg said i should prepare..

i have been looking over my shoulder for weeks now and with the new developments that came, am even more scared..

i have been having simptoms of pregnancy since the past few weeks.. i never really took a decition to test

and see but today am doing it... i had bought a pregnancy test yesterday afterschool but i was too scared to do it alone.. but i seem to forget that i have also lost some friends because of what i did to nompilo...

but am gonna have to do it.. i came with it to school.. so lunch time am going to do it...

hours passed and it was lunch time..

i pass nompilo, mase and sbahle walking.. well i have been sitting in the toilet everyday at lunch, crying.. i just never thought the conserquenses would be this hush...

i went in the toilet and hesitated making the test.. but finally i did it and waited..

the wait seemed very long.. i was very nervouse.. i was waiting for the answer that i already knew but hoping i get a different answer...

its been long now.. am looking at the test.. its facing down.. i want to turn it and see the final results but am scared.. scared for being proved right... i really hope am not pregnant...

i take the test.. my tear drops before i even now
what the test says.. my head already knows but my
heart is hoping otherwise...

i check and immediatly i drop down and cry heavily...
am pregnant....

what hurt the most was not that am pregnant.. but
because of who the father of this child was..

kg would never take responsibility, and knowing that
hes a player, makes my heart even heavier.. but
mostly is how i became pregnant...

kg and i were never in a relationship.. remember the
time we had a deal that kg should sleep with
nompilo to ruin their marriage?? well i had to do
something for him to agree.. he didnt just jump to
the idea....

i had to sleep with him that day before he could
sleep with nompilo.... well i did...

its not like i was a virgin and i gave him my virginity..
and its not like i was already dating someone... i was
single and not a virgin so why not..

so i slept with him... he was the only guy i slept with this year... the last time i slept with someone was last year december, just before we broke up...

so since he is the only person i slept with, he is deffinatly the father of the child...

i have been crying for long now.. i didnt go to the rest of my classes.. i just sat in the toilet and cried.. i cried till i didnt have tears left....

just after a long while.. i checked the time and it was passed 2.. i have been in the toilet for a whole 3 hours..

i head out.. i stand at the exit were kg and them come out all the time...

i saw kg coming out holding a girl.. am not hurt.. i just stand there and wait... lebo and them just pass me.. am used to it now.. even though it hurts my heart that they nolonger talking to me, i still think i deserve it...

i see that kg is not minding me.. so i walk to him and his girl..

me : i need to talk to you...

girl : sorry sisi.. cant you see we are talking??

me : hakebuwe lewena tu.. (am not talking to you)

girl : heeee... kg, stop me before i kick this flozzy girls butt..

me : am a flozzy girl?? bitch watch your mouth owk..

girl : did you just call me a bitch??

i ignored her and looked at kg...

i feel a hot slap across my face.. WHAT??

kg

i am watching these girls fighting... they pulling each others hair, they scraching eachother its a mess.... i try pulling them away but instead am getting the hits.... the students gather around and start taking videos..

nompilo, mase, sbahle and the whole crew also come to see the fight... daddy and other gents comes to help separate the 2...

ma11 takes manana(the girl i was with) away and

sbu holds nthabiseng.. i am hesitating on were to go..
i am just starying at the crowd nje...

the crowd separates and am faced with nthabiseng...

me : nthabiseng.. how could you come all the way
from were you were to come couse a fight??

her : mabye if you knew that you about to be a father,
you would learn to stop bitching around and be a
respectfull man..

she threw something at me and left... the crew
where all supprised.. i picked that and looked at it.. it
was a pregnancy test.. but what was it saying...

i looked at it confused.. lebo asked to see.. then she
said..

he : nthabiseng is pregnant...

i looked shocked.. i didnt know what to do.. could it
be my baby... is that what she meant??

i quickly ran to her.. she catches a taxi home so i am
sure she is at the robots waiting for a taxi...

luckily i found her still standing.. i saw a taxi
approaching.. i ran faster and stoped her before she

could stop the taxi...

me : nthabiseng...

she looked at me.. she had tears on her face.. i must be honest, i dont know why i ran after her becouse i dont believe her but at the same time i have a feeling that shes honest... becouse on that day we didnt use a protection.. but she did say she will have morning after pills...

me : how could this be?? you cant be pregnant...

her : i also wish i wasnt...

me : didnt you take your morning after pills??

her : no, i forgot...

me : damn nthabiseng... how could you...

her : am sorry owk..

me : i have always been carefull, why now??

she kept quite...

me : are you sure its my child??

her : what??

me : i mean if you could sleep me just to have a deal to ruin her marriage, how would i know you didnt sleep with another guy for some reason....

out of nowhere i felt a hot slap coming across my face.. i held my cheek in disbelief and looked at her...

her : nx.. you disgust me...

she stoped a taxi and left...

****nthabiseng****

i cant belief kg said that.. my heart was painful... i was crying in the taxi...

people were looking at me funny, but i didnt care... i paid...

me : 1

they passed the money...

i put my earphone on and just let my tears fall.. i was sitting at the backseat... i got my change back...

i have no idea how my parents will react to this.. but am sure they will kick me out....

nthabiseng what have you done??? could this be that

mabye God is punishing me for what i did to
nompilo??

not only am i pregnant, but the childs father is a
player and i have to now drop out of varsity

[12/13, 21:57] Zozaness: The villagegirl an the
playboy: arranged marriage

62

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

****nompilo****

i am in the kitchen, earphones on... i was listening to
beyonce dangerously inlove.. i didnt know much of

the words but i knew this the type of song i would dedicate to siya....

the way i love siya its soooo much it even got dangerous.... i mean i love him to the core.. i feel butterflies when he touches me, kisses me even when he talks.. not to mention when he wispers sweet words to me...ooooooooohhhhhhhhhhhhhh
mmmmmmmmmmmyyyyyyyyyyyyyyy
ggggggooooooooosssssssshhhhhhhh kunzima...

as i was singing the song, he came and tickled me from the back... i jumped.. he laughed...

him : you cant be singing like that you breaking the windows..

me : you will replace them..

him : eeehhh, imagine...

we laughed...

me : siya, listen to this song..

he listened to it.. he wasnt even paying attention because he would do stuff on the side..

he reached for a bowl, and poured cereal then ate it

like crisp...

him : nice... but why am i listening to it again??

me : siya...

i hit his shoulder...

him : what??

me : uyabora.. you supposed to be listening to the words..

him : ohh i heard it repeat dangerously inlove..
ncooooooo mamas uyangthanda..(mamas loves me).. ncooooo

this dude started acting like a young girl being asked out by her crush... really??

me : haibo siya...

him : what??

he continued eating his cereals

him : tell me, are you ready for exams??

me : yah, am gonna nail this semester...

him : i could be your tutor...

me : my tutor?? hao ngafaila (i will fail)

him : hao, if i could be a tutor at your school, am sure guys would hesitate going to my class but girls will come even if they are sick..lol

me : well.. then there would be a murder scene every day and it would happen to be a girl....

him ; hahahahahahah...lol...

me : but if i could be a a receptionist at your company.. you would have new clients everyday.. especially male clients...

him : damn, you think i would even allow you to be a receptionist ??

me : wouldnt you??

him : nop..

he laughed...

i finished making breakfast.. so we made our way to the living room..

i had made both of us food...

when we got to the living room he placed his cereal

on the table and ate the food i made for him...

after eating he reached for his cereals again...

me : haibo siya.. such mix??

him : manje??

i laughed...

he hit me with some of his cereals and attempted to run but i grabed his leg before he even got a chance....

me : huh!! you have jokes neh??

i grabed some cereals and hit him with them... this became a cereal fight....

him : owk.... owk.... owk... am sorry...

me : i didnt hear you??

him : am.. am... sorry...

me : good boy...

we sat straight and he threw the last bit of cereal at me..

i just looked at him...

him : (singing) sorry, i aint sorry, sorry, i aint sorry...
(beyonce sorry)

i watched him sing this "sorry" song.... and just let
him be.. because if i could start it, it will never end...

me : guess what?? am not cleaning this mess...

he looked at me shocked, i guess i got him... he then
pouted..

him : whos going to clean it?? me??

me : i dont know, but it aint me...

him : owk i will clean it, then you, you making lunch..

i looked at him with my mouth open..

him : and dinner..

i opened my mouth even more... he laughed..

him : look a bee...

i jumped up.. he laughed...

me : udlala kabi yaz (you play dirty you know)...

i left him in there..... leaving him dead laughing on
the couch....

chief

i was sitting with my wife in our room deep in thoughts....

her : baba, whats happening??

me : nothing maxulu, am just in my thoughts...

her : is this about the chieftancy again??

me : **sigh** i am not getting young, and judging by siyas actions, its like hes forgetting that he will be stepping up soon...

her : what do you mean ??

me : he has allowed nompilo to go to varsity.. shes going to take years to finish...

her : am sure she can still study while being a wife.. shes doing it now..

me : but this time she will be the chiefs wife... now there its different... kanti why was i only blessed with 1 son?? out of 3 wives i get 1 son?? no man..

her : guess i was the only lucky one to give you a son, that is a duplicate to his father...

me : hes not like me...

her : he is as stubborn as you, ignorant as you but mostly loving as you...

me : kodwa maxulu... how did you feel when i married a second wife??

her : very hurt, unloved... but my love for you kept me strong...

me : the third one??

her : same thing..

me : you think makoti could be strong??

her : i dont know.. she looks fregile... very fregile... she might not be as strong as me....

me : but then if she loves my son, then she will have to be strong...

her : what if siya rejects being the next chief??

me : he cant... he has to..

her : the way they grew into love it amazed me...

me : yah.. and the way siya has changed... its new...

her : i cant believe siya has grown so much..

me : i just keep praying that everything goes according to plan..

her : kuzolunga baba (its going to be owk baba)

i layed down and held my wife.. i was still thinking about it.. but eventually i slept....

[12/13, 21:58] Zoaness: 63 (I never forgot y'all, never will)

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

****siya****

its the 14th of june today and it is our 2nd anniversary.. we didnt really celebrate it last year because it slipted my mind.. plus mamas was busy with exams... plus i dont think she even knows the date of our anniversary..

not that i blame her.. phela we have been very up, down, cold, warm, side and side with all this relationship... i mean at first i treated her like a maid and then from being a maid to being a friend then being a lil sis then finally being a wife....

you probably asking, " which day did you choose to be your anniversary??".. well remember when i told her that am inlove with "mihlali"?? and it turned out that she is "mihlali".. well that was the day i told her that i love her.... (no thats not our aniversary date)....

remember when she told me that she couldnt see me as a "husband" becouse she was used to me being her friend, big brother??...i let her be.. even though i felt hurt, i managed to understand her situation...

now remember a day were she poured me with flour

while i was sleeping and i stood up irritated and asked her why she did that she said she loves me then she ran..

i was shocked but knew that mabye she just loves me as a brother.. so i ran after her an cought her and she was laughing.. we had a moment and i kissed her, i thought she would pull out but she kissed back.. then after she declared her love to me.. now that was when we first became a couple... that day was the 14th of june.. the year she was doing grade 11....

she wouldnt know becouse we started off at a wrong state..

now if you were paying attention, you would remember that when we first came to stay in pe, i used to take pics of mamas without her knowing.. then look at them before i sleep.. this was the time mrs khaya was still our maid and we were still "friends"...

so all these pictures i have printed and i have pasted them all over the wall... i guess i wanted us to look

back at were we came from....

i also had some flowers on the floor leading to the living room.. i had decorated the table in the living room.. i had some flowers on the table, some nice snacks, juice and all the goodies.. i also have bought a present for her...

mamas is at school.. but will be back around 11am or 12pm.. i think she is writing a test today...

the tv was playing channel O.. just some fresh music there...

mamzondo was also helping me to set this up before she leaves...

we got done...

her : you must really love her hay??

me : alot ma, nompilo has really changed me...

her : so i hear....

me : yah.. she is a blessing that i will never let go..

her : indeed you need to keep her close becouse girls like her are very rare..

me : i will ma...

we heard a honk outside...

her : that must be max telling me he is here... i must get going.. goodluck my boy..

me : thank you ma..

her : bye my son..

me : bye ma...

nompilo

i just got out of the car and said my goodbye, then i went inthe house bumping into mamzondo..

me : saubona ma..

her : yebo mtanami

me : i see you off already..

her : yes, well unomana gave me an early day..

me : what a generous guy he is..

we laughed...

her : bye my daughter

me : bye ma...

she left and i went in the house... siya was standing on the stairs. flowers on the floor..

i looked at siya and he had a smile on his face... but i was lost as to what was going on..

me : siya??

him : mhm??

me : whats going on??

him : are you gonna come to me and greet me or stand there and ask questions..??

i went to him still looking around.. i went to him and hugged him.. he squized me and then we kissed..

me : did you miss me??

him : nop..

me : mxm..

i playfully hit him.. he laughed..

him : come, let me go run you a bath..

me : mhm!! plus i need that...

we went to the room and he ran a bath for me and i went to bath.. after the bath, i lotioned myself and got dressed in any comfortable clothing...

i saw a note on the bed.. "am waiting in the living room" it had a kiss drew on it.. i smiled and went down to the living room....

as i got in the living room, i was surprised... all the pictures on the wall.. the roses on the table.. the food on the table.. haibo, what are we celebrating??

as i was looking at the pictures i laughed... were did siya get these pictures?? i dont remember taking all these pictures and also some of them are from when we were still in kzn at his fathers yard... and it looks like someone was taking them without me knowing becouse some pics i was laughing, some seriouse, some i was running.. hai all those stuff...

me : siya?? and then??

him : come sit down..

i went to sit while looking at everything.. i am amazed...

me : haibo, siya.. what is going on??

him : happy anniversary..

me : hahahahah... anniversary??

him : yes, 2 year anniversary...

me : is this the real date we started dating or you just chose a date??

him : its real...

me : which day was it??

him : take a guess..

me : my lobola day??

him : nop...

me : the day we became friends??

him : no, that would be called friendiversary...

me : friendiversary? lol... owk... huh....(thinking)...

him : think about your first kiss...

me : huh.... ohhhh.... the day i poured you with flour and told you i love you??

him : yep, that day...

me : woow, you have a elephants memory...

him : that day was the blessing of my life.. i will never forget it...

me : ncoooooo.. love you ...

him : i love you more....

we kissed for a moment....

me : these pictures, how did you get them??

him : i used to took them secretly then look at them everynight before i sleep..

me : really?? lol.... when was this??

him : the time we were still in kzn...

me : so you had feelings for me before we even came to pe??

him : lol... (laughs)..

me : yet you were busy with other girls.... remember when i cought you with mrs khaya??

he looked down brushing his head.. i laughed...

him : dont remind me.. i was so embarrassed...

me : what were you thinking though?? lol...

him : no comment...

we laughed...

me : what about when i saw bongies panties under the table??

him : jhoo.... hai i guess i was never carefull hay...

me : never...

him : eash...

we laughed...

me : mara, you were a player hle... i remember the first day i went to your house, you were not there...then at night i heard voices, i swore i was in a wrong house..

him : lol...really??

me : only to know it was your "friend" ...

him : i had to cover up moss..

me : then you introduce me as a maid...

him : i didnt know what to say....

we laughed...

me : hai.. mara wena...

him : atleast i changed hao...

me : yes atleast you changed.. for me...

him : actually you changed me..

me : vele how did you fall inlove with this skinny,
unatractive, old fashioned girl??

him : hahahaha, hai.. dont start...

me : thats what you used to call me moss..

him : i know, and i regret it.. but its all in the past..

me : i really thought you would never notice me.. that
i would never be your type..

him : you are now..

me : i wonder what happened..

him : you had something that all the girls i dated
lacked... you were innocent, well mannered,
respectful, great personality, self respect, self love,

great sense of humore.. and you just made me be in peace...

me : am glad...

him : from were we come from its almost unbelievable that we here now.. its unexplainable...

me : its really amazing hay...

he held my hand...

him : you had a choice to go out and find someone else since i was also busy with girls but you chose you be patient with me... thats one thing not all girls would do....

me : you changed in time, if you had taken time, i wouldve given my viginity to someone else...

he looked at me all shocked...

i laughed...

me : am joking.... i would have waited even more...

he leaned in and we kissed again for a while....

him : we have really been through alot... i have put you through alot... but i appreaciate that you stayed...

me : am also glad that after my flows of varsity life you still understood and forgave me...

him : after all the forgiveness you gave me... this is just the beginning...

we smiled at each other...

him : i love maxulu...very much..

me : i love you babxulu.. very much...

we kissed again.. abit longer.. almost leading to something else...

me : we better eat, before flies finish the food..

him : lol, yah.. plus am starving...

me : makes the 2 of us.... but that doesnt mean i am letting you free from this guilt..

him : what guilt??

me : you were charged with "secretly taking pictures of me" so i must punish you...

him : well if its the bedroom punishment then am down...

he gave me the naughty look...

i hit him playfully..

me : eeew siya... thats nasty...

he laughed....

him : man abuse...

me : mxm....

[12/13, 21:59] Zozaness: continuation...

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

****nompilo****

we finished eating... we had our starters which is my favourite and my siblings favourite.. (rice, chicken and

gravy)... then we had our dessert (ice cream, strawberries and chocolate)... then had snacks and drinks...

him : i have something for you...

me : what is it??

he reached out from his side and it was a paper bag...

him : again happy anniversary...

me : siya, what is it??

him : open it...

i opened it and there was a box inside... i took the box out, it was long and had a ribbon on top... i opened it....

me : ohhhhhh nooooo siya.....

him : you like it??

me : like it?? i love it.... its so beautiful...

i hugged him very tightly..

me : thank you....

him : am glad you like it... let me put it on for you...

i gave it to him... it was a necklace... it was so beautiful.. and it looks so expensive.. must have cost a fortune..

me : thank you...must have cost a fortune...

i kept looking at it...

him : anything for you mamas.. i would even rob a bank for you...

me : really now??

him : am dead serious...

me : lets bomb one tomorrow...

him : 10pm

me : am bonnie

him : am clyde

us : bonnie and clyde..

we laughed.. mind you i only saw that movie this year, and i just fell inlove with that couple.. very strong....very inlove....

.

.

*****nthabiseng****

i was woken up by a bang on the door...

voice : nthabiseng open up... (knocking) nthabiseng!!
bula ha wena (open here)...

it was my mom.. i went and opened the door...

me : ras ekana mama (to much noise ma)...

her : ketladirang haosabule (what should i do if you
dont open up)???

i went back to bed... she went to open the curtains..
the sun was too much so i covered myself with
blankets...

her : nare keng kawena?? (whats wrong with you)??

me : nothing ma, am just tired.....

her : tired?? everyday?? nthabiseng, are you
pregnant??

my heart skipped a beat.. how would she have

known??...

me : (clears throat) no ma.. how could you think that??

her : i was just asking.. phela you always tired, moody and all that stuff....

me : am sure its only becouse am on my periods...

mom knows i get moody when am on my periods...

me : as for tiredness, ke skolo (its school).. since di exam ditsimulutse kgakerobala.. (since the exams started i dont sleep) i keep studying...

her : ao, my daughter.. dont over study yourself.. you also need to rest and have focus....

me : will do mama...

her : get up, we going shopping today.... tshepiso is almost done...

tshepiso is my older sister...

me : owk ma...

she left and i laid back and took a deep breath... that was a close call.. i am going to have to do

something about this baby soon... since kg doesnt want to be involved then i guess its my call...

i then got up, took a shower and got done.... then tidied my room... i went down...

we got in dads car and we all went shopping...

we were in pep.. i wasnt sure what mom wanted, but i was caught by my sister looking at baby clothing...

her : nthabiseng?? why you checking up baby clothing?? whos expecting a baby??

me : mhm.. no one.. just imagining how i once used to fit in this...

her : lol, hai things you think about....lol... mom is already out lets go..

we left and checked other shops... as we were done and heading to the car.. i passed a paper on the pole written "abortion?? we got you".. i checked my parents and my sister and they were minding their business.. so i pulled that paper and placed it in my pocket...

we drove back home and all i thought about was the

decision am about to make...

we got home..

i headed to my room but stopped by my mom...

her : hao, nthabiseng.. arnt you going to help us unpack this.??

i went down.. and helped them pack... i was just mostly in silence...

i got done and went to my room...

.

.

****tshepiso****

something was wrong ka nthabiseng... but i just couldnt figure out what it was..

me : ma?? whats wrong ka nthabiseng??

her : she says its school, plus she is on her periods...

me : mhm...

i was still not convinced.. kana nthabiseng doesnt eat much anymore, she picks food, she is always

sleeping and shes always moody...

this girl must be pregnant.. i must ask her but not today.. today i will let her rest.. or mabye tonight...

.

.

****nthabiseng****

i sat on the bed and took that page out.. i hesitated on calling, i was nervouse.. but its a matter of time before someone finds out...

i dialed the number and it rings...

voice : good morning.. mr shibu speaking...

me : (swallowing a lump)...

voice : hello??

me : hay, you speaking to lebohang..

voice : hay lebohang, how can i help you??

me : (nervouse) huh... i.. i would like to make an appointment.. for.... help..

voice : oh owk... do you have a paper and a pen with

you, so that i can give you the address??

me : please hold on a sec..

i took a pen from my bag and took the paper that had the number..

me : yes..

he told me the address and i wrote it at the back of that paper...

me : so which day should i come??

voice : anyday from 8am to 4pm...

me : so how much would it be??

voice : its R2.500..

me : oh owk..

voice : will that be all??

me : yes, thank you..

voice : goodbye lebohang..

i hung up... it was a men speaking...

i took a deep breath again and laid down... i started thinking how i was going to get R2,500... i mean

mama is going to ask questions about were i am taking it..

or mabye i could ask my sister....

.

.

siya

i was feeling quite tired.. i have always been tired these past days i dont know why..

mamas is in the shower and nna am falling asleep... well i cant help but to give in...

.

.

nompilo

i got out the shower with a towal wrapt arround my body...

me : papas, remember you said.....

i looked at this guy and he is sleeping.. haibo siya?? i thought we agreed on movie night.... well guess he

is really tired.. i wonder whats keeping him busy at work for him to come home tired everyday... huh!!

well i get in my pjs and get in the sheets.. i guess am watching the movie alone...

i chose a movie and placed the earphones and watched.

[12/13, 22:00] Zozaness: 64

.

.

.

.

.

.

****3 weeks ****

****nthabiseng****

i woke up knowing its D day today.. well i have been is verbal fight with kg... for almost 2 weeks now.. he still doesnt believe me that am carrying his child yet

he keeps calling me to check up on me.. he says he doesnt know what to believe anymore...

well last of last week i asked mom money for an "outing" am going to with my friends, so i need some new clothing and money for spending.. so i managed to get her to agree on R3000.. and she said she would give me last weekend but she didnt so she said today surely she will... today is friday so am supposed to go to the shooping for tommorow's "outing" today but actually am just going to end this pregnancy....

i got up, got dressed as a person whos going out so that she doesnt jump anything....

i found her busy cleaning her room and dad just left, tshepiso was probably also at work or still sleeping...

me : mama!!

her : mhm...

me : i need to get going now.. my friends are waiting for me...

her : ohhhh owk.. but can i trust you with my card

mara, kana i dont have cash...

me : you can mama, i wont take all your money...

her : better stick to R3000... kana its going to click on my phone..

me : hao, mama..

her : just reminding you...

she gave me her card and her pin... i went back to my room...

i took the page that had the address, i wrote the address on my phone on google maps and saved the location.. well i had some rands on me so i could afford a taxi to go and come back...

i went out biding goodbye...

ka comba taxi and ask the driver if he could drop me off at the location.. he said he couldnt but he would get me in a taxi that can..

indeed at we got to a place further he stoped a taxi for me and i got in.. he explained to him were i was going and he left.. i was sitting infront...

driver : dont you know were you are going??

me : huh, no sir..

driver : but you have the address??

me : yes sir..

driver : where is the location??

i looked down not telling him...

driver : dont worry am not going to kidnap you or anything.. i just thought mabye i know the place and i will directly get you there...

me : this is were i am going...

i showed him from my phone and he looked at the location while also looking at the road...

him : ohh, its not really far...

me : oh owk..

him : so whats your name??

me : huh, lerato...

him : ohh lerato, you really look beautiful..

me : thanks..

am busy looking down, like am also feeling uncomfortable... am stressing about my life here and heres a taxi driver taking his chances....

him : dont be shy..

me : mhm..

him : so, can i have your number??

me : huh!! sho...

i gave him wrong numbers.. i guess i was just pushing the convo so that he could be generouse enough to drop me off at the right place..

before he could do anything.. he stoped the taxi...

him : this is it.. that building is the building you going to...

me : are you sure??

him : yes.. you can ask around...

me : oh owk thank you...

him : i will call you tonight owk??

me : owk..

as i got off i rolled my eyes.. if only he knew its wrong numbers...

i asked around and i was directed to this weird building.. i went to the 5th floor and looked for room 56...

the more i got in the building the more i would get nervous.. i wasn't sure if i wanted to this but i had no choice... this baby is going to stop a lot of things of me...

i knock on the door and a man opens up...

me : hey, am lebohang... am here on an appointment i made..

him : oh yes lebohang.. please come in...

there were already 2 girls in the room.. one was told to be in the curtained side.. and 1 was sitting next to me...

i sat there and he went to attend to the one in the area...i then spoke to the one sitting next to me...

me : you also here to make an abortion huh??

she nodded...

me : can i ask why??

her : am only in grade 8 i cant have a baby... plus my parents would kill me...

me : what about the father of the child??

her : he accepts responsibility and said he would drop out of school to take care of the baby.. but i dont want his life to stop because of me..

me : so he doesnt know that you here??

her : no..

she wanted to cry...

her : an you??

me : well the father of the kid doesnt want to take responsibility, plus my parents would also kill me.. and i dont want to drop out of varsity.. knowing my mom, she would would make me quite school and take care of my baby...

her : am sorry to hear that...

as we were speaking the girl in the area started screaming.. my heart raced and my tears flowed...

after a while the girl came out, and the girl next to me went inside... my heart was alone.. i was sweating... i dialled kgs phone.. he answered...

him : nthabiseng...

me : kg...'

we kept quite for a while...

him : did you just call to say my name..

i held my self from tearing up...

me : no.. i wanted to say that, you dont have to worry about the child anymore...

him : wait what do you mean..

me : it doesnt matter what i meant.. akere the child is not yours....

him : nthabiseng, are you thinking of abortion??

me : bye kg...

him : nthabiseng, nthabiseng, nthabiseng... please i beg you... please.. please nthabi... keyauqela joe... please dont do this...

me : its already late...

the girl in the area screamed and i just stayed silent as kg called my name begging me to tell me were i was...

me : sorry, i have to go...

him : nthabiseng please.. please nthabi dont do this....

i hung up and start crying....

.

.

****KG******

she just hung up on me.... ohhh no... what to do.. i have to act quickly before anything happens... nthabiseng cant do this....

i dialled mase, she must know were nthabiseng lives because they were bestfriends...

she answered..

her : kg..

me : mase, i need your help.. nthabiseng is about to do something crazy...

her : as if i care, i stoped carying for her after what she did to nompilo...

me : please mase, nthabiseng is about to do an abortion... and i need to find her before she does.. do you know where she lives??

her : ****sigh**** yes, i will send you her address...

me : thank you...

the message came through and i took my dads car without pemission and just drove away.. i only live with my dad.. and now he was not here.. i think he went to the store or something... i drove crazy directed by google maps navigating..

i got to a house and i ran to the door...

i knocked till my finger was burning...

a young lady came out....

her : hello...

me : hay, is this were nthabiseng stays??

her : yes.. but shes not here at the moment..

me : do you know were i can find her??

her : mabye at the mall, she said she was going to buy clothing...

me : no, she just called me now.. shes, shes carrying my baby.. and shes about to make an abortion as we speak..

her : what??

she came out and closed the door...

her : she is pregnant?? i knew it...

me : you didnt know??

her : no.. but i suspected.. let me go in her room, mabye i will find something...

i stood outside counting minutes and seconds.. the wait was long...

.

.

.

tshepiso

i ran to her room... lucky mom and dad were not home... her room was locked.. i have no choice but to break this door..

i bumbed it but no luck... i tried harder and still no luck.. untill i hit it even harder and it opened.. my poor side was now aching...

i looked around and saw a paper on the floor.. i picked it up and saw it written numbers.. and at the back its written a address, this must be were she went...

i ran to the guy at the door....

he quickly looked at me when i came out... i locked the door and looked at him giving him the paper....

he read it and looked at me...

me : lets go...

he went to the car..... he got in the car .. opened the door for me and i got in then we drove... i put the address in the google map app and it directed us...

him : lets hope we get there in time... we have

already lost time... its been 40 minutes since she called....

me : i pray she also didnt do it... i once asked her if shes pregnant, she said no.. its period moods and school.. but i knew she was lying...

him : its all my fault.. i didnt want to take responsibility now look how things turned out...

[12/13, 22:01] Zozaness: The villagegirl an the playboy: arranged marriage

continuation (very short insert)

- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .

****siya****

its hasnt even been a minute since i slept and already these people are calling me.... well aslong as its not mamas then i am not interested, they will call again if its important... i know its not mamas because shes here wathing movies... so i ignore the call and get back to sleep...

after a while i was now woken by mamas..

her : siya!! siya...

she was moving me...

me : mhm??

her : your phone...

me : switch it off...

her : its an office number...

me : so late??

her : yah....

me : switch it off.. its not working time, its family time...

her : lol.. you mean sleeping time..

me : haha, am tired...

i was talking with my eyes closed and still halve asleep.... i got up... whoever was calling finally got the massage...

i went to the toilet, then went downstairs, i needed something sweet.... am not a coffee fan but at this moment.. i need coffee....

Me : coffee??

Her : since when??

Me : today...

Her : are you pregnant??

I laughed so hard that she started laughing at me because i am laughing....

Me : really?? me?? pregnant?? hai wena....

we laughed again...

Her : you always sleeping and you eating weired stuff... now you drink coffee...

Me : uyangphaphela wena....

Her : mhm, we never know...

Me : should i bring you coffee or not??

Her : yes please...

Me : that was easy...

i went down made coffee and went up...

Me : here..

i handed her, her cup and we had some convo while having coffee...

***kg**

we got to the the building and i ran out of the car and went in the building.. i ran up the 5th floor and went to the room.. i just bused in.. the door was not locked...

there was no one... i looked around and i didnt see anyone... i went further in the area where the curtains were and immediatly my heart broke down....

me : no.... no.... nononononononono (crying)....

nthabiseng?? nthabiseng?? (screams)

NTHABISENG!!!!

[12/13, 22:02] Zozaness: The villagegirl an the
playboy: arranged marriage

65

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

****kg****

i was weak, crying, not knowing what to do... the last
time i cried like this was when my mother passed
away... i didnt believe this.. i wasnt thinking at that
moment, i was just looking at all this blood on the
bed and nthabiseng laying helplessly on the bed...

me : am sorry (crying)... i shouldnt have... please wake up.. please...

i had asked tshepiso to stay in the car and not come for her safety... i sat there next to the bed.. crying.. i had her blood on my hands...

i cried till i couldnt anymore.... i was now numb.. i was now just staring at her without a word or thought...

my phone rang, it was mase... i looked at it for the longest till it stopped ringing... she called again, i still didnt answer...

after a while of silence.. just tears having a race and emotions competing in me...

i took out my phone and called the police and the ambulance.... i dont why i bothered becouse she was already dead...

i sat there waiting for them to arrive.. in the next hour they arrived and got in with tshepiso... as tshepiso came she started crying....

her : NTHABISENG!! NTHABI!! (crying)

nthabiseeeeeeeeng..... tsoga...(scream)

nooo

the police woman held her back and i was asked to step back... i went back and stood at the door... it was i was watching everything in slow motion...

tshepiso fighting the police woman because she wanted to touch her sister.. the police going up and down with gloves on their hands gathering info and evidence.. and then the ambulance also arrived...

i slowly walked out and went to stand next to my car.... outside alot of people from ather buildings were standing outside, trying to see and know what happened.. i was also uncomfortable because they were looking at me as if i owe them answers..

i then got in my car and laid back.. i got deep in thought thinking "is this real"?? please tell me its a bad dream.. please tell me its a joke...

i sat there while tears still flowed down.. i looked at the mirror.. my eyes were red, i couldnt recognise myself, i wasnt sure who was the man i am seeing in the mirror... am supposed to see my reflection but i

see a very completely different man... yes he looks like me, but he was more broke...

after a while, i saw a police woman accompanying tshepiso to the car.. she was still crying, she was a mess... she came in the car in front.. i looked at her, she kept quite.. but tears never rested... her makeup was flowing off.. it was like rain was raining on her, thats how wet she was on her face because of tears...

after a long silence, just sniffing and breathing, she spoke....

her : it is all your fault...

me :.....

her : if you had just accepted your responsibility she wouldnt have had the abortion...

me :.....

her : i hate you..i hate you.... you killed my lil sister...

i never said a word, because she was right, it was all my fault.. i killed nthabiseng... if i had supported her she wouldnt have gone through all this...

tears were still swimming out of my eyes...

later 2 police men came and we got out the car...

p1 : goodwmoorning ... i am captain mohapi and this is detective soja...

i just nodded...

captain : we would like to ask that you go with us to the police station, we would like to take your statement...

i nodded....

we concluded the convo.. well i was just using my head to answer nje then we drove after one police car to the police station...

we got there and gave them our statements.. i told them everything, from the call to how i found out were she was...

i waited for tshepiso then i took her home... she was angry at me, very angry at me.. she didnt say a word.. just as i pulled up, she got out the car and went in the house.. so i drove back home...

.

.

.

****tshepiso****

i still couldnt believe that nthabiseng is no more..
and its all becouse of that stupid so call man...

i got in the house.. mom and dad were still not
home.. i went to nthabisengs room... i could smell
her.. i looked around.. i smiled alone, but that smile
turned to me cring...

i layed on her bed and held her pillow.. i closed my
eyes and cried myself to sleep....

.

.

.

*****kg*****

i got home, my dad was sitting outside.. well i didnt
car, he could kill me and i would still not care... i was
hurt that i lost my 1st born, but mostly i was hurt
that i killed nthabiseng through my ignorant, selfish

self... i cant believe it took nthabisengs death for me to see how disgusting i am to human kind...

i drove the car in the garage and got out.... i headed straight to my father, he was fuming in anger... but as he saw me approaching, hes face changed and now he seemed rather conserved...

him : katlego, whats wrong?? and the blood??

me : nothing dad...

him : nothing?? do you call the blood nothing?? do you call tears wanting to come out nothing?? do you call your red eyes nothing?? look at how a mess you are and you say nothing?? where were you??

me : i dont want to talk about it dad...

him : hai, haseTVing mo, utloyetsa bo "i dont want to talk about it" (hai, its not on here were you say " i dont want to talk about it").... you leave, you take my car without my pemission, you come back looking a mess with blood all over you.. boy, did you cause an accident??

me : no dad....

him : then explain the blood...

he was fixed at not letting this go until i tell him what's wrong.. so i explained everything to him.. he looked down, rubbed his head... then he slapped my head...

him : katlego are you done??

me :.....

him : kebowa lewena (am talking to you).....

me :.....

him : firstly you are 22, mara you act 12.. didnt you learn that you use protection??

me :.....

him : secondly, why didnt you support the girl??

me :.....

him : nkarabe... (answer me)...

he said that slapping me on the head again...

me : i was not sure if the baby is mine...

he looked at me in disbelief and looked down...

him : what did you tell her parents??

me : i didnt, i was with her sister when we found her..
she probably told her parents...

him : mara katlego... agggga mahn...

he left me there and went in the house... i went in the
house and went straight in my room.. i then went to
take a shower... i actually sat in the shower thinking
about today...

.

.

.

***later the day...

tshepiso

i was woken by my mom...

mom : haibo, nthabiseng hasokgutle?? (nthabiseng
is not back??)

me :.....

mom : and why are you sleeping in nthabisengs bed??

u know shes not going to like it...

me :....

mom : hai, and then wena?? whats wrong??

me : ma, i need to tell you something....

she sat down...

mom : keng baby.. whats wrong??

me : i need to tell you and dad...

mom : owwwwk... dad is in the livng room..

i got off the bed and we went to the living room....

mom : papa, tshepiso wants to talk to us...

dad : about??

mom : lets hear...

me : mama, wakgupula haoneure kguna le selo sesi
wrong ka nthabiseng?? (ma, do you remember when
you said theres something wrong with nthabiseng??)

mom : yah..

me : there was...

dad : keng??

me : she was pregnant..

mom : i knew it... papa i told you that girl could be pregnant... eash nthabiseng...

dad : nna kekasebe le mme in this house (i will not have a mother in this house)..

mom : papa!

dad : no.. she must go to the boy that impregnated her, and stay there...

mom : but papa, she is our child...

dad : hai woman, i say i will not have a mother in this house.. if she thinks shes old enough to be sleeping with boys then she can be old enough to find herself a place to stay and start working...

mom : mara papa.. i get that its wrong but we cant be that hard on her...

dad : its final... let me watch my news.. i wont be disrespected in my house...

i was listening to them squirling and i tried so hard

to hold back my tears but they failed me... and as i whiped them mama saw me...

mom : and now?? why you crying??

me : mama, nthabiseng didnt want money to buy clothing...

mom : huh??

me : she wanted it to make an abortion...

mom : WHAT????

dad also was shocked and looking at me...

me : she didnt go to the clinic, or hospital, she went to the backdoor people...

they both looked at me in shock.. i then started to cry very heavy...

mom : tshepiso... nthabiseng ukae?? (were is nthabiseng??)

she said this already developing tears in her eyes...

me :.... ma.....

mom : tshepiso, bua!! (talk)...

me : she passed away ma....

mom : no no no... tshepiso you lying... no no no...
papa!!

she started crying... she came to me and started
shaking me...

mom : tshepiso, where is nthabiseng?? where is
she?? tshepiso heee..... tshepiso hee...

i was hurt seeing my mom crying like this.. my heart
breaking down... dad had his head down in his
hands... he sat in that position as mom lay flat on
the floor crying... i was also crying trying to pick her
up..

[12/13, 22:03] Zozaness: The villagegirl an the
playboy: arranged marriage

66

- .
- .
- .
- .

.

.

***3 weeks**

siya

its early in the morning, like really early in the morning.. its saturday... nompilo has been upset about the passing of nthabiseng.. well i know i had said i would deal with her, but seems like she punished herself...

i feel sad, nompilo is really sad and very emotional about this.. its even worse because she passed on while they were all in not speaking terms.. now that is what made mamas so upset...

i woke up feeling a little dizzy.. my stomache was also a little painful.. i got up and i felt something building up.. i think am gonna throw up...

i rush to the bathroom... after i rinse my mouth...

something is up with me, i need to go to the doctor...

i mean this past weeks i have been really sick and weired.. even mamas notices it....

i remember weeks back.. we tried googling the possible sickness that i have.. so we searched "suffering from tiredness, back pains and nausea, whats wrong?" and google said its the symptoms of pregnancy.. mamas really laughed at me saying am pregnant.. mara google mara.. so since that day i just let it be... but now it worries me because instead of slowing down, it becomes worse...

i sat on the bed.....

i didnt notice that nompilo had also woken up...

her : nausea again??

me : ****sigh**** yah..

her : google said you pregnant, mabye you should call the doctor for check up...

me : you like joking neh? even in serouse situations??
what if i die??

her : die?? dont play like that...

she suddenly became upset..

me : am just kidding...

her : go joke outside not here...mxm..

she then laid and face her back on me.. i guess i touched a sensitive issue...

i leaned to her and kissed her...

him : am sorry mamas..

me : aaaaaaaaaaaaaaa

him : mamas?? whats wrong??

me : my stomache... aaaaaaaaaaaa.... i am having cramps....

him : seriously?? or you just joking...

me : mmmkkgmmmgkgmmgmgkgmmm
siyaaaaaaaa (screams in pain)...

i started panicking... what to do?? what to do?? yah..
warm water... i ran to the kitchen and got warm water with sugar then ran to her.. she was allover the bed...

i went to her and helped her drink the water... she continued still crying in pain...

me : is it your period pains...

her : i dont know (talking in pain)

i hugged her from the back while laying on the bed and rubbed her tummy... ohhhhhhhhh someone is getting fat... as i rubbed her tummy she slowly calmed down...

me : feeling better??

her : yah.. maybe i should go check if am not on my periods...

me : owk..

she stood up still in pain but she could walk so it wasnt really strong anymore... after minutes she came back..

me : and??

her : no, i havent started my periods..

she lay next to me again..

her : please continue rubbing my tummy, that felt relieving...

we lay how we were laying and i rubbed her tummy...

me : i think we should start uping our workout hours..

her : why??

me : you are gaining belly fat..

her : haaaaa..

me : serouse, like i can feel it...

i squeezed her belly so that i can prove to her that she has really gained bally fat..

her : ouch...

me : sorry, was that sore??

her : yes, kanti what was that for??

me : i wanted to.....

her : hai hai hai siya...

this woman, i didnt even finish my sentence... i dont like this grumpy mamas.. tjho i guess death really affects us differently...

after a while of rubing her, i was slowly falling back to sleep.. she has also been quite for a while so i peep to check if shes sleeping or not.. then i get that shes also sleeping... i then stop rubbing her and also fall asleep....

.

.

.

****kg****

****thinking about one of the conversations i had with nthabiseng on the phone****

me : mara nthabiseng just be honest..

her : kg, you the only guy i slept with this year.. am being honest..

me : i still dont believe you nthabi, you wanted to ruin nompilos life over jealousy, now you want to ruin mine??

her : you know what kg, go kill yourself...

me : you just mad that i wont fall in your trap... hello... nthabi.. nx...

.

i finished the small alcohol left in my 6th bottle of hunters... it was only 9am and am already halve way down town.. drunk...

me : barman!! bring me another bottle...

him : sir, i think you have had enough...

me : are you my father?? huh?? now stop acting like it and bring another bottle.. am paying remember.??

he went to get another bottle and gave it to me...

i opened it and started drinking it....

i kept replaying our conversations that i had with nthabiseng in my head and kept on rewinding the image i saw of her laying on the bed, legs wide open and blood all over the bed...

i kept drinking and drinking...

life was now meaningless, worthless, useless... i mean i killed nthabiseng.. not only her but i killed my 1st born aswell... i couldve been a father, even though i was not in a relationship with nthabiseng but atleast she wouldve been here.. with her family, friends...

i have robbed a family a daughter... i have robbed tshepiso a sister... i have robbed the crew a friend.. i have robbed myself a child.. i have robbed the

parents and my dad a grandchild..

see, i have robbed alot of people... now why should i live?? for what good reason?? huh??

i was deep in thought... i finished the bottle again...

me : barman!! bring me the bill, plus 2 more bottles...

he did just that and i paid...

i took my 2 bottles and went to sit on a couch.. i just sat there listening to the music... drinking... i drank till i passed out...

.

.

.

.

.

.

****nompilo****

its about 3pm now.. and the doctor should be here any minute now... siya called the doctor because he

wanted to make sure he was ok..

i was also worried about him...

in few minutes as we were sitting in the living room,
the doorbell rang...

him : that must be the doctor...

he stood up to open and he came with him in the
living room...

doc : afternoon mrs xulu..

me : afternoon doc...

they sat down, he sat on a one seat couch on the
right of the long couch we were sitting on...

doc : so, how can i help you??

siya : doc.. i have been very sick lately.. am always
tired, having back pains, headaches and nausea...
and i dont know what sickness has those
symptoms...

doc : is your wife pregnant??

me : huh, no...

doc : are you sure mrs xulu?? because thats the only way all this could make sense..

i thought it through and my frown faded away...
when last did i have my periods?? ohhh nooo.....

me : huh... am not that sure.. but if am pregnant then i should be the one going through that right?? not siya..

siya : exactly...

doc : in that case let me first test mrs xulu then if shes not pregnant, i will admit you and test you.. is that alright??

siya : not a problem doc...

the doctor gave me a pregnancy test...

me : you walk around with these??

doc : lol, i like being pro-active.. i always keep anything important in my medical bag...

me : oh..

i stood up and went to pee on the pregnancy test... i then closed it and brought it back to the doctor.. he

placed it on the table for a few minutes...

now i was nervous because i know i have missed my period... i keep rocking back and forth...

siya : relax mamas...

i nodded and stood still, then after a minute i was back at rocking back and forth again...

after few minutes the doctor spoke up...

doc : i guess its time to see the results..

he opened the results then looked at us...

doc : (smiles) congratulations mr and mrs xulu.. you are expecting a little one...

i looked at the doctor with shock.... i looked at siya and he was soooo excited...

siya : thank you doc.. but i dont understand.. what does this have to do with me??

doc : mr xulu, you have couvade syndrome which is also called sympathetic pregnancy.. this is when men share or go through pregnancy hormones with their pregnant partner.. you experience back pains,

stomache cramps, mood swings, food cravings, nausea, tierdness, depression, irritability, fainting, toothacue and headacues sometimes constipation.. you also see yourself gaining weight, having disturbed sleep patterns, fatigue, nosebleed, changes in appetite and so on... as the pregnancy goes on, these symptoms will become worse.. and it time of labor or after birth, you will get labor pains also called sympathy pains...

siya : ohhh, is that garuanteed or i could be lucky and not face all that??

doc : (slightly laughs) i can not really say.. it hits different on different men.. other men dont even go through it...

siya : can it be blocked?? or drink medication so that i dont have to go through it??

doc : no mr xulu.. couvade syndrome can not be cured or mentained.. it will be like you are the pregnant one...

siya : so mrs xulu is free from all these pains and hormones??

doc : not intirely.. she will go through some hormones and pains.. goes back to what i said.. it hits deffirent on each person...

siya : thank you so much doc..

doc : no problem at all.. mrs xulu, you will have to come to my office, to monitor your first trimester.. not to scare you but, the first trimester is very exiting but also a high risk of miscarrage.. so i am going to ask you to please take it easy.. and whenever you feel pains, no matter how small the pains are, please dont hesitate to call me...

siya : i will keep an eye on her doc..

doc : thank you...

siya took the doctor out.. i was just there shocked.. like am pregnant.. am about to be a mom.. at the age of 18.. am about to be a mom... holy cow.....

[12/13, 22:03] Zozaness: The villagegirl an the playboy: arranged marriage

67

.

.
. .
. .
. .

****siya****

i was woken up by someone ruffly shaking me....

i slowly raised my head and i saw it was thando, my receptionist...

me : sorry, thando.. how may i help you??

her : sir.. mr naidoo is already in the boardroom..

me : really?? ohhh crap...

i stood up panicking and trying to fix myself...

her : sir, relax... take a breath and relax.. if you hurry and do things in a hurry, you will seem unprepered.. rather late and proffesional then late and unproffesional..

me : right.. you right... how long have they been here??

her : its only been few minutes...

me : owk.. let me get prepared... so my files...

her : here, check..

me : my presentation...

her : laptop..

me : good, i think am good to go...

her : ohh wait.. your dressing.. it looks a little untidy...

me : ohh yah...

i fixed myself and took my last look...

me : am i good to go??

her : great...

me : owk.. ohh and thank you...

her : no problem sir..

me : no.. i mean it.. if it wasnt for you, i dont know what couldve happened...

her : just go to the boardroom before mr naidoo gets angry..

me : yah.. again.. thanks..

her : time is ticking...

she smiled and i smiled back and i left to go to the boardroom...

.

.

.

nompilo

siya and i havent really told anyone yet.. i guess this was a big shock to me.. like i have never imagined to be a mom in the age of 18....

siya is way more excited then me..

at this moment i am laying on the bed, rubbing my stomache...

i am looking at my belly... damn, i cant believe i missed this... i mean now that i know, my belly looks big... i wonder how many weeks i am??

i was busy rubbing my belly and thinking deep when my phone rang...

it was siya...

me : junior..

him : jho!! this is litteraly the first time you call me by my second name... mamas, what did i do??

me : nothing.. what do you want??

him : ouch!! mamas, you hurting me..

me ; ****sigh**** sorry.. i dont know whats going on with me latly...

him : its my boy.. he's messing you up...

me : i just cant believe am pregnant.. i mean am only 18...

him : mamas, dont worry to much owk.. its owk..

me : owk junior...

him : hahah, its really funny becouse am not used to you calling me by my second name....

me : haha.. yah....

him ; owk, let me finish up here so that we can go to the doctors office for your first altrasound...

me : owk, will be ready when you get here..

him : owk, love you...

me : love you more...

he hung up and i just threw my phone on the bed....

"i will just lay for 2 minutes then get up and get ready" i said that to myself..

.

.

.

kg

rethinking our last conversation

him : nthabiseng...

me : kg...'

him : did you just call to say my name..

i held my self from tearing up...

me : no.. i wanted to say that, you dont have to worry about the child anymore...

him : wait what do you mean..

me : it doesnt matter what i meant.. akere the child is not yours....

him : nthabiseng, are you thinking of abortion??

me : bye kg...

him : nthabiseng, nthabiseng, nthabiseng... please i beg you... please.. please nthabi... keyauqela joe... please dont do this...

me : its already late...

him : nthabiseng please.. please.. keyakopa hle.. dont do this...

.

.

i am in my room.. head on the pillow.. drunk as ever.. i had my last bottle on my chest....

my dad walked in....

him : katlego..my son are you really going to do this to yourself??

me : papa, i dont deserve to be living.. i killed someone...

him : boy, you didnt mean it.. you thought she was lying.. owk mabye it was wrong of you to not take responsibility.. but she could have spoken to her parents.. so please dont beat yourself up about this.. you still have school to think about...

i didnt say anything, i just looked up the ceiling...

i heard him sigh.,...

him : food is ready... please come eat...

i didnt say anything, i just looked at the ceiling..

i heard him leave..

well i just dipped to sleep...

.

.

.

nompilo

its very late and we in the car.. we just got back from

the doctors office...

him : mamas, i cant believe you 8 weeks pregnant.. i mean 8 weeks?? and we didnt know??

her : yah neh... its amazing..

i was faking a smile... deep down i was actually worried, stressed... i mean i was always told how painful giving birth was and how stressful it was to raise a baby...

him : mamas??

me : yes??

you dont look happy..

me : (fakes smile) i am....

him : yah, like i dont see that you faking a smile..

me : ****sigh**** i dont think am ready to be a mom yet.. i mean we didnt even talk about it..

him : you will be fine... i will be with you all the way mamas..

me : its just that, my parents were old when they had me, yet they couldnt be there for me..i am a mom at

18, how will i be there for them?? i dont even know the role of a mother...

he pulled up on the side of road and parked the car...

him : mamas..

his one hand held my right hand and his other hand held my belly...

him : mamas... i got you... yes i dont know much about parenting.. yes i am not a mother but we will figure all this together...

i hit him hard on his shoulders..

him : what was that for??

me : getting me pregnant...

him : hay, am already paying by having this couvade syndrome...

me : hahahahaha...

him : we will get through this together owk??

me ; owk.. junior...

he smiled...

him : what was that vele?? a childs hand hitting me??

i just laughed and let him be...

[12/13, 22:04] Zozaness: 68 (pregnancy journey with nompilo)

.

.

.

.

.

.

6 weeks

siya

my mamas has just passed the 1st trimester.. lucky her.. as for me, things are not going good.... i am getting worse.. i am more tired now, i am more picky in food now, stomache cramps, back pains, sore feet.. like its hell..

someone please remind me not to get mamas

pregnant again, because this is no fun... am sure you probably asking "does mamas get any symptoms??".. well yes she does.. she also gets tired (actually now is gets extremely tired).. she has gained alot of weight though.. which is not normal.. like gaining 18 kgs?? wow.... i must warn you though, shes very moody... like very MOODY...

she is 14 weeks pregnant now..

the last time they told us that she should give birth around next year march... so my baby will be a march baby...

so we have told our parents and they were all over the moon... wont even speak about my dad.. he was super excited.. i have not seen my father this happy about something in a long time...

mamas is in the room sleeping... we woke up at 10am and had breakfast (mamas, ate like shes having the last meal for life), then the nurse came to help nompilo get some pregnancy excersises.. at 1pm, they got done and we had lunch.. after that mamas went to sleep.. me?? well am in the living

room, watching some tv...

am sure you asking "mamas, what about school??
papas, what about work??" well mamas has decided
to leave school and restart after the child has born..
she tried doing school, but the weeks were terrable..
she would be stressed, not focused, sleepy... and
dont get time to finish asignments... as for me, i fall
asleep very much.. i get attacked by cramps and
back pains very much.. or mamas aswell.. its a mess
in this house...

my phone rings and its mamas...

me : lazy to come down..

her : no, i need a belly rub.. i have pains around my
belly..

me : owk, on my way... do you need anything from
the kitchen??

her : yes please, just an apple, yogured and some
carrots...

me : is that it??

her : and some water please..

me : owk.. is that final..??

her : yes, thats all...

me : owk, am on my way...

i got up.. took 2 carrots, yogurd and an apple.. then i poured water in her water bottle and went up to our bedroom...

i got in the room.. she was wearing tights (short) and a sports bra... her belly was really big for 14 weeks.... it looked like mabye she was 20 weeks or more... but hay, i guess pregnancy becomes different depending on body types hay.....

i gave her my what she asked for....

her : i forgot some cucumbers in my water...

me : dont worry, i will get it for you.. sliced..

her : take my water with, and put them in there..

me : owk...

i went down to the kitchen, took out the cucumber, sliced it and placed a few slices in the water... then went back up to her..

i got in the room and handed it to her...

her : thank you..

me : anytime..

i went to get vaseline and went to rub her belly...

me : how is the pregnancy so far??

her : its not really bad.. but now i experience pain alot and itching around my belly.. and this belly is heavy for my liking... i feel lazy, like am always sleeping and eating.. and crying becouse of pains...

me : it will be over soon..

her : even when i sleep, i fear...

me : fear what??

her : that i will hurt the baby....

me ; ohh like sleep on him??

her : yah...

me : nah, dont stress.. my son is a fighter.. a worrior...

her : you always say its a son.. what if its a girl??

me : i just feel it.... i mean he even got me in this hormones stuff... so its a boy..

her : i guess we will see in 4 weeks time...

me : what happenes in 4 weeks??

her : gender reveal

me : OHHH... owk..

i finished rubbing her belly... now i was playing with my fingers on her belly.. i guess i just didnt believe that really i am about to be a father...

her : siya, can you please massage my feet..

me : owk, madam...

she gave me the "mxm" look and i laughed..

i went to massage her feet...

her feet looked swallon, like really swallon...

****5 weeks****

****nompilo****

i am 18 weeks now and this belly just seems to be growing to a bigger bump... i am just happy that today we going to find out the gender...

its 10am and we need to be at the doctors office by 1pm...

we got ready and had breakfast...

me : papas??

he was downstairs..

me : papas??

him : yesss...

he came up....

him : are you owk??

me : yes, i just cant find my bagback...

him : its brobably in the drawer...

me : i looked in there.. theres nothing..

him : in the store room??

me : mabye... let me check..

i went to check and it was on the top shelf...

me : siya i cant reach it..

him : jump...

me : mxm siya mahn...

he laughed and came to get it down for me...

me : thank you..

him : owk.. are you done, we getting late...

me : mhm (thinking).. i think so...

him : owk lets go....

i went and siya held me on the stairs.. we left...

after few minutes we got to the doctors office...

as we opened the office we were welcomed by his smile..

doc : ahhhh, my supper couple.. how yall doing??

siya : we good doc...

me : yah.. you good, am fat...

siya : hahaha, not that fat..

me : mxm..

i playfully hit him...

siya : see doc, see what i go through everyday?? man abuse...

we all laughed...

doc : i like the energy already...

we sat down...

doc : so, mrs xulu, hows the second trimester??

me : its tough.. i have started getting back pains, abdominal pains, leg cramps, constipation and heartburn... and weird baby movements..

doc : weird baby movements?? you mean baby kicks??

me : yes.. but they weird becouse i would feel like the baby is kicking from the right, but siya would say the baby is kicken from the left...

doc : how many times do you feel the baby movements??

me : not all the time.. its only been twice...

doc : oh owk.. lets do the altrasound scan, then we

can also detect the heart beat..

siya : ohhh i cant wait...

doc : mrs xulu, please lay on that bed..

me : owk..

i went to lay on the bed and siya sat next to me... the doctor took the gel out.,..

doc : this is going to be cold...

he placed it on my belly and it was cold as ice... i shiverd alittle... he then took whatever that is and moved it around my belly...

doc : there you go.. there is the baby...

me : ohhh my word...siya look..

siya : this is so wonderful... so doc can you see the gender??

doc : yes...

he kept moving that thing around..

doc : see over there.. between the legs.. it shows its a boy...

siya : little junior...

doc : ohh wait...

me : whats wrong doc??

doc : seems the little fellow is not alone in there...

siya : what?? you mean, shes carrying twins??

doc : huh... actually its triplets...

i opened my eyes wildly at him and looked at siya...

siya : triplets as in 3 babies??

doc : mr and mrs xulu.. this has become an issue that must be monitored carefully...

siya : owk doc..

i was shocked.. i couldnt talk or say a word.. the shock had just held me by my throat...

the doctor made us hear the babies heartbeat and there were multiple heartbeats.. my tears came out..

i was overwelmped but at the same time not with this triplets news... i mean new mothers?? huh??

how am i gonna push for 3 kids on my 1st pregnancy experiance??

after the scan, i was given a tissue to wipe myself...
then went to take a seat...

doc : well, i am going to have to change some things,
just to keep you out of danger..

me : out of danger??

doc : yes, considering that you very young, first time
mom and that you struggling with acceptance might
bring alittle proble..

me : ohhh...

he was right.. it was hard to blend myself into
accepting that i would have 1 child, but 3??... its even
way more hard.... hai hai hai... siya??

doc : so mrs xulu, i hope you not resuming your
studies...

me : no doc, i decided to take a break, as i cant
cope...

doc : good... you will need to see me in 2 weeks time
again... then from there, you come everyweek untill
you deliver.. so that we can make sure you and the
kids are owk..

me : owk..

doc : eating habits.. as much as you want to eat, please eat.. but please have more healthy nutritional foods.. in that way the babies would be healthy...

siya ; no worries doc.. i will make sure of that...

doc : good.. please dont hesitate to call me if anything new develops, its better we safe then sorry...

me : yes doc...

we got our scans and made our way out...

we got in the car and drove...

him : i always knew there was a story behind your masive belly.. but i was expecting them to say twins, not triplets..

me : so you knew there was more then 1 baby and didnt tell me??

him : i didnt know, i just assumed.. i mean the drastic sleeping and eating and the pains.. i did some research and what kept popping was twins...

me : mxm... you dont even give me the heads up..

him : and give you false hope?

me : mxm...

i looked outside... watching as the things passed in speed and the sky standing still...

him ; mamas, you not feeling the mommy of 3 thing right??

i nodded...

him : am also scared.. 3 kids in one go is massive....

i sighed and kept looking out...

him : he kept quite.. rubbed my belly and smiled at me... that was a little assurance that all will be owk.. but will it??

[12/13, 22:05] Zozaness: The villagegirl an the playboy: arranged marriage

continuation (nompilos pregnancy journey)

.

.

.

.

.

.

****4 weeks****

****siya****

me : nompilo, my keys please, i really need to go..

her : no siya, but its my 19th birthday today.. you supposed to spend time with me...

me : i know mamas, thats why i wanna go to the office quickly so that i can come back early and spend the day with you...

i folded my arms and acted sad...

him : dont worry mamas, i will be back in no time, its just one meeting..

me : but that one meeting will be long.. plus you said that you took leave...

him : i did, but this client i cant miss.. hes very

important...

me : siyaaaaaaaa....

him : am sorry babe, but i really have to go..

he came close to me and kissed me on my cheeks countless times, saying sorry... i so acted sad and angry...

him : keys!!

i gave him the keys, but god knows i didnt want to...

him : thank you.. will be back before 11...

me : whatever...

him : you angry at me??

me : go junior...

him : no papas nyana??

me : no... junior...

him : owk.. teslyn... love you...

he left in a hurry... i was left laughing alone.. this man of mine can really give me a headache...

i got off the bed and went to the bedroom.. i have

gained more weight, i have become heavier.. like i
litteraly feel like my belly could just fall of my body...

siya had everything brought upstairs and becouse its
tuesday today, mamzondo is the one looking after
me...

.

.

****siya****

i got in the car, reversed out and drove..

for your own info, i am not going to a meeting.. if you
know me, you will know that i love surprising
mamas...

so its her 19th birthday today and i have something
up my sleeve.. well WE have something up our
sleeve...

so we havnt told our parents about us having triplets,
and i havent told mamas about the baby shower...

yes i know i am a guy and i dont know about this
stuff, but thats why i have my sister right?? yes yall
my sister came back around last week.. we just

spoke and planned over the phone.. mind you
mamas has never met my sisters and my sisters
dont know her.. i tell them about mamas and tell
mamas about them but they never met...

and we also have nompilos mom... so everything will
be great..

we have booked a restaurant.. the whole of it.. so my
sister and nompilos mom have decorated the place,
but yersterday night, my people went there to
change the deco, into a blue and pink and have
multiple decos.. that will get the parents asking why
multiple colours when we know the gender, and
thats when we will announce..

i dial bongani...

him : boy, did you manage??

me : yes, am on my way to the restaurant..

him : getting the last touch ups??

me : yes...

him : owk..

me : i hope you didnt forget the plan..

him : no i didnt.. i pick up nompilos parents and siblings, i take them to the restaurant.. i go pick up your parents and i lead them to the restaurant...

me : good... the rest of nompilos friends will go straight to the restaurant...

him : owk..

me : shap..

i hung up...

i got to the restaurant and the person i was meeting was outside..

me : hay.. sorry i kept you waiting..

him : its owk, i just opened...

me : thanks, so hows everything??

him : everything is owk.. the chiefs have started, the deco is alright and all is well..

me : i need one more favour..

him : yes??

me : when people come in, please tell them that they

have to wait outside because of something.. then when i call to tell you that am coming, you can open the doors for them...

him : owk sir, may i ask why??

me : i dont want them seeing the changed deco early and have time to guess.. i want to arrive minutes after they have seen the new deco...

him ; owk sir..

me : thank you so much..

him : no, thank you..

i gave him a smile and went to get the dress i had bought for mamas...

then went home..

i got in the house and saw mamas sitting on the living room watching tv..

me : i hope you didnt get down those stairs alone..

her : welcome back...

she was not even looking at me, she was looking at the tv..

me : mamas??

her : i rolled down the stairs, more safer...

me : nompilo!!

her : hahaha, am joking, mamzondo helped me down..

me : mhm,i got something for you..

her : a tight figure dress and heels??

me : hahae yaz...

her : you were gonna wear them...

me ; haha, anyway, i got you a dress for today..

her : for today?? what happenes today??

me : am taking you out.. birthday celebration..

her : siya, have you been living under a rock?? my belly is as big as a whale.. my feet swallon.. so how will i cope going out??

me : dont worry.. you get to wear, comfortable slippers, comfortable dress and the chair will have a pillow owk..

me : really?? so were we going??

me : go get ready you will see..

me : owk, first let me watch this episode, then i will go get ready...

me : nompilo..... now..

she made a irritation reaction and stood up in difficulty...

i went to help her up.. then i took her upstairs....

she got dressed and finished.. she wore the dress i had bought her and she looked very beautifull in it...

after she was done.. i also changed...

we left....

i called the restaurant owner to say am on the way and he let people in...

in minutes i got a call from bongani...

me : grootman..

him : dude, what happened to the deco.??

me : what you mean??

him : its changed and has blue and pink..

me : i am on my way..

i hung up...

her : who was that??

me : bongani..

her : oh owk..

i drove till the restaurant and helped her out the car..
then i walked her in the restaurant..

i closed her eyes and helped her walk..

her : siya ungan wisi.. (dont make me fall)

me : i wont..

her : siya weeeee...

me : trust me i wont.. i got you babe..

we walked further...

her : kanti asfiki...

me : almost..

her : hai siya.. my feet are aching..

me : sesfikile.. i want you next to the chair and to sit down...

i helped her to the chair then helped her sit...

her : can the food come, am starving... and why you not moving your hand away??

me : well 2 minutes...

.

.

.

****nompilo****

i heard shuffling and whispering..

me : siya, what you doing??

him : shhhh...

he opened my eyes and everyone shouted.. (HAPPY BIRTHDAY)..

i was so happy that i actually cried.. my siblings came to hug me... my parents came to hug me... i was even more surprised to see siyas parents...

a young girl came to me...

her : hay, you must be nompilo..

me : yes.. in the flesh..

her : well i am nobuhle.. siyas big sister...

me ; ohhhh my... hay.. am so happy to see you...

her : me too..

we hugged..

her : even though you way too big for a normal pregnancy, you still beautiful...

me : thank you....

i looked at siya and he smiled.. i then saw mase, sbahle, ma11 and daddy and the crew.. including kg.. it has been long since i saw kg and he was looking better then all the past days..

mom : manje siya.. whats with the 2 colours?? i thought yall said its a boy..

siya : yes it is.. but that boy has another boy and a sister...

them : huh??

me : its triplets everyone...

everyone got shocked..

mom : triplets?? 3 kids nompilo??

bongani : my boy.. uyinkabi mahn..

everyone laughed....

i was given a crown and a baby shower thingy
written mother of three...

everyone congratulated me and we had a great day...
i also go to know more about siyas sister and aunts...

it was truely a great day...

.

.

.

****13 weeks****

we were laying on the bed just being lazy to get up...
i have been getting seviror pains latly and this is
around my due time... plus siya has also been going

through pains.. i feel for him...

just as i was sitting i felt the bed wet... i panicked..

me : junior.. its time

him : mhm??

me : my water just broke.. the babies are on their way...

him : what?? huh... breath mamas, breath owk.. i will take you to the clinic...

me : hurrry (screaming in pain)...

he took the keys.. and helped me down the stairs till we got in the car...

him : you owk??

me : siya just go... (screams in pain) aaaaaaaaaaaaaa

he drove and in minutes i was in the ward...

.

.

.

.

.

****siya****

i am going up and down trying to figure if mamas is
owk.. as i was busy moving around i felt the
abdominal pains strike.. shoot, i almost forgot this
stage of the couvade syndrome...

i tried to sit still... but these pains got really painful...
me : help!! (trying to be strong in pain)...

i was held by the other paitience... they got me
relaxing but that didnt help.. i was feeling like my
lower body was ripping away from my upper body....

me : (painfully staying strong) help me...

a nurse came and got other nurses to help me get in
the ward... i felt like i was dying.. like really dying...

[12/13, 22:08] Zozaness: The villagegirl an the
playboy: arranged marriage

69

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

****kg****

her : goodmorning mr motsumi

me : goodmorning..

her : how are you today??

me : am good..

her : no need to sugarcoat it.. i want to know exactly how you feel...

me : ****sigh**** excuse me, i cant do this..

i stood up and attempted to leave..

her : you not forced to speak about things you not comfortable to speak about.. am here to help, not judge... am not God...

i stood still and looked at her.. tears threatend my

eyes... i sat down again, putting my hands on my face and taking a deep breath...

mind you, this is my first session ever.. my dad has been booking sessions for me but i wouldnt go, i would go drink myself down and return home drunk, but i was told that this would not help me, but only make me worse.. so today i made it here, but i now feel like i want to leave..

her : whenever you ready...

i stayed silent for few minutes...

me : its been months since nthabiseng passed away with my baby... but it still feels like yersterday... she wasnt supposed to die.. not like that... i killed her.. i.. i killed my baby...

her : must be a terrable moment..

me : terrable?? no... its hell..

her : how??

me : tell me, do you know how hell is??

her : no, but i have read that its a terrable place to be, with cnashing of teeth and ripping of skin and

screams all the time...

me : do you believe that??

her : well, personally yes.. i am a christian, a believer and i believe in hell and heaven..

me : do you have any idea how terrible hell is??

her : no... i have not been there, i am am not dead right...

me : right.. would you like to go there when you die??

her : definitely not..

me : see.. hell is a place where skins are reaped, souls are tortured, burns fill your body... you sense everything, you feel everything.. but you can't escape, can you??

her : no..

me : that's my life right now.. my life is hell... there's no happiness, no laughter, no more playboy, no more "thee guy" in varsity.. it's now only pain, hurt and cried... only alcohol sends me to be numb...

her : so, has alcohol helped you in these passed

months??

me : no.. it just makes things even more worse.. i mean my relationship with my father is no more like before.. i messed up everything..

her : what is one light thats in your life??

me : nothing..

her : your father??

me ****sigh**** owk.. mabye my father.. hes the only person there for me, keeping me steady and making sure am well.. even after all that i put him through, he still stood there for me..

her : am sure you want to make him happy and show him how appreciated you are to have him right??

me : true that... i want to fulfil my dads wishes for him

her : what is his wish??

me : my dad values family.. and one thing he wants is a grandson.. am my daddys only son..

we continued talking...

- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .

****nompilo****

i had the most painful hours of my life, but am glad its all over now.. i was shown my babies and they looked so tiny and beautifull.. its amazing how people grow from small tiny people to big people like us...

i was hoping to see siya, but he was not in here.. i was really tired though but again i really wanted to see siya..

i later gave in and slept...

hours later i woke up... my babies were in their bed next to mine... after some time, i was told that i had visitors.. it was siya's parents, my parents, my

siblings, b ngani and siya... i was actually very happy to see siya out of everyone...

they came in greeted...

chief : i cant wait to see my grandkids.. were are they??

siya : hold on dad.. i need to be the one to hold them first then i will hand them over to you...

they laughed..

siya made his way to the baby bed and his eyes lit up... he smiled and picked one up..

siya : have you given them names??

me : no, i thought you would want to do the honour..

he picked up the child and looked him and smiled...

siya : thembelihle

i smiled..

siya : welcome to the world boy...

he kissed him and handed him over to his father... he then took my baby girl...

he looked at him and smiled again...

siya : siphesihle

i smiled again, looking at how he looked at her...

siya : my baby girl.. mommies image....

we laughed...

he kissed her and handed her to my mother....

he took the last child and looked at him...

siya : melokuhle

i kept smiling..

siya : welcome to the world boy.....

he kissed him and gave him to bongani..

as they were busy with my babies.. siya came to sit next to me.. he held my hand and kissed it.. then he looked at me with teary eyes...

me : papas are you crying??

he didnt say anything.. he just placed his head on my hand.. he was hiding his face, but i could feel my hand getting wet.. he was indeed crying...

me : dad, its time for you to give them names since your coloured..

him : woowoow, really?

me : yes.. i mean it only becomes fair if both families give names.. their daddy gave them names on behalve of the xulu family.. now you can give them names on behalve of the nhlapos or pietersons..

him : owk...

me : but before you give them, may i ask for a moment with siya please..

chiefs wife : no problem makoti..

they returned the kids in their bed and went out...
siya was still placing his head on my hand..

after they have left, i sat up straight and siya looked up... his eyes were very teary..

me : papas, whats wrong??

he got up making way to kiss me.. we kissed.. he kissed me slowly and rotating.. it brought chills and feelings.. then he pulled out...

him : look at us??

he looked at the kids and back at me...

him : to think we were forced into marriage... its a huge change...

me : yah, it really is..

him : it is true what they say... when life gives you lemon, you make lemonade..

me : lol.. true...

him : mamas, you have brought blessings in my life, peace, love, happiness... you were the angel that was brought to save me from hell and take me to heaven...

me : huh!! there goes shakespeare...

we laughed...

him : am serious.. our marriage is not goals, we hardly take videos together, pictures together, we hardly post eachother on facebook writing "bae" or "babe", we hardly post pictures about us on social media, we hardly advertise our marriage everywere.. but our marriage is priceless, its unique, i would

never trade it for anything...

me : you making me cry...

him : but its true...

i pulled him in and we hugged...

he then took the kids and placed them on my lap..

then he sat down and we played with them...

siya : thembelihle, melokuhle and siphesihle

me : beautiful names...

siya : let me go call the family, am dying to know my babies coloured names..

me : lol.. owk..

he went out and came back with them...

me : are you ready with the names dad..

dad : well yes.. i will start with thembelihle.. which one is he??

we laughed...

chief : hai ngeke.. they all look alike.. but the boys are worse, i even forgot which on is which..

siya : thembalihle has a birthmark on the neck..
melokuhle has a birthmark under his chin..

them : ohhhh...

chiefs wife : they took siyas birthmark.. he has one
on the right side of his neck, a little under the ear..

siya : huh ma!! during the people nje??

we all laughed...

dad : owk.. so Thembelihle will be called Quinton....
Melokuhle will be called Calvin... and last but not last
my granddaughter Siphesihle will be called Jasmine..

me : wow dad... nice name..

siya : facts..

they stayed a little longer...

- .
- .
- .
- .
- .

****nonhlanhla****

we busy with 1st term exams.. i am currently doing grade 10...

it is around 14:30 and we just finish writing.. yah we write afterschool.. i actually dont mind becouse it keeps me busy and doing something ather then staying at home doing nothing...

i was outside with mbali outside of school, she is in grade 8.. it was me, mbali and Lelo.. Lelo is my bestfriend.. we have been friends since grade 8.. we were in the same class in grade 8 and 9 but separated in grade 10 becouse we chose different packages...

we school at nompilos previous school.. few teachers love us becouse it is known that nompilo was one of the top learners at school so now we need to compete with her... crazy..

mbali : isnt dad coming already, i cant wait to get home...

me : just to do what?? watch tv??

mbali : mxm, suka.. i also do homework..

me : no you dont..

mbali : yes i do..

me : mxm..

lelo : would you guys stop.. you always argue about something...

mbali : effects of having a nerd as a sister..

me : better a nerd then a high fly like you...

lelo : owk yall.. nonhlanhla?? so are you going to go to the trip after exams??

me : huh?? nop.. no thanks..

mbali : pooper..

i rolled my eyes and ignored her...

lelo laughed...

my dad came and picked us up...

so lelo lives closer to school then me.. but dad still gives her a lift everyday afterschool... we have done sleepovers and all that..

ohh yes.. my dad has a car now, but its a company car...

we got in the car and drove away..

we droped off lelo and went home..

we got home and went to drop our bags and change... mbali and i share a bedroom but each has her own side of the room... mbali is very disorganised, messy but when she cleans she cleans.. shes just lazy...

mbali : when you make lunch, please make for me too...

me : owk..

i went to make toasted bread and eggs with juice...

mbali eats guys like.. she eats.. 8 slices of breat is nothing.. hai.. my lil sister eats shame.. so i made her 5 slices.. i only took 3...

she came down.. mom also came in the house..

mom : hay my little angels..

me : hay mom..

mbali : hay mom..

mom ; how was exams??

me : it was owk..

mbali : yah, english was great.. i mean its english...

mom : what were you writing nhlanhla??

me : technical mathematics..

mom : oh owk..

mbali : (mouth full) mom, when am i going to visit nompilo?? i want to spend sometime with her children..

me : dont speak with food in your mouth, its discusting...

mbali ; hai thula wena (hai keep quite)..

i have such a sister hle... anyone wants to buy her??
R2....

[12/13, 22:09] Zozaness: 70

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

****nonhlanhla****

it was a very nice saturday.. its still really early..

i woke up and did my bed.. then i woke mbali up...

her : mhm..

me : mbali wake up...

her : 2 minutes...

i left her and went to brush my teeth, wash my face, comb my hair and then came out of the bathroom..

mbali was still sleeping.. to be honest, the only thng that can really wake mbali up is water.. nje...

i went to shake her again...

me : mbali vuka.. do you want mom to wake you up herself..

her : am awake...

me ; no you not...

her : then how am i talking if am not??

me : dude, just get up..

her : am up..

me : no, get out of your blanket..

her : kanti isnt this supposed to be a relaxing day?? i wake up every morning going to school.. saturday aswell??

me : you just lazy nje.. remember we need to go visit sis nompilo today...

her : right... but not this early.. they probably still sleeping..

me : we also still need to clean the house...

her : why did we get a big house again??

me : hahahaha.. just get up lazy girl...

i left her fighting with the blankets.. i just laughed and made my way to the kitchen.. no one was in the

kitchen..

i heard something outside, in the backyard.. i went and dad was busy cutting the grass and mom was just sitting outside having a conversation with dad...

me : morning mom, morning dad..

them : morning nonhlanhla..

me : would you like a tea break??

mom : not now honey, daddy is still very busy..

me : owk..

i went back inside and poured cereals with milk and sat down on the dinning table to eat... minutes later mbali walked in...

her : weres mom and dad??

me : dad is cutting the grass, mom is keeping him company..

her : oh..

he also poured cereal and milk and ate....

her : i wonder how you do this..

me : what??

her : brush your teeth before eating..

me : whats wrong with that??

her : it makes the food taste funny...

me : lol... you funny...

her : mxm.. i will pour you with this cereal....

me : when you do please warn me so that i can open my mouth..

he looked confused at first but as she cought on we both laughed...

we ate and washed the dishes.. then we went to our room to clean it up and the bathroom... then eventually we cleaned the house.. well we dont clean everyroom.. we leave out our parents bedroom..

so this house has 2 bedrooms, 1 toilet (not in rooms), upstairs is the bedrooms only.. then downstairs is a kitchen (the dining table is in the kitchen) and the living room.. (there is no wall between the kitchen and the living room... then there is a back yard.. there is a swimming pool but it is

fenced then there is a garden... (thats were mom and dad were)...

so we finished cleaning and went to relax.. we layed on the couch showing how tired we were... mom and dad were now only having their tea...

mom : finally done??

me : yes, and am super tired...

dad : well, relax and chill... becouse once am done with what am doing you also need to be done..

mbali : yes dad..

we chilled alittle..

after a while we went to shower...

we showered, lotioned and got dressed... i took my school books, i mean we only coming back tomorrow and i also have an assignment to do...

i took my books and my bag and went downstairs.. mbali was still packing her clothing.. she didnt pack yersterday...

i got downstairs and dad was almost done...

i placed my bags in the boot...

mom : were are you taking your books??

me : i have an assignment.. so i need to do it..

mom : oh owk, you can also ask nompilo to help you...

me : she never did design...

mom : ohh...

dad came..

dad : is everyone here??

me : mbali is absent...

they laughed...

just then mbali came running out...

me : i was about to call khumbulekhaya to come look for you..

her : mxm...

i laughed and we got in the car... she also brought her school books...

dad : manje?? school books??

her : asignment..

dad : great.. am glad you take school serious...

she laughed and got in the car..

dad : wena nonhlanhla?? arnt you gonna need your books... mabye nompilo would help you...

me : sis nompilo doesnt do most of my subjects, and yes i took my books..

he smiled and gave me a thumps up..

i dont like it when people push me to fill the gabs of other people... i mean at school they always expect me to be a high student like nompilo.. i remember my life science teacher once told the class that i am the younger sister of one of the top learners that was once at school and that they should work hard because i am the biggest competition.. like really??

well i am a top learner vele so i am not saying they putting me underpressure but that stuff is annoying...

we drove and got to nompilos house... we rang the bell and the helper came to open for us...

her : goodmorning, mr and mrs xulu are in the living

room..

we all said owk and mbali ran to the living room with her bags...

i just walked with my mom and dad..

dad : mbali must have really missed her sister..

me : yah, we should bring them more often...

me : shes not running to nompilo, shes running to the kids...

they laughed.. i smiled..

we walked in the living room and indeed mbali was playing with the kids who were in their triplet pram..

nompilo ; ma?? baba??

she stood up to hug them...

she also came to hug me...

siya : sanibonani badala..

them : yebo..

nompilo : i will go make you some tea... i baked..

mom : woow... thank you..

nompilo ; nonhlanhla, mbali.. could you please help...

me : sure...

mbali ; the kids dont want to let go of me...

nompilo : mbali!!

mbali : owk...

he put the kids down and we all went in the kitchen..

nompilo ; how have you been..

me : just school, assignments and tests..

mbali : thats the life of being a nerd...duh..

i playfully slapped her on the back..

mbali : see, and this is my life, always getting beaten for no reason..

me : thats because you speak rubbish...

mbali : no, i speak facts..

i playfully hit her again...

nompilo : lol.. owk stop...

we continued talking as we made tea...

nompilo ; konje nhlanhla you in grade 10 right?

me : yah...

nompilo : so what subjects did you take??

me : i took mathematics, physical science, design, computer application technology, lifescience, history, zulu, english FAL, geography and life science...

nompilo : woow... why design??

me : i want to be an artichect

nompilo : oh owk.. wena mbali?? what you want to be??

mbali : i want to be a proffesional sports player...

nompilo : huh??

mbali : i wanna fence, or be a rider... like you see those people who ride horses and do styles on it?? yah... ohh and a swimer...

nompilo and i looked at each other...

me ; so mbali, you in the wrong school...

nompilo : yah, why dont you just go to a fence school,

a rider school and take swimming classes..

me ; mom would never allow mbali to quite school for that...

nompilo : but thats what she wants to do.. i mean why would she finish matric if she doesnt have intrest in any office or proffesional job??

me : mbali, dont you have a back up job for incase you dont achieve your sports dream..??

mbali : no.. i really dont see myself in a office or working in any field.. i just want to do sports.. fencing, riding, swimming, hockey and tennis...

nompilo : lets take the tea to mom and dad.. this topic is not over, i have to understand this..

we took the tea to them with the cakes and also gave siya.. ohh we also did for ourselves...

we ate and played with the kids...

later that day mom and dad left.. we took our bags to the guestroom... we didnt bring alot of stuff becouse we only here for 2 days.. yes my mom agreed for us to come back home monday morning..

and uncle siya agreed to take us there...

hours passed and it was now around 17:45 and i was helping nompilo to make dinner.. mbali would come help us then go play with the kids with uncle siya...

we got done and we all sat in the living room...

i took out my design assignment.. (i had to design a school..)..

nompilo ; what is that??

me : my assignment.. i need to design something..

nompilo : so what you going to design...??

me : not sure yet..

uncle siya : when is it due??

me : in 3 months.. we get to design 2 things each year..

uncle siya : so its due in june??

me : yes, then we given another one that will be due before our final exams..

nompilo : so what you doing now??

me : planning on what to design...

mbali : but thats due in 3 months, you could still do it next month..

me : i like getting things done and out of my way..

uncle : which is a good thing...

mbali went to fetch her books aswell and gave her assignment question paper to nompilo..

nompilo ; you too?? woow, am so proud of my siblings..

she checked the paper..

nompilo ; mbali, you got this 2 weeks ago and its due on monday.. wena you choose to do it today??

mbali ; sisi, can we just focuse on getting done with it.. its not like the due date passed..

uncle siya : but you always need to do your work in time..

mbali : i get that uncle but whats the difference.. i could do my assignment on sunday night and

someone could do it the day she/he got it.. but at the end of the day we both submitted in time..

me : i suggest we leave her, because she will always defend her points till you give up..

uncle siya : lol... mbali, do you do debating??

mbali ; nop, dont even wish to...

uncle siya : why??

mbali : just..

we all did our stuff.. it was like we in a private lesson.. nompilo was helping mbali (social science assignment) and uncle siya was busy pushing his kids in the pram and also helping me with my design planning...

i never once thought uncle siya did design... well he says he didnt but his ideas were bomb.. who wouldve thought about an underground double story closet??

he helped me design the first part, then i called a break...

me : i will come next week to finish other parts..

him : great..

me : so uncle, you sure you didnt study design??

him : lol.. owk i did.. but i never designed buildings or objects.. i used to design cars.. i always wanted to design cars or build cars.. cars have always been my thing..

me : so is that what you do now??

him : well, not really.. what i do is i move cars from one country to another... or continent to another... i also sell cars.. mind you its not cars that i was given to sell.. no.. i buy the cars from overseas and sell them here.. the catch is.. i buy them from were they are made, then sell them a bit cheaper.. see?? i win..

me : woow...so why not design a car??

him ; i will, one day i will..

nompilo also finished helping mbali and we went to dish up..

we had dinner and enjoyed the talks.. after we watched a movie.. it was a great night...

[12/14, 04:45] Zozaness: The villagegirl an the

playboy: arranged marriage

71

.

.

.

.

.

.

****3 months later****

****nompilo****

me : siya!!

him : am almost done...

me : hurry!!

lihle was crying.. i tried giving him a toy but he doesnt stop.. am sure hes hungry.. siya is taking time making lihles milk.. sihle is playing with her toys and siya is holding kuhle...

am busy jumping up and down with lihle in my arms

to make him stop crying but he is being stubborn...

finally siya comes with his milk..

him : here...

me : finally...

i fed lihle and indeed he kept quite and focused on his milk..

me : jho... these kids are a handful...

him : litteraly

we laughed...

he put sihle and kuhle in the prem and helped clean the room.. then he took lihle from me and i went to clean the bathroom..

after cleaning i sat on the bed next to siya...

me : *sigh* done..

him : we did it.. high five..

we high fived.. and laughed...

we layed the kids on the bed.. siya layed on the right end on them and i layed on the left end of them.. all

there were in the middle of us..

him ; they look so beautiful..

me : yah, indeed... but i must say, am still scared...

him ; about that which we spoke about??

me : yes.. i still have a feeling that they might go through what i went through...

him : you heard the doctor.. dont worry.. everything will be owk..

me : no siya, what if they become bullied like i was..??

him : sihle and kuhle will not go through that, we will be there for them.. and trust me what i did for you when those people bullied you will be 2 times more to those who will bully my kids..

me : lol.. am just scared nje..

him ; dont be.. we will protect them..

so sihle and kuhle picked up my defect...(my eye defect).. sihle's one eye is black and the other is grey... kuhles eyes are black but have a little traced grey on them.. lihle got lucky, he didnt catch the

defect... so his eyes are black...

i actually felt bad when i first saw them, i didnt think that it would affect my little once.. now history would repeat on it self with my babies...

we sat there while playing with the kids.. they are 3 months now.. they growing day by day...

.

.

.

****nonhlanhla****

its june exams and lelo is acting very weired... she would sometimes skip school for a week and come the following week saying she doesnt want to talk about it...

kids at school have been spreading rumors that shes pregnant... i didnt believe all this becouse lelo loves school and she was always happy... plus she said his boyfriend is in swaziland so all that dont make sense..

she once told me in january when the schools

reopened that her father came back..

she said her father only visited in december or june..
once a year.. now he quite his job and now he came
to live with them..

she was very happy and excited when she told me
this.. recently shes very sad, very disturbed.. i am
even thinking that mabye her father is sick... thats
the only thing that can explain the constance
absentism, the lacking in marks.. the sudden
attitude..

i never said much in the morning.. but now that its
after exam... and its still early i will ask her...

we now waiting outside... mbali is not yet here.. best
time to talk to her..

me : lelo..

her : mhm??

me : are you owk??

her : yes, am great.. why do you ask??

me : its just that, these days you very distant, you
always quite, always sleeping and just moody nje....

her faced turned and she tried faking a smile but i could tell it was fake..

me ; talk to me girl...

her : ****sigh**** nonhlanhla, i dont think i will finish school...

me : what??

her : yes, am pregnant...

me : lelo??

her :

me : did you tell your parents?

her :

me : ***sigh*** who am i to judge?? listen the damage has happened.. what now??

her : abortion...

me : no!!

her : what else can i do?? i cant keep the child...

me : listen, my sister once lost a friend through abortion.. i dont want to lose you...

her : **sigh** theres nothing i can do...

we stood in silence and Ayanda came out with his friends.. i dont like this guy, he thinks he is thee hotshot but nje hes not...

Ayanda : how, my dark chocolate.. are you waiting for me??

me : you dreaming...

Ayanda : please.. we all know you crushing on me..

me : i rather puke.. (pretending to puke)..

his friends laughed, he also laughed...

Ayanda : ha kodwa dark chocolate, why??

me : Z...

mbali came....

Ayanda blew a kiss to me and i pretended to catch it.. then i pretended it was a ball.. i threw it down and kicked it to him... i smiled... then he pretended as if it hit his stomache.. so he held his stomach.. i laughed and signaled to him that his crazy.. he left with his friends...

Ayanda is in another class, he also does science.. so we only be in the same class in physical science and life science.. he is an irritation nje.. he thinks because most girls want her now all girls want her.. even lelo had a crush on him.... hai i dont know what they see in him nje...

mbali : who is that guy??

me : Ayanda.....

mbali : your boyfriend??

me ; no...

mbali : nonhlanhla??

she gave me the "yes he is.." look...

me ' no... am serious...

mbali : mhm mhm mhm.. 2 little birds, sitting on the tree,k.i.s.s.i.n.g, one named nonhlanhla the other named Ayanda,

she continued singing.. i just ignored her.. dad arrived.. we got in the car....

the whole time lelo was just quite.. and far in

thoughts...i felt for her.... i couldnt talk to her more because mbali and dad was here so i thought i would call her...

we dropped her off.. she said thank you and we drove home..

we got home.. i went to put my bag and change.. mbali started again.. i swear i will not hear the end of it.. worse part, am not even into Ayanda...

her : so sis, when were you gonna tell me??

me : tell you what??

her : about your relationship with Ayanda??

me : theres nothing to tell because theres nothing going on...

her : lies!!

me : owk, believe what you want to believe...

her : liar liar, pick up a fire... anyway i will find out..

me : whatever private investicator..

her : thats me...

she then went out...

i took my phone and dialed lelo...

her : hay..

me : hay girl.. i was just checking on you...

her : am owk babe... thank you..

me : no problem.. so have you decided on what to do??

her : not yet, but i will see..

me : owk.. please dont do anything you will regret..

her : no, i wish i dont...

i heard some shuffling and movement..

her : (scared) i will call back, i need to go..

she hung up

me : were you going?? whats happening??.....

hello..... lelo??...lelo??

she had hung up.. i wonder what got her scared all of a sudden.. mabye she told her parents and now they angry.. eash...

.
. .
. . .

****siya****

we were in the living room.. we placed the babies on the floor on the blanket.. we were also sitting down playing with them... these days am just woking from home becouse mamas needs me.. i only go to the office if its extreamly important...

i then got a call.. it was my dad...

me : baba!!

him : yes son.. how are you??

me : am owk dad..

him : how about makoti and the kids??

me : they all owk baba...

him : good.. listen son, we have received a letter of alliance from the khumalos.. its time son..

me : time for what??

him : for you to have a royal wife..

me : hee.. you know i really wish i was not the chiefs son...

him : well you are, and its time you stood your position...

me : sorry dad, but thats not happening..

him ; what?? siyabonga.. you are going to get a royal wife.. its tradition.. and its a good investment for the family...

me : no, its a good investment for yourself baba, not for the family..

him : siyabonga..

me : no dad.. how is me marrying a second wife an investment??

voice : second wife??

i turned around and it was nompilo... she was looking at me, i could see she wanted answers...

me ; dad, i got to go.. chat later..

him : siyabonga, i ma still talking..

me : dad please, my family needs me at this moment
i will call back..

i hung up and looked back, she was not there
anymore.. i hurried in the living room and there she
was sitting with the kids.. i breathed in and went to
her....

[12/14, 04:46] Zozaness: continuation

.

.

.

****siya****

i went to sit next to her..

me : mamas??

her :

me : mamas listen....

her : so you getting a second wife??

me : no.. definatly not...

her : then what is going on??

me : my dad is the one who wants me to take up a second wife... i told him no but he insits..

her : well will you??

me : no mamas.. i will never do that..

her : but hes your father siya.. how you going to say no to him??

a tear escaped her eye and she looked down so that i wouldnt see it. but i saw it... i wiped her tears and faced her face up...

me : mamas, i love you.. with all that i have.. you have done so much for me, even blessed me with triplets... i would never sacrifice such a blessing for my dads wishes.. never...

her : you promise??

me : i promise..

her : pinki promise (she brought forward her pinki finger)

me : pinki promise..

our pinki fingers made a lock.. then she slightly

laughed...

me : i love you...

her : love you more...

she lay her head on my chest and i brushed her hair
and kissed her head...

.

.

.

*** lelo***

i was in my room, tucked in the corner on my bed...
the door was slightly opening.. i just looked at the
door and pushed myself further against the corner...

he comes in, he looks at me, he smiles.. i feel my
tears coming but i hold them back... i reach for my
phone, am holding it tight...

he locks the door and comes closer to me..

i tried pushing myself through the wall.. i kept
pushing, wishing i could just move back.. but i
couldnt...

he got close to me and brushed my cheek hard with his hands.. my tears just came out without warning.. my heart raced up and all that was in me was fear..

him : you look beautiful..

i moved my face away and he grabbed my face and pressed my cheeks..

me : uyantilimaza baba...

he looked in my eyes as my tears just came out rushing...

he then pushed me down and unbottened his belt.. i started crying because i already knew what was about to happen...

its been months now.. i have never thought my dad would do such to me.. i mean he is my father... just last year december i was happy that he will be staying with us permanantly but in march all that changed..

one time in march i was in my room doing my homework.. my dad came in the room and asked to help me.. i thought he just wanted to help me so i

said yes.. he sat next to me and checked my books... then after a while he started brushing my thigh... when i stood up and attempted to leave he pulled me, locked the door and raped me.. my mom was not home.. after he told me that if i say anything he would kill me, and that my mom wouldnt believe me because she loves him.. after that day, he just comes everytime and does what he does..

and here we go again.. today hes doing the same thing again...

i just lay there crying.. crying my eyes in silence as he placed his hand on my lips...

am sure you asking " why dont you report him to the police??" , " why dont you just tell your mom", " why dont you run away and stay with someone?" well i also ask myself the same questions.. but because he is my father, who would believe me? i mean he could change the story and say i wanted it, or that am lying.. i just dont know now.. and for the fact that i kept it for months makes it even more difficult...

.

.

.

****nonhlanhla****

i tried calling lelo again countless times but she was not picking up my calls.. i wonder what is going on there..

anyway mom just got done with dinner... and now we sitting around the table...

mom : so how was school today?

me : great...

mbali : mhm, great huh nonhlanhla??

she gave me a smile.. yaz this child... shes probably still thinking about Ayanda..

dad : i cant believe yall have grown so much..

me : yes dad.. you say that all the time..

mbali : it has even become a poetry..

we all laughed...

we had dinner and got done..

mom : owk.. we off to sleep now..

me : ok ma..

mom : dont forget to wash the dishes..

mbali : we never forget..

they laughed and went up...

we took the dishes and took them to the sink..

mbali : am not washing today.. am whipping and packing..

me : as if you have washed before..

mbali : mxm..

i poured warm water in the sink and washed the dishes as mbali whipes them..

her : so you seriously not going to tell me about that guy??

me : theres nothing to tell...

her : a guy that blows you kisses??

me : anyone can blow kisses, that doesnt mean anything..

her : mhm??

me : come on... Ayanda is just a wanna be that thinks hes hot.. and my competitor in physics, maths and lifescience.. thats it...

her : so you say...

me : uyaphapha nje wena...

her : lol.... anyway lebo has invited me to his birthday party after exams..

me : really now??

her : owk not directly but he kinda made a class announcement and said anyone is welcome to go..

me : we all know dad and mom wont allow you to go.. so?

her : thats the thing.. i need you to cover up for me...

me : what??

her : please.... phela lebo is my crush.. even though i dont understand almost everything he says when he speaks his homelanguage i still have this huge crush on him...

me : so you settle for speaking english all your life??

her : i will learn hao...

me : hai.. mbali..

her : so will you cover for me??

i looked at her... i placed the dish cloth away and went up to the bedroom...

she came running after me.. she switched off the lights of the kitchen and came after me...

her : so??

me : angizingeni...

her : come on... you just need to make sure mom and dad buy my story of sleeping over at a friends house....

me : what friend??

her : my classmate.. we will be doing an assignment...

me : lol... hai mbali... no...

her : owk, how about you visit sis nompilo next week

saturday...

me : and??

her : i will go with you to sis nompilo.. but later i will go out and you will tell them that i went my friends place to do an assignment.. its easier fooling sis nompilo then mom and dad...

me : am not involving myself...

her : please..

me : nop..

her : you such a boredom shame..

me : i know...

i got in my pjs and got in bed...

she also got in bed still begging me to consider but i still refused..

i then dialed lelo again...

thank god she answered...

her : nhlanhla...

me : hay lelo, what happened?? i was so worried..

her : am fine...

me : you dont sound fine...

her : am owk nhlanhla.. dont worry..

me : owk.. so did you talk top your parents??

her : huh!! i dont want to talk about that...

me : owk.. please take care of yourself owk??

her : will do...

me : owk, sleep tight...

her : shap..

me : bye...

she hung up... i placed my phone under my pillow
and switched of the lamp and slept...

[12/14, 04:47] Zozaness: 72

.

.

.

.

.

****2 months later****

****siya****

its been a rough 2 months.. my babies are a handfull, my dad is giving me a headache and this side business needs my attention....

if i dont die of headache attack then i dont know...lol...

so today we decided to take the kids to nompilos parents.. i guess we needed the break... i mean i love my babies but hai.. headache..

so its 2pm right now and the kids were taken this morning.. but will be brought back in the evening...

so since my babies left, i decided to make a picnic in our background next to the pool...

she was upstairs folding some clothing that she just took of the clothing line...

i prepared some snacks, sandwiches, food and went to place the blanket on the grass...

i got done with the setup and went to call her...

me : mamas??

her : papas??

me : you done??

her : almost... phela am folding for 3 here...

me : lol....owk let papas help...

i helped her fold the clothing and we got done quickly...

her : am so tired..

me : how about i treat you first then give you the best massage ever??

her : really ??

me : yah, lets go...

her : wait i have to change before we leave...

me : you dont have to.. we not going anywere.. we just here in the background..

her : ohh owk..

i lead her were the picnic was...

her : huh (surprised) baby....!!!

me : you like it??

her : no.. you crazy?? i love it....

me : am glad you do mamas..

her : ncooooo, thats so nice of you....

me : i just wanted to treat you a little, just to show how i appreciate you.. i mean having triplets is headache...so just a little break uyabona...

her : thank you papas...

me : i must admit, if what i went through the day you went into labour is what woman go threw then i must really say that you woman are strong.. hai... you strong.. imagin giving birth 4 times... or worse giving birth at the age of 16.. yho yho yho... hai...

her : lol... so when are we having our 4th baby??

me : hai.. we done..

we laughed...

her : mara babe.. a minnie me again...

me : ukhona u sihle..

her : you have 2 minnie you, i only have 1... hao...

me : hai mamas.. i am not going through that again..
9 months of cramps, pains, and lastly labour pains..
never...

her : who said its going to happen again?? phela its
not commom for that to happen.. the doctor said
that...

me : am not taking the risk...

her : lol...

we sat down and started eating and relaxing... she
would lay on me and we would feed each other....

her : so you wanna teach me how to swim??

me : dont start with me...

her : come on papas.. remember you only went in
water once...

me : well yah.. but that doesnt mean i have to go
again...

her : well you cant start war with fear and just sit

down, you need to defeat it...

me : lol...

we spoke and laughed about stuff as we also enjoyed our minnie picnic...

as we were just having fun and laughing, i heard the door bell...

me : you expecting someone??

her : yes... santa..

me : mxm..

i playfully hit her and stood up to check who was at the door...

i got there, opened and immediatly my spirit just went down.. it was my dad, uncles with a lady in traditional beats...

me : baba??

dad : can we come in??

i let them in and they went to sit down.. minutes later as they just settled down, mamas walked in..

her : who was tha.... oh sorry.. sanibonani badala..

they greeted back...

her : i will make some tea...

they sat on couch and i sat on the other couch...

me : baba? what made you come all the way here??

dad : son.. since you never took this serious, we decided to act on your behalve...

me : what is dad talking about??

dad : this lady here is thandeka.. your wife...

me : WHAT????

dad : yes, since you didnt want to be involved, we acted..

me : dad, i said i dont want a second wife..

uncle 1 : siyabonga, its done now... the lobola was sent already...

me : unsend it..

dad : siyabonga uyahlanya??

me : dad you arrainged me to marry nompilo right??

what was it for??

dad : siyabonga that was because of an agreement we needed to settle with nompilos great grandfather..

me : for what?? money??

dad : its not like that..

me : it is dad.. you married nompilo to me because you wanted recognition and gain connections to more money... so now what are you gaining now??

uncle 2 : siyabonga dont speak to your father like that..

me : malume, this is my life.. i love nompilo and thats it.. am not taking in another wife...

dad : siyabonga!!

nompilo then walked in with tea... she placed everything on the table and left...

me : dad am not doing this... sorry my lady.. huh thandeka... you are really a great woman, very beautiful and respectfull but am sorry but i can not make you my wife..

uncle 1 : siyabonga, dont test me.. you are going to take her in as your wife..

uncle 2 : i think makoti should be told aswell..

dad : i agree.. siya, call makoti...

i shook my head and refused.. i actually sat there looking at dad..

uncle 1 : haibo siya..

i took my phone and dialed mamas..

she answered...

her : papas??

me : please come down to the living room..

her : something wrong??

me : just come..

her : owk..

she hung up and we waited for her..

after a while she came in and came to sit next to me..

i held her hand.. even though she looked at me confused and wondering and uncomfortable i still

held her hand....

uncle 2 : makoti..

her : baba??

uncle 2 : this lady over here is thandeka..

her : owk baba.??

uncle 2 : she is your sister wife...

her : sorry??

she looked at me then at them...

uncle 1 : what we saying is that she is siyas second wife..

as she heard this she tried removing my hands out of her hands but i held tight making sure i dont let go...

dad : and she will be staying here with you...

she tried even harder to let go of my hands but still i held tighter...

uncle 1 : thandeka mtanami, this is your sister wife nompilo. and this is your husband siyabonga xulu..

the lady nodded....

uncle 2 : siya, her bags are in the car, i will get it for her...

i didnt say anything.. i just kept quite..

my uncle brought the bags and they left.. thandeka was still sitting down facing down..

as the family left nompilo pulled her hand and stood up.. i quickly held her..

her : siya let me go..

she pushed me and i fell on the couch.. then she ran upstairs..

i wanted to run to her but couldnt leave someone here.. so i just stood up took thandekas bag..

me : please follow me..

her : yebo baba....

she followed me and i took her to the guestroom...

me : please make yourself at home...

her : yebo baba...

i left her in there and went to my room..

i went in and saw nompilo on the bed... she was crying..

me ; mamas..

her : dont mamas me...

me : please...

her : no siya, you promised... you promised mahn, you promised.. siya you promised, you promised, you promised, you promised, you promised, you promised, you promised, you promised... (crying)....

she was crying throwing pillows, blankets, shoes, clothing at me.. i could tell that she was very angry..

me : baby, i didnt break any promise, i didnt... i didnt accept this... my dad just brought her..

she didnt say anything...

me : mamas, i didnt accept it, trust me.. i didnt... i told them i dont want a second wife... but he forced it on me.. but doesnt mean that am going to let this go..

her : (still crying) what you going to do huh?? chase her away??

i didnt say anything.. that moment i realised that i dont have a plan.. but i need to fix this.. am still sticking to one woman and thats mamas.. no one else.. even if it means me being my dads enemy... then let it be... call me nasty or harsh but mamas is my life.. cant loose her over this...

[12/14, 04:47] Zozaness: The villagegirl an the playboy: arranged marriage

73

.

.

.

.

.

****lelo****

i was in the kitchen making something to eat..
recently i only come out when my mom and dad are

not home then i lock myself in my room...

weeks ago i locked myself in my room (it was my first attempt of locking my door so that my dad doesnt come in) but as he found out that am locking my room he went to tell my mom that i had locked myself with a boy and we were on to some nasty stuff.. that was before my mom found out that i was pregnant...

the next moment he faked a headache and asked my mom to get him pills.. my mom as a slave without knowing and hiding behind "i care about him" went to the chemist.. but that day was the day he beat me so hard that i couldnt walk.. he avoided hitting my face and hitted from my neck down to my legs.. i had to wear long clothing for almost two weeks and walk in pain since i didnt want to show that i was beaten...

so after 2 weeks my mom wanted to know what was wrong because i locked myself in my room... and she saw how i would walk.. and thats when my dad told my mom that am doing all that becouse i am pregnant and dont know who the father is.. so now

my mom calls me a hoe...

so after making food i quickly went to my room...

after a hour i heard them come in.. i just tucked myself in the blankets and faced the ceiling..

after a while my mom came knocked like a maniac on my door.. i went to open..

her : lelo... am sick and tired of your attitude miss.. and it ends today..

me :.....

her : i didnt send you to sleep around neh... i didnt send you to go opening your legs to every guy you see so please.. as long as you living in my house, you will do house chorse and cook... understood??

me : yes ma..

her : starting now.. better get started..

i kept quite...

she left and i just got fear skipping in me...

i quickly thought of a plan that would get me out of this situation.. without proof no one will believe my

story so the big catch is to get attention...

i thought of a plan and i dialed nonhlanhla....

her : baby...

me : i need your help..

her : what??

me : do you have airtime??

her : yah.. and free minutes...

me ; owk, am going to hung up.. when i make a
please call, please call me...

her : owk..

me : owk and please make a recorder of the
conversation.. owk.. make a screen recorder...

her : owk..

me ; actually face time me and screen record it...

her : you worring me lelo..

me : just do what i say..

her : owk..

me : one last thing.. once you hear something is wrong.. call the police and direct them to our house.. come with them..

her : owk, now you scaring me for real..

me : just do as i say..

her : lelo??

me : please...

her : owk...

me : owk, i gotta go..

i hung up, took a deep breath and hoped my plan would work..

i went to start cleaning.. mom and dad were sitting in the living room... i thought mabye my plan wouldnt work becouse seemed like my mom was not going out today...

after a while in my room locked.. after a while my dad banged the door.. i didnt open..

him : if i break this door open, you going to regreat it...

he banged the door again...

i made a please call quickly... nonhlanhla took long to call but she eventually called... i answered her call and placed my phone on the cardboard, between my books.. with the camera facing the bed.. it was not visible but if you pay attention you could see it...

i then opened the door in fear and ran on the bed..

he opened and looked at me in anger... he was looking at me like he could kill me at any moment...

him : how long did you think you can run away from me??

me :.....

him ; nowere to hid huh??

me :.....

he locked my door... and came to me..

.

.

.

.
nonhlanhla

i was sitting on my bed looking at the facetime..

i saw lelos father come in and their conversation was loud enough for me to hear...

in few minutes i saw lelos father leaving but coming closer to lelo..

he had his belt loose and his trousers down.. he pulled lelo and forced her lower clothing off..

immediatly i ran to mbali who was outside ...

me : mbali please borrow me your phone..

her : am listening to music...

me : its urgent.. lelo is in trouble and i want to call the cops..

her : what??

me : look.. i showed her the call and at this moment lelo is crying and trying to move but her father is on top of her with his hands on lelos mouth.. my eyes dropped tears and i started crying.. but had to be

strong for lelo..

mbali handed me her phone and i called the cops...

me : hello.. i would like to report a crime..

officer : continue mam..

me : my friend is being raped by her father...

i gave them her address...

after i hung up and ran to dad... he was with mom in the living room...

me : dad, please take me to lelos house...

dad : why??

me : please dad... hurry...

dad : whats going on...

me ; i hate to do this.. but look..

i showed them my phone and their faces changed...
my dad jumped..

dad : what the.....

he stood up...

mom : am coming with... were is lelos mother when this happenes??

me : i dont know...

mom : how did you get the video..

me : its not a video, i am face timing her...

mom : " ist happening now??

me : yes..

mom : kevin phangisa..

dad took the keys and we went.. mbali came along.. and we drove there...

i looked at my phone and i see lelo is now alone.... guess that animal is done..

i was in tears and pain...

i got there and already i saw the police van outside.. i hung up and placed my phone in my jacket..

we got out and stood outside...

the officers were at the door talking to lelos dad..just as we walked towards the door, lelos mom came...

her : what is going on here?.....

i ran to the police...

me : hay officers, anything??

officer : excuse me, you are??

me : lelos friend, the one who called you..

officer : oh, thank you for the tip.. we taking mr mthiyane for questioning...

me : i would also like to bring forth evidence and make a statement on this..

officer : owk, we can go to the station..

me : my dad will drive me..

we all went to the station with the officers.. i didnt see lelo...

i cant believe i have been a bad friend... i always knew something was wrong but this?? this is beyond....

[12/14, 04:49] Zozaness: Go to Home

The villagegirl an the playboy: arranged marriage

74

.
. .
. .
. .
. .
. .
. .

****nompilo****

i have been in my room for a while now.. wishing that this is a joke... we laying on the bed with siya in silent... only his phone was playing music but us, we were just quite but in the same room, laying on the same bed... but no conversation.. just us in our thoughts....

just in the blue i heard my self speak..

me : you have been away for long now... can you please hold me...

he came closer still in silence.. he held me from the back.. feeling his touch just made my blood flow, his touch made me feel like am floating... i turned to face him... he looked at me, i kissed his forehead and buried my head on his chest..

i heard his sigh..

me : please hold me tighter..

he moved even more closer and hugged me as if there was nothing else to worry about.. there was no more space between us..

him : mamas??

me : shhhh junior... i just want to hear your heart beat.. please dont say anything..

he kept quite, brushed my hair as i listen to his heartbeat..

i always call him junior when am emotional.. but normally hes papas or babe or siya...

we stayed like that till i eventually slept...

.

.

.

****kg****

i have never really went to nthabisengs house after that day.. i have never seen nthabisengs sister since the day she was angry at me.. i hope i find her home today..

i was with my father.. we were driving to nthabisengs house.. even though its been almost a year since i last went there, i still remember..

we got there and went to ring the bell..

a old woman opened the door.. this must be her mom..

her : dumelang, can i help you??

me : are you nthabisengs mom??

her face changed a little.. it was like i was reopening old wounds again...

her : yes.. whos asking??

me : may we please come in?

her : sure..

she led us in and took us in the living room... the father was sitting in the living room watching tv.. we greeted and he greeted back..

N mom : may i pour you something to drink??

dad : no thank you.. we wont be long...

she came to sit with us...

dad : we appologise for only coming so late after your daughter passed away.. but my son here was having depression moments so he couldnt come..

N mom : what is this about??

as we were about to speak tshepiso came in..

tshepiso : you?? kg??

me : hay...

N mom : ibile wamotseba?? (so you know him?)

tshepiso : yes.. he was the father of nthabisengs unborn baby... the one i told you about...

N mom : eng?? (what??)

N dad : ureng?? (what are you saying??)

me : its true...

N mom : heeee... here comes the devil to tempt me..
what you doing here?? huh??

me : ma, with all due respect, i just came to
appologise..

N mom : appologise?? appologise?? for what?? for
killing my child or for not even having the thought to
even come earlier??

me : as my dad said.. i have been facing depression
for these past months.. i just got counselling a month
ago..

N dad : son, i am not going to sit here and pretend
like i find your presence owk.. but i also wont
pretend like am God and judge you.. but i and to
know.. what happened?? mabye knowing the truth
might just bring closure...

N mom : what?? nare waikutlwa ?? (do you hear
yourself?)

N mom : mamonare butle... (mamonare wait)... go

ahead son..

me : well, after finding out that shes pregnant, i refused to believe that it was my child..

N dad : why??

me ; nthabiseng and i only slept once.. we were not dating..

N mom : maka (lies) how would you sleep with someone if you not dating?? nthabiseng would not do that... you just making up lies becouse my child is not here to defend herself...

N dad : mamonare please...

i looked at the mother and the father and tshepiso.. then i looked at my dad and looked down...

me : i was known for sleeping around with girls.. so that day it was almost unplanned, we were both drunk.. so we didnt use protection. but she promised to drink the morning after pill, i gave her money for that.... so when she told me she was pregnant it bacme hard for me to accept.. i know what i did is wrong. i couldve just took responsibility and mabye,

just maybe she wouldn't have went to abort and died...

N mom : well thanks to you she did..

N dad : no... thanks to you, we found her body and we were able to bury her in respect and honour.. if you have not acted and thought quickly we wouldn't have known where her body was.. and who knows what they could have done to her body...

dad : thank you...

N dad : i must say.. it shows respect that you actually did come to us to apologise for being a reckless boy with no responsibility and respect.. but i hope that ntabiseng's death has taught you something...

i was never expecting this.. my tears just came out...

N dad : i will forgive you if you promise me something...

me : anything rra (sir)

N dad : dont let my daughters death be invain.. change.. be a better person.. make your father proud,

shame the devil.. thats what i want from you..

me : will do sir..

he stood up to hug me.. i couldnt hold back the tears
so i let them out...

N dad : thank you son??

me : no.. thank you sir... God knows i dont deserve
your kindness...

N dad : and God also knows you deserve freedom
and a great life...

i smiled and he went back to sleep...

N dad : the bible says "who is with no sin, let him
cast the first stone" i am very sinful, therefore i cant
judge becouse i myself dont want to be judged... the
bible also says "forgive" i have things that i want to
be forgiven for.. and i will do things that i will ask
forgiveness from in the future.. mamorane, hate will
only hurt you not him..

N mom :.....

N dad : dont hate, nthabiseng would never want
that... you yourself made mistakes... we as parents

are to be blames for nthabisengs death.. because for her not to tell us is because we were always hush on her.. if mabye we were a little liniant, she wouldve told us about the pragnancy... so its not only the young mans fault...

N mom :.....

she sighed and looked at me..

N mom : am sorry.. i was just so hurt and looking for someone to blame.. and the fact that you came here almost a year later just fumed old wounds... i am really sorry..

me : its owk ma.. actually am sorry.. i didnt mean to dug up old wounds..

she also came to hug me...

tshepiso : i hate you...

me : i love you...

she smiled and also came to hug me... she spoke in my ears while hugging me...

tshepiso : i still see the image of her laying on that bed.. its horrible..

me : hush.. dont fight the tears.. let them out...

she then cried....

tshepiso : i thought it would go away but its still there...

me : everything will be owk.. i also still hear our last conversation and that image still pops up in my mind.,...

tshepiso : am starting to hate nights..

me : yah.. thats when every thought and image comes and haunt you...

N dad : if you 2 are speaking wedding vows, tell us now so that we know when to prepare..

we all laughed and pulled out of the hug...

dad : thank you for being kind and understanding... now that my son has found closure i pray that he fully recovers.. i also pray that the wound that we coused in this family will heal.. in due time...

N dad ; we will..

dad ; we better get going...

N mom ; oh please, dinner is almost ready, you can join us...

dad : well, i eat like a lion, a whole cow.... is there enough??

we all laughed...

N mom : theres enough to even call 5 more people..

N dad : and when she that, she means that...

we laughed again...

.

.

.

****siya****

i woke up to mamas in my arms and her head on my chest.. i didnt want to move.. even though i really needed the toilet i just layed like that for a while.. i just feel free when i am with her... i wish i could just take her and fly to another continent were my dad wont just budge in and bring woman like am a wominiser.. those days are gone..

i couldnt keep it in anymore so i slightly moved and went to the toilet.. i washed my hands and came out.. i looked at her.. i just stared at her dark skin..

i went back to laying next to her, but this time i faced up and looked at the ceiling...

after a few she got up.. went to the toilet and came back to bed...

her : what time is it??

me ; 7pm..

her : ohh no.... i havnt even made dinner..

me : dont worry, i will go make something fast...

her : can i help.. i need the distraction..

me : owk..

we washed our faces and went down..

we decided on making wrapes with chicken nuggets inside.. well we already had wraps, we bought already made wraps so all we have to do is warm it up.. we cooked chicken nuggets and some chips on the side...

our kitchen moment was not like all the time.. we were not laughing and playing around like all the time... we were all formal.. it was just "please pass me this, please pass me that" and thats all.. there was no kissing while cooking, no running around, no tasting.. just nothing..

its like am in a cooking class partnered with someone i hardly know...

after we were done we dished up and set the table..

me : i would go call thandeka but that would send falls massages.. so!

her : its owk, i will call her...

she went up...

.

.

.

****nompilo****

i went up to were thandekas room was...

i knocked.. she opened..

me : food is ready..

her : thank you..

as i turned around she touched my shoulder..

i looked at her..

her : i am sorry that i caused so much trouble for you and your husband.. believe me when i say, it was not mentioned to me that he is married.. if i had known, i wouldnt have agreed..

me ; its owk..

her : no its not.. i didnt live my life to be a home recker.. my dad always told me that i will be arraigned to marry a royal man, but no one said anything about me being a second wife..

me : i said its owk, no need to explain..

i turned and went down..

she followed...

[12/14, 04:49] Zoaness: 75

.

- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .

****nonhlanhla****

so its 9pm at night and we just finished with dinner and washing the dishes... we just finished watching uzalo.. yah i dont like muvhango so nah... mbali yena is still downstairs with mom and dad watching tv...

so since you know that 3 days ago lelos father was arrested.. we all went to the police station with evidence.. i gave the police the video call i screen recorded and the dna of the child is the second evidence.. lelo was also taken to be examined and it was figured that she had internal damage.. lelo said it was because of the beating and kicking.. so that alone was enough to put lelos father in jail for a long time...

but eversince that day, lelo has been staying with us.. she refused to go home.. her mom doesnt know were i stay and she doesnt know that lelo is here.. well she suspects that shes here but when she comes to school to ask me, i told her i dont know were she is...

my parents also thought it would be better for her to be around me, since am her best friend.. that would give her some sort of saftey...

she was in our room.. she hardly comes out.. she only comes out to eat breakfast, lunch, dinner and to help us clean.. but mostly shes alone in our room.. but sometimes with me...

me : am back...

her : uzalo is finished??

me : yah..

her : so what happened??

me : you know, mastermind your crush being all the master and mxo my crush being the stubborn handsome guy nje...

her : lol....

at that moment my phone rang, it was unknown.. i answered...

voice : hay, my dark chocolate...

me : halo, who am i speaking to..

voice ; hao, do you always forget your boyfriends voices??

me : are you going to tell me or i should hung up??

voice : your attitute is all i need yaz...

me : mxm, bye..

i wanted to hung up..

voice : owk wait... its Ayanda...

me : Ayanda??

him : yes..

me : how did you get my tens??

him ; physics groupchat...

me : but how did you know which one is me??

him : i called every number till i recognised your voice..

me : mxm, Ayanda am serious...

him : am also serious..

me :.....

him ; owk, am joking.. luckily your dp is visible...

me : so you were scrolling through dps to find mine??

him : believe it or not.. yes...

me ; mxm...

him : no this time am serious..

me : cant be.. who gave you my numbers??

him : am serious.. like really.. i mean theres only 23 physics learners in our class so it wasnt difficult...

me : whatever.. so what do you want??

him : well i was thinking mabye i could take you to golf sometime this weekend...

me : i dont play golf...

him ; i can teach you.. am a best player..

me : well am not interested..

him : owk.. we can get ice cream..

me : i hate ice cream..

him : owk what ever you want to have...

me : well how about yuou stick to your girls and i focus on school.. huh??

him : what girls??

me : we all know you dating one of those netball girls..

him : me?? my dark chocolate.. i have never dated anyone at school.. as in no one.. i never like dating at school it was never my style... all the girls you see me with they just friends..

me ; lies....

him : am serious...

me : not believing you...

him : well its cool.. but me and God know the truth...

me : dont involve God in your nonsense...

him : mara dark chocolate why do you hate me
mara??

me : i dont hate you.. but i dont love you either..

him : ohh owk.. i dont mind though.. i will hotspot
you my love.. in that way we will love each other..

i laughed...

him ; she laughed... ohhhh my dark chocolate
laughed...

me : no i didnt...

him ; yes you did...

me : mxm.. bye ayanda

him : wait you havnt answered me...

me : what??

him : a date....

me : no...

him ; please...

me : no...

him : you really going to let me sleep with a broken

heart??

me : yes, you done...

him : last thing..

me : what??

him : someone just told me now that you love talking to me..

me : whoever told you that was lying to you..

him ; really??

me : yes...

him : so you dont like talking to me??

me : no, it gives me ugly vibes...

him : yet you still on the phone with me right now..
its been minutes.. if you hated talking to me you
wouldve dropped my call the moment you heard it
was me...

me : mxm..

i hung up...

i then shook my head rolling my eyes...

lelo : what a convo.... what was it about...

me : he was just being a jurk....

my phone made a "peep!!" sound... i checked and it was a message...

it was written.. " why you checking my massages?? see, you love me, stop fighting it.. anyway goodnight, sleep tight..... Ayanda loves you.." i rolled my eyes...

lelo : those eyes tell me that Ayanda just massaged you....

me : he just doesnt get the massage.. like i dont want him..

lelo : really now??

me : i dont...

lelo : mhm... owk..

i lay on my bed..

i was sharing a bed with mbali now.. lelo was sleeping on mbalis bed...

after a while.. as we were talking.. lelo cried in pain...

me : whats wrong?? lelo?

lelo : aaaaaaaaa... aaaaaa my... my..

i ran out to mom and she came running with mbali...
she then rubbed lelos stomache with some lotion...
then gave her warm water...

after a while she relaxed...

me : will she be owk ma??

mom : yes.., its normal, its the pregnancy package...

lelo : a pregnancy that i didnt want.. and now have no
choice but to carry it.. and now am going to be a
mother... what will i say to him/her?? that me and
him/her share the same father?? that he/shes a
product of rape and abuse?? this is all unfair..

she layed facing away..

mom : its owk my child.. all is well.. God has a plan
for you..

she kissed her and wished us goodbye...

i went to her to kiss her and layed with her for a
moment just to comfort her...

mbali : can i also come rub you lelo??

lelo turned and looked at her..

she smiled..

lelo : yes you may..

mbali : phew owk.. phela i didnt want to just come..

phela people who are upset can kill you ka clapa nje..

we all laughed

[12/14, 04:50] Zozaness: The villagegirl an the
playboy: arranged marriage

76

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

****week later****

****thandeka****

i was woken up by my ringing phone... it was my aunt...

me : hello..

her : hay thandeka.. how are you??

me : am owk aunt...

her : really?? i just arrived here wanting to surprise you but i was told you have been taken to your husband...

me : yes aunt..

her : i always knew that this day will come.. but i wasnt expecting it to be too soon... so how is he treating you?? i heard he already has a wife...

me : yes...

her : kodwa thandeka, did you know??

me : yes aunt..

her : and you accepted??

me : well you know i always want to make daddy happy.. so yes i agreed...

her : you agreed to be a second wife??

me : i have nothing to loose...

her : you are messing another womans life thandeka....

me : she doesnt mind.. the chief said they didnt fall in love naturally, they were first forced into marriage.. so he said mabye he will also love me as time went.. they took months before they fell inlove so am prepared to suffer the silence for the first months...

her : so they were also arranged?? and again they arranged him another wife?? kanti who is this man that is always being arranged wifes??

me : well, he is a business man.. he deals with cars.. people might say he doesnt earn much but if you really think about it.. he earns more then what people think...

her : and how do you know this..??

me : i googled..

her : thandeka, if you not happy just tell me and i will get you out of that marrage..

me : its not about happiness aunt.. its about my life.. i didnt want to be here.. i called my father last week and told him that i hate the tension here and that i feel like am coming in between a couples life.. but he said that its not all about happiness.. he told me that he wasnt happy that he had to marry my mothers sister wife but becouse it was opening doors for the family he did.. even my mom knew that and didnt have a choice but to agree... so now am doing this for the family.. plus i see a good future here.. i get to eat fancy stuff and all that.. so why would i turn down such a life.... a life that i see on tv, for happiness?

her : thandeka uzolimala (you will get hurt)

me : aunt look at sisi, she was supposed to be married off but she decided to fall pregnant.. look at her now.. the father of the child ran away.. she is living at home.. she has dissapointed dad and disgraced the family.. am not taking her footsteps.. i want dad to be proud of me...

her : hai.. i wash my hands.. i see that nothing i say will change your mind..

me : did you know they have triplets??

her : who??

me : my husband and his 1st wife...

her : see thandeka.. they are a full family now... wena you extra...

me : an extra that will also bear him children...

her : hai.. thandeka, your father has set you up for failure..

me ; why are not happy for me?? i mean i am i not the first daughter to live such a standard life??

her : a starndard life that will bring only tears and lonliness...

me : i dont agree..

her : owk thandeka.,. but just know i will always be here when you need me...

me : owk aunt..

her : now that i know you owk, i am glad..

me : thank you aunt,..

her : take care babe..

me : bye aunt...

i hung up...

i sat up really thinking about all..

after a while i brushed my teeth, washed my face and went downstairs... i found the helper in the kitchen cleaning...

me : good morning...

her : good morning mam...

me : so, what are we having for breakfast?

her : well the sir and nompilo have made cereals for themselves, so i didnt make breakfast..

me ; ohhh (fake smile).. well i dont feel like cereal.. is there anything else..

her : i could make you some eggs, toasted bread and bacon with viennas..

me : i would really appreciate that... thank you.....

i heard like a baby cry...

me : is my husband in the living room?

her : your husband??

me : yes.. the sir...

her : ohhh... huh.... (looking confused) yes he is with nompilo...

me ; owk thank you...

i slowly went to the living room... i walked in and stood next to the wall...

me : good morning...

them : good morning...

they continued playing with the babies...

me : ncooo, your kids look very cute...

mpilo : thanks...

i walked to the couch to sit down...

me : so whats their names....

mpilo : this is thembelihle, he is misokuhle and she is siphesihle...

me : so its lihle, kuhle and sphe..

mpilo : no its sihle not sphe...

me : ohhh sihle... why sihle, isnt that a boy name?? mabye sphe..

mpilo : my kids, my decision.. (turns to baba) siya am going to bath the kids...

baba ; can i help?? am kinda bored...

mpilo : owk.. we can ask mamzondo to also help since they are 3 kids and we only 2..

she looked at me and rolled her eyes..

they left...

i just sat there...

.

.

.

.

****month later****

****nompilo****

schools are closed for june so my siblings are coming to stay with me for the holidays... thandeka is still staying with us..

since its holidays, i told mamzondo to also take a holiday off but we will still pay her same amount... i mean we cant live at 4 ladies in the house and still let an old lady

mind you they dont know nothing about me having a sister wife..

they are supposed to be here about an hour from now and am making lunch..

siya came down, he just finished bathing... he smells so good..

him : all done.. now am really for my sisters in law..

me : lol...

after a while thandeka came down.. mind you its 1pm and she just came out.. shes been in her room all day...

her : goodmorning...

us : morning..

her : mhm.. sister, i am running out of toiletry stuff..

i looked at her, then at siya...

me : siya will take care of that, right siya?

him : sure.. i will go to the stores now... anything for you??

me : well, just some snacks, sweets and whatever you see that you think i will love...

him : owk..

me : ohhh please dont forget to bring many snacks, the giant eater is coming...

him : mbali??

we laughed...

he left..

her : can i ask who is mbali??

me : my little sister..

her : ohh how old is she??

me : shes 13..

her : ohhh cute..

me : yes.. they coming to visit today for the holidays..

her : they??

me : i have siblings.. nonhlanhla and mbali..

her : how old is nonhlanhla??

me : shes 15

her : ohhhh...owk... can i help prepare the food??

me : am already done.. but you can help clean up the kitchen,..

her : owk....

[12/14, 04:51] Zozaness: ontinuation

- .
- .
- .
- .
- .

.

****nonhlanhla****

so today we visiting sis nompilo.. lelo has gone back home.. actually they went back to swaziland.. lelos grandmother asked that they go visit untill the baby is born.,.. so i guess i will be seeing lelo next year, but surely be calling now and then...

we arrive at the gate and ring the bell...

nompilo comes out to open..

mpilo : ncoooo

she came to hug us..

mom : see you girls after the holidays owk??

us : yes mom..

dad : and behave yourselves..

us : will do..

mom : mpilo please take care of them..

mpilo : will do ma...

dad : honey we have to leave now...

mom : owk girls bye....

us ; bye...

we got in...

mbali : so you not going to pick our bags??

mpilo : nop.. you on your own there...

mbali : jho.. i dont mind.. uncle siya will help...

mpilo : sadly hes not here..

mbali ; were is he??

mpilo : he went out...

i laughed...

nhlanhla : bakulaile... (serves you right)

mbali ; mxm...

we walked in...

mpilo : take your bags to the guestroom, i will
prepare lunch...

mbali : owk...

mpilo ; ohh and please use the guestroom on the

right.. we have a guest...

mbali ; who?? beyonce??

nonhlanhla ; mbali!! would you shut it for 2 minutes??

mbali ziped her mouth...

mpilo : no mbali its lady gaga...

we laughed...

we went up and went to put our bags.. then we ran down...

we helped mpilo set the table.. as we were almost done, uncle siya wlked in...

mbali : uncle siya..

she ran to him...

mbali can be a child sometimes.. but i prefare her being a child then being a talking tom with no filter....

as she went to hug siya a lady came down the stairs.. she was beautiful, nice body.. i wonder who she is...

i greeted siya and he greeted back...

lady ; thank you so much baba...

uncle siya handed her a plastic bag...

uncle siya : i wasnt sure what products you use so i just picked nje..

lady : its owk..

uncle siya : and i got alot of snacks for you my sisters in law.. and for mamas...

mbali : woooooow (imitating modechi and rigby)
they laughed...

mpilo : thandeka this are my siblings.. nonhlanhla and mbali.. guys this is thandeka..

us : hay...

thandeka : ncoooo arent they too cute..

she came to hug me.. i smiled and hugged back.. then she went to hug mbali.. she also smiled and hugged back.. then as she pulled out of the hug she held mbalis cheeks like a baby.. i laughed in secret..

mbali removed her hands off her cheeks..

mbali : am 13 not 3....

thandeka : am sorry mahn.. i just havnt seen such beauty.. i mean look at yall as well as your sister.. beautiful chocolate queens..

mbali : thanks... see uncle siya.. everyone admits that you got yourself a diamond wife in sis nompilo.. we laughed..

thandeka : indeed...

we then went to the dining room to eat...

sis thandeka was still upstairs... so we were waiting for her...

nonhlanhla : so sis nompilo, what is sis thandeka doing here??

mpilo : well..

she looked at uncle siya and uncle siya coughed...

nonhlanhla : well??

mpilo : she was brought by the chief..

nonhlanhla : to??

mpilo : (looking at uncle siya) to be siyas second

wife...

mbali : huh?? second??

mpilo : yes..

nonhlanhla : so uncle siya you agreed??

siya : no, my father came here to drop her off without my knowledge...

mbali : i just didnt like her from the sight of her.. shes too forward.. arnt royal wives supposed to be humble and obidient??

nonhlanhla : ufananawe (shes just like you)..

mbali ; no shes not...

mpilo : actually, mbali, shes your match... thats why you felt off when you saw her, thats becouse shes your personality..

mbali : hai, am the only mbali, and my personality is unique..

we laughed...

nonhlanhla : i must say i also have a bad feeling about her.. but hai.. mabye shes nice after all..

mbali : mara sis nompilo are you willing to let her in your marriage?? phela am always told 3 is a crowd..

mpilo : theres an elder here... (looking at siya).. respect...

us : sorry...

uncle siya just laughed...

sis thandeka walked in..

thandeka : sorry for keeping yall...

she sat down.. we said a prayer and started eating....

thandeka : so are yall still in school??

mbali : yes..

thandeka : grade ??

mbali : 8

nonhlanhla : 10

thandeka : woow.. soon you will be done with school.. so what do yall want to be..

nonhlanhla : an artichector...

thandeka : woow.. you??

mbali : well i want to be a professional sports player...

thandeka : what sports??

mbali : basketball, fencing, tennis and many other sports that i find interesting...

thandeka : dont you have any professional job you want?? like doctor, accountant??

mbali : no, its not for me..

thandeka : but why not take anything for incase??

mbali : whats wrong with sports??

thandeka : its just that its not something you can intirely relay on...

mbali looked rather pissed or annoyed and when shes like this.. her mouth spits whatever the mind thinks..

mbali : sorry to ask, how old are you??

thandeka : oh am 23

What?? shes way older then nompilo?? woooow....

mbali : did you finish school??

thandeka : yes...

mbali : nompilo is 19, shes married, she has 3 kids and still going to study to be a doctor.. and here you are 4 years older then nompilo, finished school.. yet you want to eat in her plate... moral of the story.. dont be here acting like a teacher when you cant teach yourself selfrespect and get your life together...

mbali left the table...

mbali : mpilo, i ma going to unpack.. can i eat in my room??

mpilo : sure mbali...

she went away...

we sat there looking our food.. with no word said...

i knew it... and knowing mbali, its war from now on.. i know i dont like mbali when shes like this becouse she often says things that are offending.. but if thandeka she is spiting on then i will grab my popcorn and watch..

these are going to be the best holidays ever...

thandeka : i will be in my room if you need me..

she also left her room....

nonhlanhla : i better get up.. phela our rooms are on 1 floor.. i dont want her strangling my lil sister..

they laughed.. i stood up and went to our room...

i found her packing..

me : mbali?? is it safe to come in??

her : as long as you not thandeka then yes...

i went to help her pack...

me : are you owk??

her : am good.. unpacking made my mind ease alittle..

me : mbali....

her : i know, am sorry... i was just angry.. i mean shes the last person to be speaking like that about my career.. and if you want me to go appologise, i rather go back to mom and dad.. am not doing it..
i.....

me : would you shut up and let me speak??

her :

me : thank you.. i wasnt going to say appologise.. i actually wanted to say, for the first time your gift is used on the right person..

her : huh??

me : when it comes to miss thandeka, you have no limits my lil sister..

her : so you not going to shout at me??

me : no... we all know that nompilo is very sweet and wouldnt hurt a fly.. but you on the ather hand.. you spit swords.. your words are raw.. so.. who better to save nompilos wedding then you...

her : am only 13...

me : yes.. listen something doesnt add up.. shes just doesnt give me peace.. mabye God brought us here for this mission...

her : lol.. you just want to get me in trouble..

me : never.. i promise..

we laughed and continued packing...

[12/14, 04:53] Zozaness: The villagegirl an the
playboy: arranged marriage

77

- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .

****siya****

i understand that mbali is angry that her sister is in
this situation.. but to speak like that to a grown up is
not on... i am sure gogo didnt raise such
disrespectfull kids..

me : mamas, i am going upstairs to your siblings..

her : for?

me : i need to speak to mbali..

her : owk, i will be here with the kids..

i went up and got to their room.. i
knocked...nonhlanhla nopened..

me : can i come in??

nhlanhla : yes uncle siya..

me : please sit down, both of yall. i need to speak to
yall..

they both sat down.. i sat in the middle of them...

me : i understand that you might not like thandeka
due to the fact that you think shes here to take me
away from your sister... but the behaviour you are
carrying mbali, must stop..

mbali : but uncle....

me : no buts.. as you heard, she is 23.. 10 years older
then you.. no matter what you have to respect her.. i
will not have this disrespect in this house..
understood??

they nodded..

me : good.. you will treat her like an elder.. owk??

them : yes uncle siya...

me : listen, this is not your fight.. this is between my father, nompilo and i... trust me i will fix all this.. but you have to behave yourselves.. you came here to visit us and enjoy your holidays not to cause troubles.. so please let us fight this battle alone.. if we need help we will tell yall understood.??

them : understood...

mbali : does this mean i have to appologise??

me : just dont do it again.. just behave like a 13 year old..

mbali ; kanti how do i bahave??

me : 31..

nonhlanhla wanted to laugh but held herself.. mbali just looked down..

i stood up...

me : i hope you heard me owk.. be the respectable, mannered kids your grandmother raised..

i left them and headed downstairs.. i bumbled into thandeka on the stairs...

her : i cant believe you just let that child speak to me like that... knowing that i didnt have a choice to be here.. i was also forced here, i didnt want to..

me : that childs name is mbali.. and she didnt say something i dont agree with, thats why i didnt stop her... ohh and please pack all your stuff and be ready, tommorrow we leaving...

her : were to?

me : home.. i mean you were forced right, you didnt want to be here right, so it shouldnt be a problem..

i left her there and went to mamas...

.

.

.

****nonhlanhla****

me : so plan ruined..

her ; yah, seems like we have to be on our best

behaviour...

me : lets hope they win this..

her : yah..

me : but to be honest, i was really looking forward to seeing you against her...

her : well i will be on my best behaviour alright but if she dares step on my toes.. am on her..

me : hahahahahahaha

her : and i am soo craving for her..

me : usile yaz mbali.. (you naughty mbali)

her : hini.. (what) ??

we laughed..

my phone rang.. it was Ayanda.. i hung up...

her : who was that??

me : no one...

my phone rang again... it was still Ayanda.. i hung up again...

her : mr nobody must be ugly hai..

me : huh??

her : for you to drop all his calls like that.. that means hes ugly...

me : ohhh..

her : so its a guy?? and hes ugly??

me :

her : who is it??

me :

her : nonhlanhla??

me : i dont like it when you come for me.. can you save your energy for miss thandeka??

she laughed...

her : my energy can cover both of yall..

we laughed...

my phone rang again and she grabed it and ran to the other side of the bed...

she answered...

her ; hay.

him :.....

her : this is not nonhlanhla speaking, its her lil sister...

him ;.....

her : mbali...

him ;.....

her : she is here, but she doesnt want to speak to you..

him :.....

her : no its not that, its only becouse she is blushing too much to speak to you...

i quickly ran to her side she jumped over the bed...

her : see, now shes running after me becouse am telling you the truth...

him :.....

her : yah, thats what she always says.... but its not true..

him :.....

her : yah, just few minutes ago she was wishing that

you would call..

him :.....

her : how do you think i have her phone?? she gave it to me...

i jumped over the bed and she ran to the bathroom and locked the door...

she continued talking as i banged the door..

me : mbali mahn... open this door...

(banged the door harder)..

me : mbali...

after a while she then came out...

i grabed my phone from her...

me : uyadina yaz.. (you annoying you know)

her : he has a nice voice..

me : mxm...

her : so you and Ayanda??

me : why didnt you just ask him becouse you were talking to him?.

her : you angry??

me :.....

her : owk, i will sing till you forgive me...

ohhh no..

her : 1, 2 buggle my shoes...3,4 open the door... 5, 6 lay down sticks...7,8 make them straight... 9,10 a big fat hen...

she repeated the silly song of hers over and over again..

i tried ignoring her and laying on the bed.. but she didnt stop...

after a while as i was scrolling on my phone.. she started singing another song...

her : i am a barbie girrrrl, in the barbie world..
imagination.. come on babrbie lets go barbie..
ohhhhhhoohhh oooohhhhoohhh..

she repeated the song over and over...

i put on my earphones... she pulled one out... i put it on again.. she pulled it out again...

me : mbali!! nx...

she let me be and started jumping on the bed.. still singing....

she was becoming really annoying now...

me : mbali mahn!!

her : do you forgive me??

she looked at me like she might just cry.,...

me : no...

she attempted to start singing and jumping again..

me : i mean yes.. yes i forgive you..

her : can i hug you or you gonna push me away??

me : come here..

i pulled her and hugged her...

mbali is annoying yes.. but i wouldnt trade her for anything.. not even R2.....lol

[12/14, 04:53] Zozaness: 78

.

.
. .
. .
. .
. .

****siya****

its 5am and i am done getting myself ready...
nompilo was still sleeping and the kids too...

i went to her and kissed her cheek, she slightly
opened her eyes...

me : morning, mamas..

her : morning papas...

me : am heading out now.. see you when i come
back..

her : so early??

me : you forgot that its almost a 5 hour drive??

her : ohh konje...

i kissed her again...

me : yah, i want to come back today.. even though i will be hella tired but i must...

her : owk.. drive safely...

me : thank you...

i kissed her on the forehead and on the cheeks then lastly on the lips..

me : i love you...

her : love you more...

i took my back pack and headed out.. i went upstairs to thandekas room... i knocked... she opened...

me : we need to get going..

she looked down and opened the door widly...

her : am done.. would you take the suitcase for me...

i went in and took the suitcase that was on the bed.. as i headed out she followed.. she wore a long dress with the beats she came wearing...

i took the bags in the car and she got in the car...

i also got in and drove...

we were mostly quite, never said a word...

we had a stop at the shops.. i was hungry, plus we never had anything in the morning...

me : need anything??

her : no thank you....

me : you had nothing in the morning...

her : its owk, i will eat when i get home..

i couldnt eat infront of her without her eating.. so i bought 2 sandwiches and coldrinks then came in the car...

me : here...

her : i thought i said i dont want anything...

me : i cant eat and have you look at me like i didnt bye for you.. thats heartless... so rather you watch me eat knowing you have your owk food..

her :.....

i got done eating and we left...

hours later we got to my fathers house.. i drive in

and park my car.. we get out and i take her bags out the car and head inside...

i knocked...

voice : come in...

i walked in and saw my dad with my aunt (his second wife) and my mom.. they looked shocked.. they kept looking at me then at thandeka then at the suitcase.....

me : sanibonani...

thandeka : sanibonani badala..

she bowed her head...

dad : siyabonga?? what is this??

me : am doing exactly what you did..

dad :??

me : remember you brought her with no warning and just dumped her in the house.. well i brought her back same way...

dad : maxulu?? uyabona?? (maxulu, you see??)

mom : son, why would you bring her back??

me : i made it clear that i dont want a second wife..
you decided to get me by force.. is not nompilo
enough??

they were speechless.. they just looked down... my
aunt excused herself..

aunt : let me give yall privacy...

dad : my daughter, please come sit down..

thandeka went to sit down and i also sat down..

dad looked really pissed but i didnt care...

dad : i will call your father, this must be fixed..

he stood up.. guess he went to make the call...

we sat there just quite.. but my moms eyes just
piercing in me.. i could feel she was looking at me..
and everytime i would look up, i would find her
looking straight in my eyes.. so i just looked down...

after a while dad came back...

dad : your dad is on his way.. he should be here in
about 2 hours..

wow, so we going to sit here for 2 hours in silence..
hai no.. i better go back.. my wife is waiting for me...

me : well, stay well i am leaving..

dad didnt say anything...

mom : were are you going??

me : home...

mom : siya, you need to explain to this ladys father
why you decided to dich her...

me : ****sigh**** alright, can i go to the car atleast, i cant
be here sitting in silence..

they didnt answer me.. so i just left and went to the
car...

i played music and layed back... i played games on
my phone.. then later called mamas...

she answered...

her : papas...

me : mamas.. how you??

her : am fresh.. just got out the shower..

me : thats great.. hows my babies..

her : also feeling fresh and very jumpy today.. they be hyper.. they even sing..

me : sing??

she put the phone next to the kids.. and spoke in the background..

her : sing for daddy kids.. sing for daddy..

they were just screaming nje.. and making noice.. but i guess thats singing.. that was so cute...

she put the phone close to her..

her : nice song hay...

me : very..

we laughed...

me : wait till they say papa..

her : ohhh nonono... they going to start with mama...

me : we will see...

we laughed...

her : i hope you not driving...

me : what if i am..??

her : siya!! then am hanging up..

me : owk am not...

her : serious??

me : do you hear a car hooting or anycars passing??

just as i said that a car hooted for the securites to open for it.. guess it was thandekas father...

her : i just did, so you driving??

me : no.. its thandekas dad..

her : ohh you have arrived??

me : yes.. i called to tell you that but i got off script..

her : like you always do...

me : lol.... blame it on you...

her : me?? aaaaaa!!!

i laughed...

her : lihle ha a!! (she was telling lihle "no"..

me : what was that??

her : sorry i was speaking to lihle.. he was eating my dress...

me : he wants to see whats under that dress...

she laughed...

her : usile yaz siya (you naughty siya)

me : am telling you..

i heard a knock on the window, i checked and it was a guared...

me : mamas, please hold on..

i lowered the window..

guared : the chief is calling for you..

me : am on my way..

he nodded and left... i got back to mamas..

me : mamas??

her : still here...

me : i have to go owk.. i will call you once am on my way back...

her : owk.. love you..

me : love you more...

i hung up and got out the car, making way to the house..

i got in and found 2 more men sitting down.. they also looked pissed...

so am sure its thandekas father and someone else.. an uncle or guared or someone..

me : sanibonani..

they greeted back...

i went to take a seat close to my mom...

man1 : son.. i am mr zulu.. the chief of kwamondi eshowe... i am thandekas father... and this here is also mr zulu.. Hlomani zulu.. my brother... very wife man...

i was lost, i mean, why do i have to know all this??

me : owk mr zulu...

dad : now son.. could you please tell mr zulu here why you brought back his daughter....

me : with all due respect mr zulu, i am a married

man.. i love my wife... i even have 3 kids with her.. so as you can see, i have no space for another wife..

mr zulu : mhm.. mr xulu (speaking to my dad) am dissapointed.. for a man who is about to be a chief, i feel sorry for your kingdome..

hlomani : i agree.. hes not ready... so as your son has made it clear, he is not fit to take responsibility and we all know that hes the only son you have.. so you know what this means right??

my dad looked down.. i was lost...

mr zulu : thats correct brother... you see our mistake was to trust you with our daughter.. i promised her mother that i would take care of her before she passed away.. see her mother kept her away from me and went to live in the village of kwamashu.. she knew that this would happen thats why she left with her... .. you know why she left??

i shook my head...

mr zulu : becouse she was a commoner... and as i went to step up as chief, i had to marry from royalty.. i had no choice... it was either love or my people.. i

couldnt sell my peoples land and their future into another chiefs hands.. so i agreed.. i told her mother that i would never love the royal wife like i love her.. but because she didnt understand she left me... i was depressed.. but she came back.. we lived and she bore me a son.. after the son was 13, she left.. she said she couldnt do this anymore because i was told to marry another wife.. that was a bit far i know but i wanted to unite kindoms so i agreed.. but that cost me her mother.. i still begged her to come back, called.. but nothing.. she didnt even say were she was.. but little did i know that she was carrying my daughter... i only found out recently when she was sick.. she made me swear that i would marry her off to a respectable family.. it hasnt even been months living with me then i was told about this kingdom.. they needed help in getting a royal wife to seal the final touch of you being a chief since your first wife is a commoner.. so i was willing to help.. i mean the family holds a strong respectable name.. i found it was good for my daughter.... but here we are... i must say, you quite brave.. choosing love over your kingdom, your people, their future...

i didnt say anything...

hlomani : we will not return the lobola money.. as it was not our fault..

mr zulu : mr xulu, am sorry that it didnt work out.. i will send my son to come take over, thandeka lets go...

they attempted to leave...

me : WAIT!!!!!!

[12/14, 04:54] Zozaness: continuation

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

me : WAIT!!

they all looked at me..

me : please stay for the night.. let me speak to my father and get back to you tommorow.. please, just one night...

mr zulu looked at his brother and his brother nodded, giving mr zulu assurance...

mr zulu : owk.. will do.. but we wont stay, we will go back to our village and come back tommorow to hear what you have decided..

me : thank you mr zulu..

mr zulu : dont dissapoint us son, dont dissapoint your kingdom...

i looked down..

mr zulu : guess we will see each other tommorow... stay well.. babxulu, mamxulu nisale kahle (stay well)...

dad : ube nohambo oluphephile (have a safe trip)..

mom : farewell...

they bowed in respect and left with thandeka...

mom : son?? are you really considering this??

me : depends...

mom : on??

me : dad...

dad looked up to me... i also looked at him..

me : baba! please be honest with me.. whats really going on??

he looked at me confused...

me : please baba.. i am in between a rock and a hard place.. i cant loose mpilo.. she is my everything.. she bore me triplets baba.. triplets.. 2 boys and 1 girl at the same time... she completes my life baba.. but also family is important.. i knew one day that i would be arranged to marry a royal wife.. i knew i had to go through that.. but what i dont understand is why did you arrange me nompilo and come again with a royal wife?? why didnt you arrange me a royal wife first then nompilo?? am lost...

he took a deep breather...

him : son.. i always knew that oneday all my evil doings would catch up with me.. i always knew that this hunger for riches would soon come hunting me down.. i sold my kids without for once thinking about their happiness.. all i was thinking was money..

me : what do you mean baba??

him : ****sigh**** i am going to need a strong cup of tea..

mom : coming right up.. i will go make it for both of you...

she stood up and went to make tea...

me : well??

him : you do know that i have 3 wives.. before all of them i was supposed to marry florence.. ntombifuthi's older sister..

me : who is florence and ntombifuthi??

him : ntombifuthi is nompilos grandmother..

me : the one that raised nompilo and her siblings??

him : yes...

me : owk...

him : i was 24 at that time.. and i was dating your mother already.... babnhlapo was a man living in the village.. he was using using my fathers land to build a cage for the cows and sheeps.. when my father knew about this he went to were he was and told him to remove all his herds and also pay a fine.. babhlapo came with a better idea that would benefit the family long term..

me : which was??

him : to let florence marry me.. in that way the agricultural business of babhlapo would not only be owned by the nhlapos but also by the xulus.. it was that simple and easy... he agreed.. later we found out that florence is pregnant.. my father got angry but babhlapo assured my father that ntombifuthi would be taken care of.. before even turning 18 she also got pregnant.. my father thought that mabye babhlapo was backing out of the deal... he couldnt understand why this was happening.. mind you the contract was only going to be signed once the couple marry... but my father kept heart.. we lived our lifes.. it was already obvious that i would not

marry from the nhlapos since babnhlapo only had 2 daughters..

me : so your sons were going to marry there.. like me??

him : yes.. so now we were looking at babnhlapos grandkids.. especially from ntombifuthi and florence... florence gave birth to 2 kids.. first born was a boy then followed by a girl.. because she came to the world before i could a boy we counselled the girl.. just after the second born was born florence left.. years later ntombifuthi gave birth to twins.. a girl and a boy.. my dad was getting old and i was already a chief having 2 wives.. my dad sent guards to take the boy twin to be a servant untill the promise of babnhlapo and your grandfather was sealed.. i got a second 3rd wife to up my chances of a boy.. i didnt want to but i was underpressure because i was the elder son.. plus i really wanted to be a chief.. when bongani (the twin) was 11 finally your mother bore me a son..

me : me!!

mom walked in and placed the tea on the table...

mom : you will call me when you need me...

she then left...

him : yes you.. the first son in 6 girls..i was happy, so happy.. but sbongile the other twin was old.. but we still hoped... i mean a lady 11 years older then the men.. sounds wrong.. but my father was now desperate.. a few years later before my father passed away.. he made me swear that my son will marry from the nhlapos... i promised.. he said he would haunt me if i didnt, he said that as a joke on his death bed.. but i didnt take it as a joke, i took it by heart... so when sbongile was 20 she gave birth nompilo.. you were only 10.. and thats when i tailored nompilo becouse i knew if i miss her, the chances of closing this deal was close to nul.. ntombifuthi had 5 kids.. 3 boys and 2 girls.. sbongile and lindiwe.. lindiwe doesnt have kids.. so sbongile was our only chance..

me : owk...

him : i was a chief now.. marrying my girls to other

kindoms, for unity.. i raised them with the thought that one day they would be princesses somewere... so they never really had a problem with that exept...

me : nobuhle??

him : yes.. she always wanted to be a model.. so she ran away when she learned that she is going to be married off.. even enhle....

me : **sigh**

him : your marriage with nompilo was to seal the deal your grandfather made with babnhlapo and the only way for the agriculture business to be given to them again..

me : i see.. and trust me back then i was so angry at you for having me to marry nompilo but as time passed all that became a blessing... i love her now, she is my all..

him : i understand that.. and its only now that my eyes are opened.. your love for nompilo is unique.. not even i had that love for your mother..

me : yah it scared me too... she really changed me..

and i wouldnt do anything to hurt her.. so dad, why must i marry a royal wife??

him : its the only way for you to be officially a chief in this kingdom after me.. since nompilo is a commoner you need a royal wife...

me : is there no other way i could turn this down??

him : if you refuse, there could be consequences.. the ancestors might just turn against you and thats not a good thing... but again... it is said that if a chief doesnt have a son, then the daughter can take over until a son is born and ready to take over..

me : i guess theres no daughter as well...

him : yes.. nobuhle and entle are out there living... and the rest are already married..

me : so basically theres no one to take over from me??

him : no.. i guess if you reject a second wife.. our kingdom falls.. ... all that our forefathers kept will be down..

me : a kingdom cant fall.. there needs to be

something we can do.. because i cant marry a second wife.. i made a promise and am sticking to it...

him : there is a way.. but it will be like a sacrifice to the forefathers to release you off and grant you the wish of not being a chief.. a ritual must happen.. its all in the hands of the great fathers of this kingdom..

me : what are my losses..

him : everything.. things might get rough through the ritual but in due time all will come back..

me : i think am ready for that..

him : you ready to bear punishment just to be with nompilo??

me : yes...

he sighed...

him : i dont understand this.. what about the kingdom??

me : dad.. cant i be a chief being married to nompilo??

him : that goes out of our beliefs son..

me : rules are ment to be bent.,..

him : that request might couse your life..

me : well i rather die then marry a second wife...

him : siyabonga?? ****sigh**** do you know what you putting yourself into??

me : yes.. its the risk i will take..

him : so what you going to tell mr zulu tommorrow...

me : that his son can come and take over untill i am done with my ritual...

he looked down defeated...

i stood up..

me : am really sorry dad.. i know you expected much from me since i was the only son you had.. am really sorry...

he didnt answer me..

i went to my car and went to chill and take a breather

i dialed nompilo... i think she answered

unknowingly...

her : mbali!! mbali! bring my phone wena...

i was now smiling alone listening to them...

mbali : just a minute..

her : did you drop the call mbali?? mbali mahn...
uyadina yaz.(you are irritating yaz).. that couldve
been siya...

mbali : well he will call again..

i heard one of my kids crying...

her : baby.. kuhle, kuhle... shhh baby.. mommy is
here nana mommy is here..

mbali : huh sis nompilo... the phone is not off..

her : bring let me see..

i heard shuffling... believe me i didnt hung up.. i was
just laughing and listening to them nje...

mpilo : hay papas..

me : mamas...

her : exactly how long have you been earsdropping??

me : i didnt earsdrop.. you answered my call so i listened..

her : waste of airtime...

me : lol..... mxm.. how you..

her : tired.. these kids are finishing my energy...

me : lol... listen mamas, i wont be coming back today..

her : noooooo. (sounding like a child) will i be sleeping alone today??

me : i will be with you in spirit...

her : am sad..

me : i know.. you probably pouting your mouth right now..

her : correct..

me : i love you mamas, never forget that...

her : you scaring me..

me : just by saying i love you??

her : its the way you said it... you not about to do

somthing that would hurt me right?/

me : no.. am about to kill myself..

her : siya?? you dont play like that...

me : am serious..

her : papas?? dont let me fly there..

i laughed...

me : am joking.. no am not doing anything that would hurt you...

her : owk.. talk later.. kuhle just spread his cry to lihle.. and i think sihle is about to catch on it too...

me ; owk.. will call soon...

her : stay well owk.. i love you..

me : i love you more..

after she started making kiss sounds..

i laughed..

her : papas, before i hung up guess what..

me : what??

her : am horny.,.. bye..

me : oooooohhhhh, am coming home now...

her : lol... bye papas.. love you, love you, love you..

me : love you 10 times...

i hung up... i looked at my phone.. i layed back and took a deep breath...

[12/14, 04:55] Zoaness: The villagegirl an the playboy: arranged marriage

79

.

.

.

.

.

??????

me : i dont understand ma.. how is it that i cant find my dad anywere?? not on social media, or anywere..

mom : mabye he doesnt have social media...

me : only a old fashioned man doesnt have social media...

mom : hai i dont know ke...

me : ****sigh**** i guess i will never find him... mabye hes nomore..

mom : mabye...

me : or mabye we could call khumbulekhaya..

mom : lol... hai go ahead...

me : kodwa ma...

mom : i dont get you kids.. we take you and grow you then boof you want your father... why?? what did he do to be wanted??

me : i just want to know him.. just know who my dad is..

mom : next thing you daddies kid and hes doing things for you right?? and am side lined...

me : that wont happen.. does he even know i exist??

mom : this father topic is getting to my last nerve.. please drop it..owk..

me : kodwa....(but)

mom : no buts... drop it...

she left me in the kitchen sitting around the table..

i stood up washed the dishes and went to my room...

i sat on my bed and couped my face in my hands..

these dreams were really haunting me and here my mom doesnt take this serious.. i am even afraid to sleep now.. becouse i know that those dreams will come again....

.

.

.

****siya****

its early in the morning today and i was woken up by my aunt..

me : so early...

aunt : get up quickly.. the healer is here...

me : healer??

aunt : the traditional healer of this kingdom..

me : what?? what does he want??

aunt : i dont know.. but he requested for the whole house...

me : whole house??

aunt : everyone who lives here...

me : oh.. owk.. will be down in a sec..

aunt : hurry.. they are in the hut...

me : owk....

she left and i quickly dressed up.. i didnt even wash my face or brush my teeth... i just got dressed and went...

i got in the hut and everyone was there...

me : sanibonani badala..

they greeted back...

dad : tamkhulu now that we all here, could you tell us why you here??

tamkhulu : haaaaai shhhhhh aaaaaiiiiiiiii....

shhhhhh.... abaphantsi abajabulanga (the ancestors are not happy).. aaaaiiii..

we all looked each other... i already knew why they were not happy.. i mean it has to be the fact that i am refusing the chieftancy...

tamkhulu : hai.. makhosi.. hai makhosi.... you were never supposed to arrange siya to marry a commoner before royalty... hai makhosi...

dad : but ubaba (my father) made me promise..

tamkhulu : aaaai... you were supposed to arrange royalty first and then commoner.. if you had done that we wouldnt have been in this situation...

dad : what situation??

tamkhulu : aai makhosi.. i have been informed about what siya wants to do... yes he hasnt done the ritual yet and thats why i am here... aaaai shhhhh... makhosi...

me : so you here to tell me about the sacrifice i have to do?

tamkhulu : aaaai.. shhhh.. aai makhosi.. no.. the

sacrifice thing was something the forefathers would do years ago to cleanse the kingdom from evil kings.. not in this stage..

me : what does that mean??

tamkhulu : you will undergo a ritual.. we all are unaware of what might happen because we have never had a situation where a son turns down a chieftancy and there's no substitution.. it has never happened in history.. this is the first.. therefore the ritual will be to plead with the ancestors on what must be done.. but the chances of you disconnecting from chieftancy, it's almost nul...

me : what?? so i might just lose everything and still be told that my request is denied??

tamkhulu : yes.. siya you have disrespected this kingdom by even thinking that you can turn away from your royal responsibilities.. but you are not to be blamed because the root was with your grandfather... continuing with this ritual might cause a lot of ups and downs in your life.. you might lose all that you have..

me : i dont care about any material stuff.. i could be poor and still be good....

tamkhulu : am not speaking only your material life.. but your family aswell..

me : family?? meaning my wife and kids??

tamkhulu : and your father and mother and sisters...

me : what??

tamkhulu : aaaaaai makhosi.. siya.. taking this ritual also put you in danger...

my mom and dad looked at me...

tamkhulu : aaaaai makhosi.. aaaaai... siya you are the only one left to take care of this kingdom.. only one.. if your father dies who would take care of this kingdom??

me : i would but only if i am not going to take a second wife..

tamkhulu : so all this fuss is about taking a second wife??

me : yes tamkhulu...

tamkhulu : aaaaai makhosi... (he shook his head) i dont get it.. why??

me : i love my wife... i would never take a second wife that would hurt her...

tamkhulu : did your father not love your mother?? yet they are this here... did your grandfather not love your grandmother?? yet they died loving eachother.. so who said taking a second wife will distroy the love you have for your wife??

i didnt say anything...

tamkhulu : well..

he took out his bag..

tamkhulu : the moment you blow in here.. you are giving me the go ahead of your ritual...

i took a deep breath...

i cant put my familys life in danger.. imagine me loosing mamas or mabye one of my kids.. or loosing my dad and mom.. and if i die.. who is going to take care of my babies and mamas... i have to reconsider...

me : am not blowing...

everyone looked at me in shock..

dad ; siya??

me : can i get some days to see what i can do??

please...

tamkhulu : aaaai makhosi... decide fast... we dont know when the ancerstors will act...

me : yebo tamkhulu..

tamkhulu : my que to go... aaaai makhosi...

he stood up left....

i stayed seated.. all my aunts, and mom left.. my dad stayed with me...

dad : so you taking a second wife??

me : i dont want to.. but again i dont want to put anyones life in risk..

dad : so what you going to do..??

me : tamkhulu said that my grandfather is the root of all this.. so he must come and help me..

dad : but he passed away...

me : i know.. but he must help....

he looked at me...

me : please take me to grandfathers grave today...

dad ; today??

me : please baba..

dad : owk..

i stood up and left...

i went to my room.. freshened up and got ready...

[12/14, 05:00] Zozaness: The villagegirl an the
playboy: arranged marriage

80

.

.

.

.

.

.

2 MONTHS LATER

Siya

dream

i am running in the forest, i seem like am running away from something.. i hear my babies crying.. i look around and i dont see anything.. i run further in the bushes and i see an old man holding a bucket of water and pouring the water over nompilo and my babies...

i ran to them and as i got there i couldnt touch them.. i tried so hard to look at the old mans face but i couldnt..

i screamed nompilo but she couldnt hear me.. she was butt naked with my kids being boured with water by this unknown old man.. i shouted nompilo.. but she was not hearing me...

slightly i could here mamas calling me.. i look at her and shes looking at me and calling me but now its like am moving away from them.. i try very hard but

am moving away instead of going to her...

then i woke up shocked and realised mamas was waking me up...

i was breathing heavily...

me : nompilo!!

her : shhh, am here papas.. am here..

she hugged me.. i was sweating...

her : whats wrong siya?? theres something you not telling me...

me : its nothing.. just nightmares...

her : siya, eversince you came back from kzn you have been having these dreams...

me : i know, but am sure it will all end soon..

her : hope it will...

she kept her arms around me...

me : let me go shower..

i stood up and left...

i got in the shower and got done.. i wrapt my towel

around my waist and went out...

mamas was downstairs with the kids.. i wore my soccer shorts and went down with no shirt on.. i tend to do that alot,..lol...

i got down and she had my babies on the floor on a towel playing with toys...

me : my favourit people..

her : hay papas.. kids say hallo daddy.. hallo daddy...

the kids were just playing and not even trying to say hello daddy... like wooooow these kids.. lol... anyway they are 5 months old now... they growing....

i sat on the couch...

me : mamas...

her : papas...

me : please come here..

she kissed her kids and came to sit next to me... she sat down putting her legs on me and ran her hands on my upperbody.. mara nompilo...

her : yes??

me : did you have to do all this??

her : what?? (laughs)

me : this?? (pointing at her hands that were brushing my abs)

her : hahahahahaha.. (laughs) ohhhh..

she moved her hands and placed them at the back of her back..

me : mamas, wena...

we laughed...

her : owk, what were you saying...

me : i was saying, remember last week when.....
mamas??

she was smiling looking at my lips.. this lady hai hai hai.. shes not concentrating...

her : mhm...

me : were you listening to me??

her : mhm..

me : really now??

her : owk no... what were you saying??

she said this licking her lips then she pouted.. now i was piercing from the top of her head down to her toes.. i thing she noticed that becouse she pulled her dress up showing more skin...

i looked at her.. and she scrached her head looking at her kids as if she wasnt aware of what she was doing....

me : mamas??

her : mhm...

me : you waking up a beast and you wont handle it...

her : what are you talking about??

she laughed....

i held her thigh and leaned in to kiss her.. she responded.... i brushed her thigh up to rub her lady down there... she layed her head back giving me full access to my neck... so i gave my tounge permission to run around her neck...

just as i was ontop of her and we were high and mighty.. feelings boiling.. sihle got jelouse... she

cried...

me : yhoouoo sihle....

her : lol...

she went to attend to sihle...

.

.

.

****nonhlanhla****

i am in the class all by myself... well its lunch time and i asked to stay behind to finish of my notes.. ever since lelo went back i have been a loner here at school.. so i have been spending lunch in classes... or alone on the playground...

i was writing notes and had my lunchbox out eating my lunch.. my mom made me some bread with peanutbutter and jam...

it taste so good...

i was then interrupted by ayanda.. last person i really want to talk to right now....

him : huh, my dark chocolate...

me : huh, irritating much...

him : look what i got you..

he placed a PS chocolate on the table...

me : mhm.. want me to open it for you??

him : no silly, its yours.. from me to you....

me : oh no thanks, i dont eat chocolate..

him : you know its rude to reject a gift right??

i hessitated first then i took it,...

me : owk.. thank you..

him : no sweat... i dont mind floading you with nice sweet stuff...

me : thanks again...

him : so what are you doing??

me : writing notes...

him : i noticed you always by yourself these days...

me : yah lelo went to swaziland..

him : oh...

me : yah..

bell rang..

me : ohh thats the bell, got to hurry to class..

him : sure, can i see you afterschool??

me : dont know..

him : please..

me : owk.. now can i leave??

him : if i say no will you stay??

me : bye ayanda.. thanks again for the chocolate..

him : lol... see you afterschool...

i went back to my class and he also left...

[12/14, 05:02] Zoaness: The villagegirl an the
playboy: arranged marriage

81

.

.

.

.

.

**** a month later****

****siya****

****dream****

i am running in the forest, i seem like am running away from something.. i hear my babies crying.. i look around and i dont see anything.. i run further in the bushes and i see an old man holding a bucket of water and pouring the water over nompilo and my babies...

i ran to them and as i got there i couldnt touch them.. i tried so hard to look at the old mans face but i couldnt..

i screamed nompilo but she couldnt hear me.. she was butt naked with my kids being boured with water by this unknown old man.. i shouted nompilo.. but she was not hearing me...

slightly i could here mamas calling me.. i look at her

and shes looking at me and calling me but now its like am moving away from them.. i try very hard but am moving away instead of going to her...

i wake up to mamas shaking me... i realised it was still very early in the morning...

her : siya! i am getting worried now.. whats wrong??

me : huh!! it was just a dream.. whats time is it??

she reached for her phone and checked it...

her : 3:15am..

me : ohhh..

her : siya, you even sweating..

i wiped my face and checked.. she was right.. i was sweating.. not to mention that my heart was running a sprint lap right now...

me : its nothing mamas.. just go back to sleep..

i went in the bathroom to wash my face with cold water... in few minutes mamas walked in and stood behind me.. i didnt turn to look at her.. instead i looked at her through the mirror i was looking at..

and she also looked at me through the mirror...

her : papas what is going on??

me : nothing i cant handle... dont worry about it...

her : i dont care whether you can handle it or not.. i want to know what is going on..

me : mamas, its.....

her : junior please....

me : ****sigh**** owk...

i turned to face her...

me : i have been having a dream.. i dont know what it means but it involves you and the kids..

her : what is the dream about??

me : its an old man, pouring you and the kids with a bucket of water.. you were on your knees butt naked and the kids were placed on the grass also butt naked... i try to run to help but i cant.. in the end you call my name but instead of me saving you its like am floating back...

her : sounds terrifying...

me : yah...

her : any idea what it could mean??

me :.....

her : siya??

me : we gonna have to sit for this...

her : what do you mean?? is it that bad??

me : come, lets go sit down...

i moved her to the bedroom and we sat on the bed..
we had the lamp on.. we didnt want to switch the
main light on becouse it could wake the babies up...
(am sure you asking why the babies dont have their
own room... well mamas doesnt want.. so she took
their bed and placed it next to ours...)

her : yes!!

me : remember when i went to take thandeka back??

her : yes??

me : well, when i got there i learned that if i dont take
a royal wife i cant be chief...

her : owk???

me : so.. i still stuck to the point that am not taking a royal wife.. so i told them that i reject the chieftancy..

her : what??

me : it was the only way to live my life with no royal wife or second wife and only you... so my dad said that i must do a ritual to cleance myself out to not be a chief.. but the healer said that would be almost impossible as i am the only one next after my father.. he doesnt have another son nor a daughter to hold temporarily..

her : your father does have daughters...

me : yes.. but most are married and 2 left...

her : ohhh...

me : so my dad said that if i proceed with this ritual i could loss everything...

her : everything??

me : yes.. my company, clients, house and family...

her : family??

me : **sigh** (eyes became teary) yes.. one of my loved once might pass away...

her : when you say loved once.. you including me and the kids??

i nodded...

her : (slowly starts crying) and now your dream is about me and the kids??

i nodded again....

her : siya, siya, siya... so you went ahead with this ritual.. sacrificing your damn family?? me?? the kids??

me : no mamas.. i didnt do the ritual, thats what makes all of this confusing.. trust me i didnt...

her :..... (softly cries)... siya my babies... siya my babies...

she was now rocking back and forth..

me : mamas...

her : and why didnt you tell me this before??

me :.....

her : its been 3 months since you went there and am only learning this today... if i never insisted on knowing, when were you going to tell me??

me :.....

her : siya mahn..

she couped her face in her hands and cried.. i just looked at her with teary eyes and tears just falling out of my eyes without pemission...

i wanted to touch her and tell her that everything would be owk.. but what guarantee do i have that indeed all will be owk??.... so i just let her be.. but inside i was broken...

.
. .
.

****hours later****

i woke up and felt the sun against my eyes.. i tried opening my eyes but the sun was against that.. i turned my back on the sun and faced the other way.. as i open my eyes, mamas was not in bed.. i looked

over to the babies bed and they were not in bed.. i guess she took the kids and went to the living room...

i got up.. went to brush my teeth, wash my face.. as i was busy doing my morning bath routin my phone rang.. i checked and it was my mom...

i answered...

me : morning ma..

her : morning son.. listen you and makoti must come down today with the kids...

me : what??

her : the healer is here and wants to see you and your wife and kids...

me : why??

her : would you stop asking questions and come now... its urgent

me : owk...

i hung up and quickly ran to the living room... there was no sighn of mamas and the kids...

i went at the backyard, still no mamas and the kids...

i ran up and checked in all guestrooms calling her name... still no mamas... haibo!!

i went back to the bedroom and took my phone... i dialed her number...

she answered...

her : junior...

me : mamas were are you with the kids?? do you know how worried i am right now??

her : we are fine...

me : were are you??

her : i said we are fine...

me : mamas, please.. please come home and figure all this out.. going to your moms house wont help...

her : who said anything about being at my moms house??

me : then were are you??

her : check your car keys...

me : wha..... mamas?? hello....

she hung up.... i threw my phone on the bed in frustration... i then thought (look for my car keys).. i decided to look for them but i couldnt find them... then it hit me, mamas is in the car in the garage... she wouldnt drive becouse she cant drive...

i quickly went in the garage and there she was sitting in the passenger seat in front.. and my babies at the back in their car chair...

i got in the drivers seat and closed the door...

me : you got me worried...

her : sorry..

she just looked foward with no emotion...

me : mamas, we need to go to kzn.. the healer asked that we arrive as soon as possible...

her : is it time??

me : time for what??

her : for the sacrifice??

me : mamas i dont know what is happening.. but it cant be time becouse i didnt do the ritual...

her : if they say you have to do it today, will you do it??

me :.....

her : thats a yes??

me : am going to have to choose between accepting a royal wife and doing the ritual...

her : mhm.. what you going to choose??

me : i will cross the bridge when i get there.. right now we dont know why they called for us but can we go so that we can get answers??

her :

me : please...

her : i dont want to loose you siya.. the kids need you.. stepfathers are never to be trusted...

me : i also dont want to loose you mamas... stepmothers are never to be trusted...

we looked in each others eyes....

me : can we??

she nodded...

i got out the car and went to her side... she got out and i moved her against the car.. she looked down.. i raised her face pressing her cheeks.. she let out a tear...

i leaned in and kissed her.. it was rather a painful kiss.. it was mixed with painful feelings and tears.. but it was slow and passionate....

i then pulled out...

me : i love you.. and always will.. i will live to protect you and the kids..

her : you cant promise that...

me : i already did...

her :.....

i went to pick the kids to bath them so that we get going...

[12/14, 05:11] Zoaness: continuation

- .
- .
- .

.

.

****smangaliso****

mom : boy, bring me the flour please..

me : owk maolady...

i took the flour and took it to her...

me : here mom...

her : thanks...

me : huh, maolady.. i am heading to soccer practice..
see you ngabo 4..

her : owk boy.. take care...

i took my soccer kit bag and left...

on the way i got my 2 friends.. tshepo and kutlwano..

me : yah boys..

tshepo : yah ntwana..

kutlwano : sho sho smanga...

me : so, how was the party yesterday??

tshepo : yho yho yho boy..(acting excited) nediwa ntwana (it was lit boy)..

kutlwano : yah, libo girl balimbaya (and girls were alot)... vele vele.. why didnt you come??

me : i was busy...

tshepo : hai suka... busy ngani??

me : stuff...

kutlwano : anyway.. i wish you had went.. lecheri yakho (that girl of yours) was a headache...

me : lebo??

tshepo : do you have any other girlfriend??

kutlwano : yah, lebo.. guess she didnt know that we were also coming.. she was busy on another guys lap and all that..

me : lebo.. nah guys... you must be mistaken...

kutlwano : am telling you..

me : but she said she would be visiting her aunt for the night..

tshepo : her aunt??

they laughed...

kutlwano : ukjutile mf2 (she lied)...

i thought of this.. hai... mara....

we got to the grounds and the couch was there.. we play for our community..

.

.

*****after practice****

its after practice right now and am tired.. like really tired..

i was with my guys.. we were resting alittle before we could go back home... then i saw lebo coming towards us...

lebo : hay guys..

they all greeted back but i didnt...

tshepo : ntwana, we will see you...

me : uringa ngan boy?? (what you talking about

boy)??

he looked at me then at lebo, who was standing next to me..

me : lets go...

the boys looked at me like i was crazy.. lebo grabbed my hand..

i looked at her...

lebo : whats wrong??

me :.....

i turned to leave... she grabbed me again..

lebo : baby hini?? (baby what??) what did i do??

i looked at her and just ignored her.,...

lebo : babe??

me : bouva gester?? (where were you yesterday??)

lebo : i told you i went to my aunt...

me : then who did i see at the hub yesterday?? your twin??

lebo : (speechless)...

me : mhm??

lebo : you went to the party??

me : lol.. mhm.. mxm...

i left her there and followed the gents...

i looked around at how other gents were happy that their fathers came to fetch them.. everyday after practice their fathers come.. others are lucky because their fathers even stay and watch their kids practice.. and here i am.. fatherless...

.

.

****siya****

we arrived in kzn... we got in the yard and parked the car.. we got out.. i carried my boys and mamas held sihle...

we went in the house.. mamas was nervouse, you could tell she was scared...

we got in the house and my mom was sitting in the house including my dad...

me : mom?? dad??

mom : ohhh my grandkids.. makoti..

they hugged and she took sihle..

dad ; siya, the healer is in the hut.. waiting for all of you...

i got scared.. really scared...

me : owk.. maxulu lets go..

she took sihle from my mom and we went to the hut...

we took off our shoes and went in..

me : tamkhulu..

tamkhulu : aai makhosi... you have arrived...

me : yes.. my mom said it was urgent...

tamkhulu : yes it is... i have been informed about the constant dreams you having...

me : you have??

tamkhulu : yes... aiii makhosi... you are to be cleanced, all of you.... it is an instruction given.. i

also dont know why but the instruction has to be followed...

me : how is it going to happen??

tamkhulu : this night.. your wife and kids will sleep in this hut.. alone.. tommorow morning, you shall wear your full traditional.. make sure you bath in cold water.. and come open the door and wait few feet far away from the door...

me : owk..

tamkhulu : but know this.. if the lightning strikes on them.. then its over...

us : what??

tamkhulu : aaaaai... makhosi... my daughter, you are to take all your clothing off and wrap this cloth around you.. same to your kids.. give everything to siya.. he will come out with them... aaaaai makhosi... shhhh... my son.. have a moment with your family.. but the moment it starts raining.. i need you to come out...

me : am sorry makhosi but i dont think i will come

out.. i want to stay here...

tamkhulu : you cant my son..

me : i dont care.. am not going anywere...

tamkhulu : xulu mfanami (my boy) trust me i also dont know why they gave this instruction but we have to follow.. if you intervene it might be worse...

me : then let death take all of us and spare no one.. me, my wife and kids...

tamkhulu : be careful what you wish for.. am leaving now.. follow instructions..

he left.. he thinks am crazy, i am not going anywere...

her : papas.. am scared..

me : dont be.. i got you...

her : (crying).....

me : shhhh shhhh shhhh...

i held her in my arms as she cried.. i think the kids might have sensed that she is upset.. plus it was cold.. so they started crying.. i was hushing mamas and the 3 kids... they cried so bad that i didnt know

what to do.. their cry was bitter...

after a long time... it started raining..

she was laying on me.. we were both tired of crying..
the kids were owk becouse they were in mommy and
daddies hands...

her : its time you leave siya, its raining..

me : am not going anywere...

her : siya you.....

me : am not changing my mind...

her : but.....

me : no butts.....

she got up and started changing the kids then
changed last... i was wacthing her dark skin naked
self..

me : how about a goodbye satisfactory??

her : you still now how to make jokes in situations
like this?? lol

me : being with you gives me light even though am in

darkness..

her : ncoooo...

me : remember when i said i would do anything for you and you said i should rob a bank??

her : and you said we should go...(smiles)..

me : i still repeat, am going to do anything for you...

her : should we rob a bank??

me : lets go....

her : am bonnie...

me : am clyde...

us : bonnie and clyde...

we laughed through our tears...

her : i love you...

me : i love you more..

her : no.. i love you more...

me : no... i love you way more....

her : hai... since we dying for love, i guess am juliet..

me : yes.. and am romeo...

her : see.... i always knew that shakespear was your father...

we laughed...

we looked at each other... the rain got heavier...

we couped ourselves together as the xulus...

later

we have been laying.. scared to sleep.. and the rain was even harder... just after a while the thunder striked so much and at that moment i felt a shap pain in my back... it was so painful that i couldnt move.. i turned to see if mamas was owk.. but just as i turned the second lightning striked and i blacked out...

[12/14, 05:12] Zozaness: The villagegirl an the playboy: arranged marriage

82

.

.

.
. .
. .

****siya****

i slightly opened my eyes... at first everything was blurry, i couldnt see anything... i tried sitting up but my back was very painful... i tried harder and the pain got worse...

i closed my eyes and opened them again.. it was still blurry but it was better... i waited for my eyes to be clear.. after a shot while i was able to see everything as it was...

i then remembered.... "mamas" "my kids" i turned and hurt my back.. i turned my head and saw that mamas was laying... i could here there was a child making sounds.. thats one tick.. one of my baby is owk.. 3 more to go...

i forced myself to sit up.. yes my back got even worse but i bared it... as i sat up i saw mamas laying.. sihle was making the sounds.. lihle and kuhle were

also laying but playing with their feet and eating their fist...

i smiled.. i then looked at mamas.. no movement... i went close to her... i shook her.. but she wasnt moving.. she lay helplessly before me...

me : mamas..?? mamas??

nothing... i forced myself to pick her up.. and lay her on my lap... with a painful back i managed...

me : mamas?? mamas??

she wasnt moving.. nothing...

just at that moment, the door of the hut opened.. it was tamkhulu...

tamkhulu : aaaaaai... makhosi... aai...

he started with the riddle talk and started going around....

i couldnt even say anything.. it was like i was being striped off my voice.,...

tamkhulu : aaaaaai makhosi...

he came and put something red on mamas

forehead...

finally a word came out...

me : will she be owk??

tamkhulu : shes with the ancerstors...

me : what?? nononono... mamas nooooo...

tamkhulu : calm down.. shes not dead.. your dream is being fulfilled..

me : what??

tamkhulu : the old man you saw in your dream was your grandfather.. he was pouring water on nompilo and the kids as authority of royalty..

me : what does that mean??

tamkhulu : it means nompilo will be accepted as a royal wife even though shes a commoner...

me : so i dont have to take a second wife??

tamkhulu : no.. your wife was blessed by the forefathers themself..

i wanted to move but i stopped becouse of pain...

tamkhulu : what is it??

me : my back.. i think the lightning got the better of me for not following their orders...

tamkhulu : son, when the lightning strikes on you, you die... let me see...

he came to check then all of a sudden he bowed in front of me and started speaking riddles and clapping hands in communication of the ancestors...

he then got up... and hit me with his feather stick on my back.. that became very painful...

tamkhulu : makhosi... my son.. you must be honoured.. you have been given the mark of bravery on the back...

me : mark of braveness, love and strength??

tamkhulu : yes.. you have also broken the dark cloud that was hanging on this kingdom.. see all the kings had evil in their hearts.. but you showed bravery, purity... your wife was not chosen because of your request or sacrifice.. but because she held the most precious thing any queen should have..

me : which is??

tamkhulu : purity, innocence, peace and love...

me : shes a diamond...

tamkhulu : woman like these are rare to find... she shall be awake anyminute now.. for time being let me help you ease the pain of your back...

i turned and he placed medication to ease the pain... the process was painful.. like very painful..

me : so how is the mark?? like how is it drawn??

tamkhulu : its 3 lines.. each line represents your qualities.. which is love, braveness and strength... then theres one line across all three of them... that line is the one holding all these lines together and thats the line that puts them together..

me : what does that line represent??

tamkhulu : your wife...

he continued nassing the pain.. then after a while he was done.. the pain was there but not very painful..

as i was about to wear my shirt that was also torn,

mamas moved...

me : mamas...

her : wh.... wh.....

me : slow down, dont rush it...

her : wh.....my..... my.....

me : mamas calmed down...

she moved alittle and stood up.. she looked at her kids who were not minding what was going on.. they kept playing alone...

she smiled and looked at me...

her : papas??

me : mamas..

i hugged her.. she kinda hurt my back by touching the scar.... i ached... but we didnt pull out...

tamkhulu : welcome back princess...

her : princess??

tamkhulu : you shall go now.. all is well.. the kingdom is saved... its all over now..

me : finally...

i picked up sihle and lihle and mamas took kuhle..
we walked out.. as we walked out the sun shined
straight in our eyes that we covered ourselves... mom
came running to us to hug us...

mom : ohh my kids and grandkids... i was so
worried... i thought the worsed would happen in that
hut...

me : ouch ma!! my back..

mom : sorry son.. are yall owk??

me : we good ma!!

she took lihle from me...

dad also came.. he hugged me to tightly.. i kept
saying ouch but he never let go....but its all right...

dad : i have never thought that one day i would learn
a lesson from my son.. i always thought i would be
teaching lessons to you...

me : (smiles) sometimes the most important
lessons are taught from unexpected places...

dad : true.. i am really sorry.. all i wanted was to fulfil my fathers wishes and do things as my father would..

me : its owk dad... i still love you...

dad : i am glad you stick to what you believe.. now this kingdom is saved and in peace again because of you... even though we thought you were selfish, stupid, stubborn person.. it worked out in the end...

me : thats how faith works.. you do crazy things hoping all will be owk.. i see it as me fulfilling my promise..

dad hugged me again...

he then also went to hug my wife... my aunts also came to hug me.. they also took sihle and went to bath them and feed them.. they were with my mom... mamas and i also went to shower....

we got in the room...

her : i am glad the worst is over..

me : me 2..

her : so were to from now??

me : well the hut must be broken down and rebuilt again.. as for us, we carry on with our daily lives and wait for the day i will be stepping up...

her : so i must kiss my career goodbye...??

me : nah.. i mean look at muvhango.. susan is the chiefs wife but she still works..

her : mhm.. so i can still be a doctor?/

me : yes...

i took of my shirt out and she saw the scar...

her : when did you get that??

me : what??

her : the scar on your back, towards your shoulder??

me : ohh tamkhulu said its a scar i got from the forfathers.. the three lines facing one direction is love, brave and strengh..

her : and the one on all three??

me : thats you...

her : mxm, surely tamkhulu didnt say that..

me : he did...

her : mxm.. am not buying it...

me : its not for sale...

she hit me and laughed....

we went to shower and we had a innocent shower...
not becouse i wanted it to be an innocent shower
but becouse she didnt want to disrespect my fathers
house... woooooooooow...

.

.

.

smangaliso

week later

its early in the morning and i woke up.. today i only
attend one class so it wont be a long day...

ohhh were are my manners.. i have not introduced
myself... i am smangaliso i am 20 years of age... i
am doing my second year in engeneering... yep
engeneering... i live with my mom... i am in a

technical school.. i have 2 siblings.. a little brother (16) and a little sister (12).. but i dont share a father with them.. their father is my stepfather.. i dont know my father and my mom is not even interested in helping me find him....

we live in johannesburg.. my mother is a domestic woker.. my stepfather was a security at phillip...

thats just some things about me...

i was in my room, i went out.. my mother and stepfather had left.. my siblings already went to school...

i boiled the kettle... after the water boiled, i poured in a washing dish.. i boiled again.. and poured in the dish washer.. then went to bath... my classes only starts at 11am..

after bathing, i brushed my teeth and ironed my clothing.. i then got dressed and went to pour out the water in the toilet... i flushed, placed the wahing dish on the bathtub...

i tidied the house.. after all was done i made breakfast..

after i went to the bread bin and took the money my mom placed there for me.. she always leaves money for me...

i took it, took my books, my phone and locked the house and left..

i cought a taxi....

in the taxi my phone rang.. i dropped the call.. it was lebo...

it rang again., i dropped it again and put the phone on flight mode.. and continued listening to music..

me : short left...

the taxi stopped and i walked further and got in school....

i took my phone off flight mode.... i had 4 missed calls... from lebo...

i went for class....

after class i went out.. i was walking with mzulu.. we call him that becouse he is from KZN... he is my bestfriend.. he also lives in jhb.. but different town.. i have to take a taxi to get to his kasi...

him : ntwanas..

me : fede...

him : its a great friday today hai.. skhipani (whats going on??)

me : nex mf2 (nothing my man), i will be home this weekend..

him : yho yho yho... ungazobora mf2 hao (dont bore us man)... listen theres a nice chillas in soweto zone 2 park.. wanna go??

me : well.... huh....

him : i take it as a yes...

me : sho ntwana, i guess i could use the distraction...

him : sho.. plus abantombazana boy... (plus girls boy)...

me : am done with party girls bro.. i dont need me a totiana..

him : you need a wifiana??

me : correct...

him : and you think lebo is the wife??

me : ngcavi joe (i dont know man...)

him : haigabi boy (no hard feelings boy) but lebo is bad news.. i mean how many times did you forgive that girl??

me : thats becouse i loved her...

him : loved??

me : i dont know if i love her anymore.. apperently she was at some party last week... and she was on some guy i dont know...

him : mhm... trouble... did you ask her about it??

me : no.. i have been ignoring her for this passed week..

him : ringa naye boy.. (talk to her boy)..

me : hai.. logal angimfrostani joe... (i dont understand this girl)..

we spoke as we went to catch taxi.. his came first the mine came after...

as i got in the taxi i called lebo....

she answered...

her : finally babe... can we talk...??

me : sho.. meet me at the grounds..

her : owk.. am already on my way..

me : shap...

i stopped the taxi and walked to the grounds... she was already there...

she attempted hugging me but i stopped her...

her : babe, am very sorry.. i didnt know you would be there and i was too drunk to control myself..

me : why drink if you know you cant control the drunk you??

her :

me : huh??

her :

me : did you sleep with the guy you were dancing on??

her : no, i didnt....

me : then were did you sleep??

her : at my friends place i swear...

me :

her : babe am serious...

me : entlek lebo uyangthanda hin?? (actually lebo do you love me??)

her : yes babe i do...

me : doesnt seem like it...

her : am serious babe...

so lebo and i have been dating for 2 years, we going to our 3rd year now..

me :

her : baby??

she leaned in and kissed my cheeks..

her : i love you babe.. and i will always love you...

i just looked at her...

[12/14, 05:14] Zoaness: The villagegirl an the playboy: arranged marriage

83

.

.

.

.

.

****1 year later****

****nompilo****

time passes quickly.. it is august and my babies are 1 year and 5 months... so we are back in kzn.. siya sold the house in PE and asked bongani to manage his company...

its kind of different here because now we hours away from my parents and school... i started school again in ukzn.. this is my first year since i never really finished my first year....

siyas father is sick... we still live with all siyas aunt and mom...

i was in the kitchen when sihle came to me and

pulled my dress...

me : nana, uzosha..(you going to get burned)..

her : mama.... aaaa..

she was giving me sweets that her father gave her...

me : ncooooo thank you nana...

she started speaking and i didnt know what she was saying... but i just agreed...

me : mhm..(nodding my head)... yes baby...

she continued speaking and all i could do was agree...

me : baby... bebe... were is daddy??

she spoke something and pointed at the direction...

me : hes in there??

she nodded...

me : are you hungry?? kudla?? (food??)

she noded and tried repeating after me...

she then said something pointing at the direction of were her father was and left... i guess she was

telling me that she is going..

well i finished making lunch and dished out..

i set the table with the help of siyas mom and her sister wife (the young wife)..

after i went to call siya and my babies who were in babxulus room.. yah siya and her mom spend alot of time looking after babxulu.. the third wife does there and there and the middle one is just drama.. but i keep myself away.. even siyas mom adviced me to...

i knocked and i was told to come in...

you will not believe what i walked in to... siya was laying on the bed with his father and sihle, kuhle and lihle were crawling on them like they were jumping castles...

me : everyone lunch is ready...

as they saw me kuhle and sihle cried...

him : hai hai hai... uzala uzokhalisa abantwana bam.. baba uyabo?? uyabona umamas wenzani?? (you come here to make my babies cry, dad can you see?? can you see what mamas is doing...)

dad : i see son..

he tried laughing but he coughed painfully..

mom : baba??

dad : am ok son.. am owk makoti...

he tried seating up...

i was holding kuhle and sihle....

siya held lihle..

siya : lihle, look at mammies cry babies.. wena you strong neh??

lihle nodded...

siya : yes boy.. lets laugh at them..

siya faked a laugh and lihle laughed to...

dad just shook his head...

siya helped him walk to the dinner table...

i placed kuhle and sihle down..

me : go to gogo.. tell her to give you guys food...

as they left lihle cried wanting to go down.. siya put

him down and he followed his twins...

.

.

.

****nonhlanhla****

grade 11 is no joke.. its hard work..

i am in my room at this moment and i am studing...

mbali walked in...

her : sisi.. can you help me with maths?

me : owk.. what dont you understand??

she opened her book and showed me..

her : this x is giving me problems..

me : lol.. what you mean??

her : this question is asking us to solve x..

me : owk.. see this is how we do it..

i did the first one for her, step by step until i got the answer...

me : see??

her : sisi.. i get that you did this as slow as you can..
but do you mind going more slower??

me : haibo.!! owk...

i explained again and this time a bit slower...

her : yazin.. its owk.. i will ask tumi in the morning...

me : so you going to do all this work in the morning??

me : nop.. i will copy her work...

i shook my head and got back to studying....

her : yhoouoooooooooo.. sisi.. i have news..

me : not interested...

her : well if i tell you it involves a guy, will you be
interested??

me : what guy??

her : well i was looking at people i might know on
facebook and i came across a guy named
smangaliso.... mhm... akasemuhle (hes so
handsome)....

me : do you know him??

her : no, but we have a mutual friend...

me : who...??

her : Reabetswe.. she is from jhb but moved here because she wanted to live with her sister here....

me : hope she is not your friend??

her : why??

me : she sounds like trouble..

her : lol.. i just know her.. i sent her a friend request because i wanted to be in her squad.. but it didnt work out.. she brushed me off..

me : but accepted your request??

her : yes.. but brushed me off when i asked her through a message...

me : mhm... so back to.... who is that again??

her : smangaliso...

me : so whats his story??

her : i sent him a friend request... he accepted and

we started talking...

me : you dont even know the guy??

her : so??

me : you going to date someone you never saw??

her : we all know we will never meet so am just having fun...

me : ohhh owk...

her : yah.. so, i told him am 18 and am doing grade 12...

me : woooooooooow... really?

her : mhm...

me : dont you look too young to be 18??

her : well, i told him that am using my little sisters facebook becouse i dont have a facebook account...

me : he believed you??

her : i sold my story...

me : hai... i give up shame.. let me see his pictures....

her : owk, but dont drool...

me : mxm... lol...

i went to check the pictures...

me : jelouse down umuhle shame (hes handsome shame)...

her : i know right...

me : mhm.....

she moved the phone away...

her : you drooling now.. thats enough.. atleast i gave you a little taste uyabo...

me : mxm...

i went back to studying....

me : how i wish he could magicaly appear here.. i would like to see what you would do...

her : mxm... you jelouse nje...

i laughed....

[12/14, 05:15] Zozaness: The villagegirl an the playboy: arranged marriage

- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .

bongani

i arrived were at the castle and drove in.. i parked my car and got in...

i met the chiefs youngest wife...

me : good afternoon...

her : good afternoon bongani, wooow, long time hay..

me : please dont start...

her : i mean look at you...

me : yah, look at you..

we both laughed...

me : is the young chief here??

her : yes.. hes in his fathers room..

me : may i please see him?

her : sure, i will go call him for you...

she showed me were to sit, then went to go call siyabonga....

after a while he walked in...

him : heeeeeeeee sbali...

me : hao.. no more grootman??

we laughed...

him : how are you mahn??

me : am living.. am great...

him : i hope you not here regarding the business right??

me : well i am.. but i also wanted to see you.. its been a month since you came to live here...

him : lol... yah.. but it doesnt feel like a month.. it feels like days...

me : thats becouse your wife is not trouble and doesnt nag... you got preddy lucky...

him : i smell relationship problems...

me : eash...

him : what happened?? i thought you and naledi were cool...

me : yes we cool... but shes just not moving in my pace...

him : what do you mean??

me : i mean, i am old now... am 41 years old... i dont have time to play around...

him : shes playing around??

me : she parties.. comes back late and wakes me up to open for her late at night... when i tell her i dont like that, she says shes living young, she doesnt want to move in with me, nor have children yet..... like i dont understand....

him : how old is she now?

me : 34...

him : damn...

me : yah.. but besides all that, i love her... i want to build a family with her.. i mean am 41 and i dont have a child..

him ; yah.. some are 30 and already they have 3 kids...

me : ohhhhhh ohhhhhh, really now!! thank you... you just rubbed salt in my wound.. its an amazing thing you did there....

him : lol....haha.... am just teasing you.. haha.... dont worry bro you will get there...

me : lets hope so... now am thinking of taking a step.. i mean i know we have only been together for 9 months but i think its time...

him : are you.....

me : yes.. am going to propose to her....

him : thats amazing...

me : yes ntwana.. your grootman is getting married.. i hope being the young chief wont stop you from being my groom maid...

him : groom maid?? thats what its called??

me : i dont know mahn.. we man, we dont cram this stuff..

him ; so woman cram it.??

me : come on, they have been dreaming about a wedding since primary with their prince charming...

him : true.. mamas always used to say that she always dreamed of marrying someone dark like her, tall, middle body suitable for hers, and all that list...

me : i guess you passed the requirements.. you a perfect fit.. except you not dark....

him : you think i passed.?? dude did you see us when mamas first came in my life..??

me : yah i remember... lol...

him : when i started loving her, my biggest fear was sleeping with her..

me : ohhhhhhh... yah.. plus your body tells that hai... kunzima.. (its hard)...

we laughed...

him ; yho... like i feared that i was going to tear her soooo much that she might go to hospital for stitchig... phela she was so tiny and small bodied plus a vergin..

me : mhm... tough.. so what happened??

him : hai grootman, you getting too big for your shoes hai...

me : lol... owk.... anyway... about business.. am thinking mabye we should take in 6 interns for next year...

him : mhm.. sounds great...but what exactly are they going to do??

me : since we deal with the supply of sports cars and international cars.. am thinking we could also strip cars and chnage them.. like if they sell us a used car, then we can strip it, place new parts and make it brand new again..

him : sounds great..

me : i know...

him : but were are you going to get the best interns??

me : am thinking of sending application forms to technical schools.. thats were we will find suitable candidates..

him : owk.. go ahead...

me : i will work right on it.. well let me get going..

him : you came all the way to just tell me about your relationship and business??

me : plus i missed you..

him : stop being gay grootman.. us guys we dont miss each other.. we just grow font of each other..

me : lol.... owk.. young chief...

we laughed..

him : stay for lunch and dinner, then you will be free to go..

me : how can i say no to free food, mhm??

him : never can..

we laughed again..

little guy waked in and went to lean on his fathers

leg sucking his finger..

me : lihle or kuhle??

him : lol... its lihle...

me : ohhh.. each its bad i cant even tell the difference...

me : lihle.. hello.. hay boy.. come here.. come greet uncle bongani.. come..

he first looked at me like i was crazy...

siya : go boy.. go to uncle bongani...

he looked at his dad.. then looked at me and walked to me.. as he go here he picked up his arms for me to pick him up..

i picked him up and made him sit on my lap...

after sometime.. nompilo walked in calling lihle..

siya ; he is with his father dont worry..

her : oh.. i was worried for a sec..

siya : khanti where were yall??

her : in the kitchen.. they were with their grandma..

so lihle udogile (lihle doged)..

we laughed..

her : hay uncle bongani, sorry i just came busing words..

me : its owk..

.

.

.

.

****nonhlanhla****

so ayanda and i are dating.. but i asked that we take things really slow because i have school to focus on and i hardly have time to be lovey dovey..

plus the last thing i want is for my parents to know that am dating..

we were in the physics class.. (i attend some classes with ayanda.. he also does physics..)

he was late for class.. luckily the teachers are not yet

in...

so a quick update... i have recently found out that dimpho actually has a crush on ayanda.. she has been looking at me dirty ever since i started dating ayanda.. not only her but the netball girls aswell..

this is what i hated.. being the attention in school.. worse part.. for bad reasons...

ayanda walked in.. shirt untucked, wearing one earring, bag on the side.. hoody on and eating a stick sweet.. thats ayanda for you... i must admit though.. even though he is like a trouble maker, he looks so cute.. he is not the it boy in school.. hes not hotter than all boys in school.. but what makes him most wanted.. is because he is trouble, he is naughty, he is corrupt.. hai.. bad boy... bonus, he can dance...

i looked at him as he walked in.. he greeted his friends, and came straight to me...

he leaned on my desk and looked at me..

him : good morning my dark chocolate...

me : morning ayanda...

him : kiss on the cheek??

me : no.. we in class...

him : you never want me to show my appreciation in front of people why??

me : because its in front of people...

him ; ao.. ndifanele how queen.. (i must hao queen)... they must know whos my queen.. dont you wanna be known??

me : at the expense of having enemies for no reason?? nop...

him ; who is hating on you know??

me :.....

him : owk, lets give them even more reason to hate...

he leaned in to kiss me...

me : ayanda, the teacher..

he looked at saw there was no teacher..

he leaned in again..

dimpho : ayanda?

he didnt answer, he was busy trying to kiss me during the people...lol...

dimpho : ayanda mahn??

he looked at her...

him : cant you see am busy??

dimpho :.....

him : how can i help you??

dimpho : i need help with somthing.. its physics related..

at that moment we saw the teacher coming and he ran to his seat.. i sit in the second row.. he sits at the back...

[12/14, 05:16] Zoaness: 85

- .
- .
- .
- .
- .

****mbali****

it was a saturday morning... and i was woken by nonhlanhla shaking me...

me : mhm!!

her : wake up..

me : 2 minutes..

her : no mbali, its 10am now...

me : really??

her : yah.. get up....

me : owk..owk..

i picked my head up and looked at her.. then i turned, reached my phone...

she went to sit on her bed while scrolling on her phone...

i logged on facebook.. no messages..

i checked smangaliso's inbox.. nothing...

well owk.. i massaged him "good morning".. i then scrolled down my news feed checking on what

people were posting... then i logged off and went to wash my face, brush my teeth and comb my hair...

after we went down to have breakfast..

after breakfast we started cleaning... we spend so much time cleaning and playing around...

after cleaning i was tired..

i went to chill at the pool at the backyard, i sat down with my legs in the pool...

i logged on and smangaliso was online.. and he texted back..shoot....

****text conversation****

him : good morning...

me : hud??

him : gud thanks and you

me : am great..

him : owk.. so what you doing?

me : just sitting by the pool, feeling the water with my legs..

him ; woooow such a wonderful way to chill on a saturday.. but 3 thing is missing though...

me : what are they??

him : snacks and music and company..

me : mhm.. i see you, i see you.....

him : lol... what??

me : nothing..

him : lol.. owk..

me : so what you doing??

him : well i am just taking a chiller from studying.. so am just chilling...

me : studying on a saturday??

him : yes...

me : woow owk..

him : dont you study on a saturday??

me : nop... school ends on friday so does books..

him : such an attitute for a matriculant.. am shocked..

me : what can i say.. am just a brilliant student...

him : so you sure gonna get distinctions huh??

me : duh.....

him : oh owk... so were to next year??

me : mhm.. i applied almost in all universities..

him : ohh good idea.. better safe then sorry...

me : yah..

him : mhm.. listen i wanted to ask you something..

me : owk, shoot...

him : do you have a boyfriend??

me : huh... no.. i dont..

him : you seem unsure...

me : no, its just that the question was sudden..

him : oh am sorry i scared you..

me : no you didnt, dont be silly...

him : oh owk...

me : do you have a girlfriend??

him : no...

me : oh owk..

him : mhm, listen we will chat later.. my mom needs my help with something...

me : ohhh owk.. sure..

him : shap..

me : (a thumps up sticker)...

i continued chilling there.. i played music and layed on my back...

nonhlanhla came to me..

her : sitting here all alone??

me : nop, am alone..

her : mxm..

me : you see am alone, yet you still ask if am alone.. thats sick..

her : whatever...

i smiled and played with my feet in the water...

her : you all smiles..

me : really?? ohh i didnt notice...

her : come out with it...

me : udandindaba.. (you like news)..

her : come on...

me : nop...

i stood up and back in the house...she followed me
still asking for the scoup...

.

.

.

**** bongani****

so today was that day were i wanted to actually
propose to naledi.. so firstly i am going to surprise
her at her place and take her out to dinner and boom
pop the question...

i am super nervouse right now and i dont know why...

i got in my car (yes i have a car)... and drove to her
place.. it was late.. around 6pm...

i got to her place and found her placed locked..
mabye shes asleep or something...

i dialed her number..

she didnt answer.. i dialled again.. voicemail...

i clicked my tongue and got in my car leaving...

i went back home...

i got home, locked my house.. threw the keys on the
couch and sat down.. i switched the tv on and just
relaxed...

.

.

.

****hours later*****

i was woken by my phone ringing.. i checked and it
was naledi..

i answered..

me : hay...

her : hay babe.. huh.. am outside, could you please

open up..

me : where were you at??

her : at a friends birthday party, they just dropped me off..

me : why didnt she drop you off at your house??

her : huh.. well i have been locked out...

me : well, you didnt tell me you going out.. so dont cry to me for accomodation.. goodnight...

i hung up.. got up.. switched the tv off and went to sleep in my bedroom...

[12/14, 05:18] Zozaness: The villagegirl an the playboy: arranged marriage

86

.
. .
. .
. .
. .

.

.

.

.

.

****3 months later****

****siya****

me : good moring sir... yes.. yes... no am not
counceling.. yes.. thank you.. see you in an hour..
owk bye...

i hung up....

me : mamas, am leaving you...

her : am almost done..

hai.. you know eversince mamas knew how to apply
make up, kunzima.. she practically spends hours
getting ready.. hai...

me : ma! i hope you really dont mind taking care of
my babies as i take mamas out...

mom : yes boy, we will be owk..

me : owk, thanks mom...

mom : dont worry babe.. ohh heres makoti...

me : finally, i almost thought the make up swallowed you...

mpilo : mxm...

me : lol.... you look beautifull mamas...

mpilo : thanks...

dad walked in...

dad : how, you two are twins now??

me : yes dad.. we are...

we laughed...

so mamas was wearing black jordan sneakers, a blue jean, and a black jorden jacket and a black binny... i was also wearing black jordan sneakers (same as the one she wore).. a blue sweatpants and a black jordan jacket (same as the one mamas wore) and a black binny... so we were practically twins...

me : we need to go.. bye fam...

them : bye my children.. have fun owk..

we bid goodbye and we went to the car and drove...

her : so were we going??

me : you will see...

her : papas mahn...

me : what??

her : just tell me...

me : nop...

her : ohhh well i know..

me : were we going??

her : a restaurant... right??

me : correct..

her : mxm..

me : what ?? you correct hao...

her : i dont even know why i bother...

i laughed...

we got to the place...

i tell you guys, when she saw that helicopter, she didnt get out the car....

me : mamas lets go...

her : nice try siya.. am not doing it...

me : mamas....

her : noooooooooooooo..

me : mamas...

her : am not hearing it...

i took a deep breath and held her hand...

me remember when you told me to fight the fear and not let it overcome me?? well, now its your time...

her : siya..

me : please.. you helped me overcome my fear.. let me help you...

her :

me : let me mamas... let me...

she breathed out and nodded...

i got out the car and went to help her out.. i locked my car and the security guarded...

she grabbed my hand and held it tight...

me : i got you....

she nodded again.. i kissed her cheek...

the people came and helped us settle then we got into the helicopter.. we put the mic earphone things and all was good.. now we were settled it was time to fly...

as the helicopter got off the floor, mamas grabbed me so much that i felt that shes about to tear my skin off... she also closed her eyes and her knees started shaking...

i hugged her tight and kissed her head....

as the helicopter was up, i gently faced her face towards me.. her eyes was still shut..

me : mamas... open your eyes..

she shook her head... she was still shaking... her hands were also shaking..

me : look at me...please...

she hesitated but opened them.. her eyes were so red and teary that my heart felt the pain...

i kissed her on the lips and looked at her..

me : through this fear, take this time to enjoy the brightness and beauty...

her : siya... i.. i,,

me : i am here.. mamas.. i am here...

she calmed down.. little by little she looked out the window.. she took my hand and placed it on her heart... it was beating so fast...

i took her hand and placed it on my heart.. she looked at me and smiled...

she looked out the window witnessing the beauty of the place.. the waters and all that...

she was teary.. but not because she was scared but because she was overcoming her fear of heights...

am sure you wondering what the ocation is right?? well its mamas 21st birthday...

after a while we were back in the car..

we drove to a bowling club and registred.. the club sold food aswell so we ordered something to eat and drink and we dived in...

me ; am proud of you..

her : am proud of myself..

me : happy 21st baby...

her : thank you... it is special..

we had our fun hours at the bowling club and had fun..

after we went to the aquarium..

me : ohhhhhh baby... really??

her : i know how much you adore fishes..

me : mhhmm.. you would swear am a mermaid..

we laughed..

we went around having drinks while looking at the fishes swim and some other creatures in the water..

she actually freaked when she saw a octopers...

it was fun and exciting.. we had a great day...

around 5pm we decided to go back home..

she couldnt stop talking about how amazing her day was...

.

.

.

****nompilo****

i really enjoyed my day.. no jokes... but am still surprised and overwhelmed by the fact that i was actually on a helicopter.. that was the best moment of my day.. then the aquirium.. damn i am one soul who loves fishes..

i wanted to have one as a pet but.. i never really acted on that... but soon i will have a pet..

we home now and we driving in the yard.. there is this big, huge, massive box infront ofg the house.. this box is as massive as a car.. you would swear there was a car in there...

we park and we get out the car...

me : what is this??

him : thats your 21st birthday...

me : whats in here?? a minnie house??

him : lol.... no..

me : then what is it??

him : open it..

me : how??

him : just pull the ribbons..

i went and did that.. then i opened the box like it was some double door....

as i opened.. i was welcomed by alot of balloons.. i think siya has forgotten that i hate balloons.. like its a little phobia of mine.. when i see a ballon, the thought of it bursting makes my skin crawl...

as the balloons came towards me.. i ran away to the other side of his car...

him : and then??

me : dont you know i kinda have a phobia of balloons...?

him : ohhhhh damn, i forgot.. am so so so sorry.. let me get peter to clear it out..

he called peter and he came with 2 more guareds and they indeed cleared the balloons... but as they were clearing them, i saw a car..

me : papas??

him : mhm??

me : is that a car??

him : i dont know, is it??

i went to the box and open widly.. it was a MINNIE COOPER... ohhhh my gosh... i so love this car guys.. mara how can siya buy a car for me knowing i cant drive.. crazy much...

me : minnie cooper papas??

him : mhm, that person must really love you hai...

me : dont play with me.. i know its you..

he laughed...

him : owk... guilty....

me : but you know i cant drive..

him : well you will be a proffesional passanger...

me : lol.....

we laughed..

him : everytime you wanna go somewere, you can ask any guared to drive you there in your car.. so no need to use my car or my dads car...

me : thank you papas...

him : i love you mamas...

me : love you more...

i hugged him.. i was so emotional that my tears couldnt hold back...

he gave me the keys..

i then went in the car and just positioned myself in the drivers seat.. it was comfortable..

me : lets test it...

him : its late....

me : i dont car.. just one round around the block..

him : mabye tommorow..

me : please....

him : mamas, its pretty late..

i swamped my mouth and made a sad face then got out the car.. i locked it and we went back in the house...

as we walked in, we were welcomed by our 3 babies running to us.. siyas mom had prepared dinner.. i mean whats the best way to end my birthday?? a dinner with all my family..

[12/14, 05:19] Zozaness: The villagegirl an the playboy: arranged marriage

87

.

.

.

.

- .
- .
- .
- .

****nompilo****

siya is turning 31 today... yipppeeeeeeeeeee.. my very
owk granpa...lol...

so since my baby did something amazing on my
21st birthday, i have been on a hunt of what to do for
him...

so its around 6am now.. i woke up, brushed my teeth,
washed my face and headed to the kitchen...

i started preparing breakfast.. i make macaronny
and cheese and chicken salad... (we all know that
this was the first meal he ever taught me.. lol)...

before i finished i went to wake everyone (siyas
mom, siyas dad, my kids, siya and siyas dads young
wife).. the middle mife left about a week ago...

as they prepared themselves i finished off my

cooking...

i set the table and placed the bowl of chicken salad and the pan of macaroni and cheese on the table.. i also brought glass and 3 bottles for my kids and placed the jar juice on the table...

i then went to the bedroom to siya and the kids...

me : need help??

him : no thanks my lady.. we all done... arnt we my children.??

me : lol....

i went closer to him and gave him a hug...

him : i guess thats my birthday present...

me : nop.. i just wanted to smell your cologne... its very unique..

him : it is indeed.. pshh..

me : wooooo... i was just joking..

we laughed..

we then went down with the kids and found

everyone already seated..

me : i see everyone is here...

siyas mom : yes.. and you 2 have been taking long in there..

me : siya was just getting the kids ready..

siyas dad : or you were getting siya ready..

we all laughed..

siya : come dad.. am 31 not 13...

we laughed..

he settled down next to me and my kids also sat on their baby chair on their baby table.. just the 3 of them, right far between siya and i...

we said a prayer and dugged in..

siyas mom : my son, you have really grown up boy.. i mean just yesterday you were a little boy.. such a baby, changing diapers, bathing you and feeding you.. look at you now.. 31 years old..

siya : ma?? hao.. during the members...

we laughed...

siyas dad : i remember when he was 4.. he would take a bottle and pretend it to be a steering wheel and drive walking around the house.. all day...

we laughed...

siyas mom : yah and when he was in primary.. one time they took them to a pool celebration.. i dont know what happened.. but we received a call in 2 days that siya said he wants to come home... we went to pick him up and he never spoke to us for a whole 3 days.. terrified..

we laughed...

siyas dad : we later found out that he got terrified of the water.. he didnt want to even go near it... and since then, siya has never dared to go close to water..

siyas mom : am sure you noticed that he was never in his pool in PE??

mpilo : yah... i...

siya : actually, 2 years ago i actually went close to

water..

siyas mom : what?? MAKOTI is she for real??

mpilo : yes ma...

siyas dad : how??

siya : mamas... she helped me through that fear..
and 6 months after i started swimming in my pool...

young wife : wooow.. that must have been a very
special day in your life..

siya : no.. the special day in my life was when
mamas said she love me...

we spoke and spoke telling old memories...

after breakfas, siya went to play with the kids in the
backyard on the grass.. i washed the dishes with the
help of the young wife..

after we got done i went out to one of the guards
peter...

so days ago i stole siyas keys and asked peter to
take the car to be serviced.. new interior, new colour
spray, new sterring wheel and to fill it up.. he said he

told the people that he would fetch it today.. me on the other hand got into trouble because i lied and said the car bumped into a pole so peter took it to be fixed.. he was pissed... but it was worth it..

me : sir??

him : yes mpilo...

me : what time you fetching the car??

him : around 4pm

me : huh... owk.. we will be out at that time.. make sure you park it were he parked my car as a surprise, owk..??

him ; owk..

i went back inside and continued cleaning.. after i joined my fam outside.. (siya and the kids)..

me : ncoooooo, look at this grandpa and his grandkids..

him : lol... its like that now...

me : you dont look like you 31 though...

him : i know...

me ; haweee... you so like feeling yourself neh??

him : duh.....

i laughed..

me : so what you doing today??

him : your driver bumped my car, so i cant really cant really go anywere..

me : we can use my car..

him : were we going??

me : you will see..

him : you might aswell tell me becouse am driving..

me : nop.. you will just listen to instructions..

him : lol.. hai...

me : let me go ask your mom to babysit..

i stood up and went to his mom...

me : ma!!

her : yebo mpilo..

me : could you please babysit my kids for us..??

her : were you going??

me : i am taking siya out for his birthday..

her : oh owk..

me : seriouse??

her : yebo mtanami (yes my child).. i will help..

i hugged her and went back to siya..

me : sorted.. as i go bath, get ready...

him : casual or formal...

me : casual..

him : ohhh owk...

i went to shower and get ready.. after i was done i found him in the launch playing with the kids.. one thing about siya, he loves his kids to bits.. i can say that they took my position.. am no longer number one.. am now number 2.. #sad...

me : all done..

him : owk..

he stood up and took the kids to his mom.. he came

back and we left..

i was directing him on where to go because google maps was also directing me....

as we got close he recognised the place...

him : mamas?? golf?? (surprised)...

me : yes..

him : damn mamas.. i could kiss you right now you know that...??

me : what you waiting for??

him : let me park...

we parked at the place and he sat back...

he looked at me and pulled me in.. we kissed... a long nice, slow, french kiss..

him : thanks mamas...

me : pleasure papas..

he smiled and we came out of the car..

we went in, register, took our kit and went to play...

after the game we got back in the car...

him ; woooooow... that was great..

me : but you had no messy on me.. how could you beat me so badly...

him : its my birthday girl.. i gotta give myself points..

me : mxm...

him : we going back home right??

me : no.. game resort..

him : mhm.. ??

me : here is the directions..

him : owk...

he drove.. he went to the place and it was getting great..

we got in and it was amazing.. i myself have never been here...

its a place were we play games (busket ball scoring, table soccer, pool, game machines, and tennis ball cather game..

it was lit...

we played, had fun.. enjoyed.. then after went back home.. he saw his car..

him : seems like my baby is back...

me : yah, peter went to fetch it today..

him : great...

me : dont you want to check it?

him ; i sure am.. if its not fixed properly then hes taking it back...

me : owk..

he went to check it..

him : shut then front door...(surprised)...

me : its shut...

he laughed...

him ; really babe?? mamas seriously??

me : what??

him : ohhh damn.. you even filled it up... mara mamas...

me : wow.. seems like you have a secret admire..

him : ya i do.. and that secret admire is you..

i laughed..

he came to give me a hug and kissed me...

him : i love you mamas..

me : i love you more and happy birthday grandpa...

him : thanks grandma...

[12/14, 05:21] Zozaness: 88

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

****2 months****

****smangaliso****

its january... a whole new year and new opportunities.. so i applied for an internship last year for this year in PE... i havent received a response yet..

so i was still in johannesburg... we actually never vist families and my mom never speaks about her family..

so i was in my room, on the bed just going through my suff on my phone...

on facebook i came across a shocking picture of lebo...

i couldnt belive it.. she posted a pic with a little baby girl.. and wrote "my baby just turned 5 months.. am so excited..#mommyglow...

i didnt know how to feel.. so i just scrolled over it and ignored it..

after some time, i got an email notification from the the XCC... i was so happy and excited.. but at the same time i was nervous becouse what if i wasnt chosen.. i mean spaces were limited...

i sat still and opened my email.. i closed my eyes

and then opened them.. boooooooooommm.. i have been selected.. oooohhhhhh damn.. my mom is so going to be proud of me...

i ran to her.. she was in the livingroom with my stepdad...my little siblings were playing outside...

me : ma!! i got in..

mom : got in what??

me : the internship.. i was selected...

mom : really?? ohhh my baby...

she gave me a hug....

dad : we really proud of you son....

mom : we are indeed.. but, what about accomodation??

me ; well, am only going to pay for 5 months from my own pocket.. i was kinda saving money too...

mom : what about the rest of the months?? and how long is the internship??

me : 4 years...

mom : whoooo.. wow.. 4 years??

me : the internship pays so rent is sorted.. i will also come every december to vist...

mom : well i guess your dreams are coming together...

me : they are...

dad : just look out for yourself.. dont let PE swallow you..

me : it wont dad...

dad : owk son..

me : huh, let me go check on my stuff..

i went back in my room... its been almost 2 weeks without speaking to mbali.. mabye i should check on her...

.

.

.

****mbali****

the schools just opened and this is the first week of school...

i am now doing grade 10.. i chose comercial subjects, i loved EMS more then any other subject so thats why i took comercial subjects.. but there are other subject are just unecessary nje..

so i was in the business class.. there is this boy in my class.. well he also does commerce.. hes so cute and quite....

his name is mpho... so sweet too..

since the teacher was not here i took my phone out and logged on facebook....i saw a massage from smangaliso and he was online...

.

.

.

****text conversation****

him : hay

me : hay

him : hud??

me : great and yourself??

him : am good.. what you doing??

me : just at school, waiting aporn the teacher,
sooooo boring....

him : at school?? i thought you done with school
now..

i looked at the text.. shoooooot.. i just blew my
cover.... i read and didnt reply..

i placed my phone in my porket and hit my head..
"stupid me.. now what will i say..??"

.

.

.

****nonhlanhla****

its only the first week and its already hectic... the
workload is too much, but then if i start studying
now, am sure the load will get better in time..

i am so excited for this year.. matric is about to be exciting... firstly i cant wait to get my matric uniform... yes in this school the matriculants wear a little different from other grades... plus i cant wait to get the matric jacket.. ohhhh i so cant believe that am in matric.. its just unbelievable.. period...

ayanda was in class few minutes ago but actually went out again with some of his friends...

i realised that dimpho also just walked in then he walked out calling ayanda... i didnt want to feel like this but a piece of me wanted to go and check what was going on.. but another piece just told me to mind my own business.. but ayanda is my business so?? hai no....relax...

i sat for hardly a minute then i stood up and went to check outside.. i actually pretended to go to the bathroom...

i went to the toilet and saw them close to the grounds.. dimpho saw me and immediatly she leaned on ayanda.. ayanda was standing looking at some of his friends dance.. they were listening to

music on a speaker and some of his friends were smoking, including him...

i didnt know ayanda smoked... hao?? so dimpho leaned on him.. i was so pissed that ayanda actually let dimpho lean on him.. like dude you have a girl...

ayanda is tall by the way..

i then went back and went in class... after a long while they came back.. they were laughing.. i just ignored him... actually i lay on the table facing the window..

ayanda then came next to me...

him : can i share a seat with you??

i looked at him.. i so wanted to say no.. but i just shifted to give him space.. he sat next to me on my chair...

he took of his jacket (he had a black home jacket on).. and placed it over both our heads as he lay on the table like i layed...but i was facing away..

him : nonhlanhla??

i turned to look at him, still laying...

him ; whats wrong with??

me : nothing...

him : come on, i know you not owk.. i can see it...

i was trying to smell the weed on him.. but nothing..
instead i could smell halls sweets and perfume or
lotion...

me : am owk ayanda...

him : really??

me : yes...

he looked straight at me and i looked away.. he kept
looking at me and i kept looking away... after a while
someone pulled the jacket off us and i hid my face in
my arms..

i just heard them speak...

ayanda : ungazoba dome joe (dont be dome bro)...

voice : (laughing).. sorry mahn.. we thought we
would catch yall exchanging saliver..

ayanda : brah dont piss me off... cant you see am
busy with my Queen here..?

voice : (laughing) sorry bro.. owk.. sorry...

ayanda : am gonna get you son....

they laughed and he covered us again but i didnt move my face.. it stayed hiding in my arms..

my body shivered when he placed his hand on my back towards my weist and layed his head on the table looking at me..

him : nonhlanhla??

i looke at him..

him : whats wrong Queen?? and dont say its nothing...

me : are you cheating on me??

him : what?? no.. i would never do that...

me : do you love dimpho??

him : nooo... where does this come from??

me : i was just asking...

him : did she say that?? couse if she did then shes definatly lying.. am not interested in her.. i love you

and only you.. you the only girl am inlove with...

me : mhm...

him : Queen, am serious.. i would never cheat on you..

me :.....

him : come here...

he came close and kissed my forehead...

him ; i love you...

me : i love you too...

after a while again, someone pulled the jacket and said the teacher was coming.. he left his jacket with me and went to his seat...

i looked at dimpho and looked away.. i then looked at ayanda till he looked at me.. i smiled to him and he blew a kiss to me...

i sit next to ntombi.. she saw all that...

her : yall guys really are a nice couple.. bad boy+good girl...

me : yah... i myself dont know how i fell inlove with him.. it just happened...

her : it was a good call though...

me : i hope so..

her : so is it like a long term thing??

me : i dont know.. but i wish....

her : mhm.. hope i find my mr right...

me : even though its not mr right.. take that mr wrong and make him right...

her : ohhhhh.. nice owk.. thanks...

we were wispering to eash other becouse the teacher was in class and she was setting her table before she starts teaching...

[12/14, 05:22] Zozaness: The villagegirl an the playboy: arranged marriage

89

.

.

.
. .
. .
. .

weeks later

smangaliso

its time.. so i have fixed all my things, packed and all is great... today i am taking my journey to PE.. very excited...

me : mom, dad am ready to go now..

mom got emotional....

mom : ohhhh baby (crying) am gonna miss you boy..

she came to hug me and i hugged back...

me : am gonna miss you too mom

mom ; take good care of yourself owk??

me : yes mom..

dad : go well son.. take care and never loose focus..

me : will do dad..

we hugged...

me : luthando, mandla.. big bro is leaving now owk.. i will come with alot of sweets though when i get back owk..

they nodded...

i hugged them very tight and let go.,..

me : ****sigh**** let me get my bags, the taxis are far hay...

mom : owk son..

i went and looked at my room for a long time.. i sure will miss this place.. so i have looked up rooms online and booked a room around PE, pretty much close to the company i will be in..

so i pulled my suitcase and took my bags and went out.. i was getting emotional.. i mean for 21 years i lived here, yes this was like my second home...

i hugged my family for the last time and left...

i took the taxis to town, then took a taxi from town to

easten cape..

i knew it was going to be a long ride.. i dialed mom...

her : hay boy..

me : hay mom, i wanted to tell you that i have just climbed the taxi to eastern cape and it left already...

her : ncoooo. owk baby... call me when you have arrived in PE owk..

me : will do mom..

her : have a safe trip boy..

me : thanks mom..

her : ohhh theres some people outside, let me attend to them then i shall call you owk..

me : owk mom.

she hung up and i logged on my facebook.. mbali was not online.. but she was last seen 30 minutes ago..

mabye she is in class... (yah she told me that she is supplementing and asked to attend with the grade 12s, she said she passed with a diploma pass and

she wants to achieve a bachelor pass because she wants to do bcom accounting.. personally thats brave... she must be one brave girl, mabye thats why i really want to know her more and since i am going to PE mabye we can hook up...)

i massaged her "hay" and locked my phone and listened to music looking out the window...

.
. .
.

****smangalisos mom****

i went out to see who was knocking on the door.. i opened and it was a young lady holding a baby girl and a much older lady, it looked like the young ladys mom or aunt...

older lady : good afternoon, huh this is lebohang, my daughter and this is my granddaughter smangele...

me : ohwk.. how may i help you??

older lady : i thing we have something in common...

me : what is it??

older lady : smangele...

me : huh??

i was confused, i didnt really understand what she was saying..

older lady : smangele is your granddaughter aswell..

me : what?? excuse me whoever yall are, can you please leave..

older lady : no, we are not leaving untill this issue is sorted..

me : i dont believe this..

i shut the door in their face and locked it, thato came in running..

him : baby whats going on??

me : there are woman out there claiming that her child is my grandchild..

him : what??

he went to the door..

me : dont open..

him : no, we need to know their story..

me : thato...

him : what would you say if its true and you didnt even try to listen..

i looked down and let him open.. they were still standing there..

him ; am sorry, please come in...

they walked in.. i just saw a bunch of chancers nje.. just becouse they heard that my boy got an internship in one of the toppest car campany in the country, they want to milk him before he could even start earning.. nxn...

i went to sit down and listen to their story...

me : so, why didnt you tell him that he has a child??

lebo : i was scared ma!! plus i wanted to prove that i can do without him..

me : well continue proving that owk??

lebo : with all due respect ma! i didnt come here to

seek maintenance or anything.. all i wanted was to let yall know and only becouse i was forced by my parents.. and now that i have let yall know you wont hear from me anymore... mom please lets leave..

i just looked at her as they left...

him : did you really have to say that??

me : they just chancers...

him : mhm... you better tell smanga..

me : am doing no such, am not going to stress my boy on his first year.. no..

him : but he has to know.. what if they tell him before you and he knows you knew??

me : i will cross the bridge when i get there...

i took up getting myself a glass of water...

.
.br/>.

****mbali****

i got home and threw myself on the bed... i was still in uniform...

i logged in... smangaliso sent a message but was not online.. i replied "hay" and waited...

after a while he logged on..

text conversation

him : hud??

me : tired, you??

him : also tired, been in the taxi for long now..

me : in a taxi?? were to??

him : Eastern cape...

me : you coming to eastern cape?? were in eastern cape??

him : PE...

me : what?? you joking right??

him : no for real...

me : nop.. not believing it...

him : owk.. send me your whatsapp number and i will

sent a video..

me : why dont you just say you want my number nje and stop making up stories...

him : am not making up stories, am serious... wanna bet??

me : if you joking, i want R50 airtime...

him : deal... if am not joking, you takling me around the place as i get there...

me : owk deal...

i actually regretted a minute after i typed that and deleted the last message i typed.. but it was late because he typed, "owk i guess we on.. prepare.."

i also sent him my numbers...

i must say a part of me was scared that he might be honest, and another one thought mabye hes bluffing...

i stared in space and didnt hear nonhlanhla walk in...

her : hallloooooo!!

me : ohhhh what??

her : you deep in thought... whats wrong??

me : smangaliso is coming to PE...

her : smangaliso as in the guy you crushing on in facebook...

me : yes...

her : so he is coming all the way here for you??
woooooow, he must really love you...

me : yah but remember he is expecting to see a 18 year lady.. i look very small to be 18..

her : trust me there are ladies who look very young for their age..

me : but!! but nonhlanhla you can just see that am young.. from my face to my body nje..

her : mapula from rhythm city looks 19 but shes actually around 27.. so you can use that to sell your story... plus it wont be long becouse mabye he will go back in a month.. he must have school to attend or a something...

me : lets hope so.. but what if hes transferring here??

her : then you have alot of lying to prepare for...

me : its not a joke...

her : i wasnt joking... find a lawyer and let them teach you how to lie to defend yourself..

me : mxm.. i so hate you right now..

her : whos laughing now?? hahahah...

me :.....

i just looked at her and just kept quite.. i hope he was bluffing... i truely hope so...

[12/14, 05:23] Zozaness: The villagegirl an the playboy: arranged marriage

90

.

.

.

.

.

.

.
. .
. .

****days later****

****smangaliso****

i have been here for days now.. i have settled in well and the room i rented is not that bad.. i am sharing the room with a guy called sphelele.. he is a student at the nelson mandela university...

i have been asking mbali to meet me for the passed 3 days.. but she has been terrably busy...

so today sphe is taking me to a park called freedom park.. apperently he has some friends who play soccer for fun at the park so he is just taking me there.. well since i also need a little fresh air then i guess i can just get out a little...

him : ntwana.. u done??

me : yah mf2 (yes bro) lets go...

we took a taxi there and got off at the park..

we walked to where the people playing soccer were...

him : so how long have you been playing soccer??

me : since ngisayintwana (i was a boy)... am sure i was in grade 5..

him : and you fell inlove with it??

me : nje...(exactly)..

him : woow.. position??

me : striker..

him : ohhhh really??

me : yah.. wena??

him : well i started playing when i was grade 10.. its not really my thing... but i love it..

me : mhm, i see..

him : so how you going to juggle being a soccer player and a motor mechanic??

me : am sure i can come up with a plan.. i mean nothing is impossible right??

him : well.. you just said it..

we got to the soccer boys and we sat at the bench watching them.. he was going to introduce me to them during halve time i guess..

.

.

.

****mbali****

i was just chilling at the pool, busy on facebook and also having snacks.. nonhlanhla came to join me.. sitting here makes me free, i feel refreshed, i feel relaxed.. thats why i always come here...

her : sitting here again??

me : yep..

her : so indeed smangaliso is around??

me : yep..

her : are you going to ever meet him??

me : nop..

her : why not??

me : why should i??

her : ohhwk...

me : i need to think about a more permanent situation.. something that would give me more time..

her : well.. like what??

me : i dont know.. i mean i just also got to know that he is going to be here for 4 years...

her : huh?? 4 years?? why??

me : internship in a company...

her : what company??

me : i dont remember what company, but its a big company...

her : mhm... how about we go to the park.. have a minnie picnic..

me : yah.. i even need that.. just to get my head off things..

her : lets go pack the picnic and make sandwiches..

me : dont forget the towel and the umbrella...

her : check....

we laughed and went to pack our minnie picnic... we got mom in the kitchen..

nonhlanhla : mom, we going picnic...

mom : were??

nonhlanhla : park...

mom : owk, ask dad to take yall there..

nonhlanhla : that was the plan...

after packing everything we took them to the car and dad took us to the park...

he then drooped us...

dad : call me when you done so that i can pick yall up owk??

me : sure dad..

nonhlanhla : owk dad..

dad : take care..

he left... the park is always full.. not full full but it always has people chilling here...

we actually left the umbrella because we figured there was no much sun plus there was an empty tree so we would settle there.. so we asked dad to return with the umbrellas...

we settled and placed everything correct, then sat down and enjoyed our picnic....

.
.br/>.

****smangaliso****

i was introduced to the soccer gents.. they asked if i wanna play but i didnt come with soccer shoes or clothing so it wasnt ideal.. i told them that maybe next time..

i mean she brought me here to introduce me to the guys not to play... after a while i suggested that we go back... i was now a little hungry and wanted to prepare for my first day as an intern...

we left..

she : how did you find the gents??

me : they were cool...

sphe : owk.. am sure you will get even more used to them when days pass..

me : yah.. i mean i have a long road here... 4 years is no childs play..

we laughed...

as we laughed i saw someone.. i knew that i once saw that person before..

me : that girl??

sphe : the 2 girls sitting together?? the dark in complection once??

me : yes.. the little one, she is the one i was chatting to... huh?? mbali...

sphe : mbali??

me : well mbali is her name but she is using her little sisters facebook account..

sphe : i dont understand...

i took out my phone and logged in.. i went to the account called "Tione mbali nhlapho", i then showed

him..

sphe : owk.. the account is in her name...

me : she took her lil sisters account and changed her lil stisters facebook name to her name..

sphe : ohh i get you now..

me : yes.. so the pictures are her lil sisters.. check..

sphe : it is her... so that means the girl she is with is mbali?

me : yes.. she has never wanted to send me her pic, but i am sure its her.. they look alike, not to mention the dark skin tone...

sphe : dark is beautiful..

me : it is hay.. i mean look at her.. am going to halla her.. if she notices me its her.. its the only way to find out if shes mbali...

sphe : owk..

we approached them...

.

.

.

mbali

we were busy having fun... then suddenly some guys came.. i wasnt looking at them, i was busy on my phone, checking on something...

as they greeted i looked up and immediatly i froze.. i didnt belive it... it couldnt be...

them : good afternoon ladies..

nonhlanhla : hay..

its smangaliso.. i swear its him...i need to think of something quick...

smanga : how are yall??

nonhlanhla : we great thanks...

smanga : sorry to bother, but do you know me??
(asking nonhlanhla)

nonhlanhla : i dont think so.. its my first time i actually see you...

she looked abit disappointed...

smanga : ohhh must be a mistake.. may i ask whats your name??

nonhlanhla wanted to speak but her phone rang.. she smiled and looked at me... it was ayanda.. i just knew it.. so she excused herself and left...

i saw that he kept looking at nonhlanhla.. it was kinda weird though.. but that quickly gave me an idea.. yes..... i never sent him my picture.. so obviously he knows my pictures and i said that i am my own little sister so at this moment he is looking at nonhlanhla because he thinks she is mbali... well from now on, she is mbali...

smanga : hay little one.. whats your name??

me : huh!! nonhlanhla... thats my name...

smanga : nonhlanhla, thats a nice name...

me : i think i know you.. you chat to my sister right??

smanga : your sister??

me : yes mbali..

smanga : ohhh yes.. i knew i know you from
somewere.. how did you....?

me : its my facebook account, she just changed my
account name to hers so that she can chat..

smanga : why doesnt she open her own account??

me : i dont know...

smanga : oh owk... so were is she??

me : thats her... (pointing at nonhlanhla)

smanga : but she didnt seem to remember me...

me : well, she probably forgot..

smanga : ouch that hurts..

me : yah.. lol... please excuse me...

i went to nonhlanhla in a hurry before she came here,
she was done speaking on the phone...

me : nonhlanhla, you mbali now...

her : what??

me : that guy is smangaliso..

her : what?? really?? yho.... did you tell him that you

mbali??

me : no, remember i told him am using my lil sisters facebook account becouse he saw my pics??

her : yah...

me : well he noticed me and he asked were is my sister "mbali" so i kinda said its you...

her : what?? mbali are you crazy??

me : and i said am nonhlanhla...

her : no.. tell him the truth...

me : nonhlanhla please...

her : mbali kodwa...

me : please.. if you do this for me i will do anything you ask me.. any thing.. untill i come clean..

her : anything...

me : ohhhh no.. owk anything....

her : owk then "nonhlanhla"...

me : owk, just follow my lead...

i turned and faked a smile and we went back...

me : sorry, i just recieved a text from my dad so i had to go tell my sister..

smanga : no problem...

nonhlanhla : yah, we better get going...

me : sis mbali, if you could see smangaliso would you recognise him??

i looked at smanga, giving him a wink and he smiled.. nonhlanhla looked at me confused.. i moved my eyes to signal to say no...

nonhlanhla : well nah.. i wouldnt.. i mean i never check his pictured or how he is...

me : would you believe me when i said hes around here??

nonhlanhla still looking abit uneasy tried to answer...

nonhlanhla : well, he... he did say hes around PE.. why??

me : this is smangaliso..(pointing at smanga)..

smangaliso smiled looking at nonhlanhla...

nonhlanhla faked a smile and faked being surprised..

nonhlanhla : huh?? he is smangaliso?? woooooow..
huh serious??

smanga : yes.. and you are mbali nhlapo right??

nonhlanhla : right.. huh... finally we meet....

smanga : yah, you have been really busy lately.. so
tell me, when am i getting whats due to me??

nonhlanhla : whats due to you?? huh!!.... well...

me : oh she will surely give you the tour around this
weekend...

smanga : woow nonhlanhla so you read your sisters
chats??

me : yes... we twins...

smanga : lol.. owk...well see you around..

nonhlanhla : sure..

smanga : could i get your numbers?? the once you
gave me are only for whatsapp they dont go through
when i call...

i shook her a little and she gave him...

smanga : will call tonight...

nonhlanhla : owk...

they bit goodbye and left...

i took a huge sigh...

me : that went well...

her : well?? you so going to make many favours for me...

me : i promise... thank you...

her : mxm.. am calling dad.. am not in the mood anymore...

she called dad.. then we packed..

after a while dad came and we placed everything in the car.. and drove back home..

[12/14, 05:24] Zozaness: 91

.

.

.

.

- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .

****smangaliso****

its february the 9th and its my first day at the company..

i woke up, prepared myself and took a taxi there.. we were supposed to get there at 8am.. i was there before..(15 minutes before)... i guess i just wanted to be on time and not lost...

i arrived and there was a man at the door with a file.. i wasnt sure were to go so i just went straight to him..

me : good morning sir..

him : morning..

me : i am here as an intern and i am unaware were to go...

him : you came at the right person... please sign next to your name and go to reception.. she will lead you to the boardroom..

me : ohh thank you...

i signed next to my name.. i realised that we were not that much of interns.. i then went inside, straight to reception...

me : goodmorning mam...

her : goodmorning sir, how can i help you??

me : i am one of the interns, i was told to come to you for directions of were to go...

her : yes..

she called someone and that person led me to the boardroom...

i sat down and waited...

other interns started coming in after me... one by one they made their ways in..

at 8:15 a man walked in.. he was well dressed and looked all professional.. he must be the boss...

he introduced himself as bongani nhlapo.. nice...

we sat there listening to the do's and donts, and instructions.. we got sheets and all that..

after he took us to were the practical work happenes... it was the backyard of the company.. as we got there, there was cars already.. all nice painted and all..

after showing us all that he called someone and they gave us work overalls...each got 2.... we just had to say our sizes and he would give us.. (in the forms they did ask for shoe size and clothing size so i guess they took it from there...)

after that we went back to the boardroom...

him : now that you all familier with the company, and have gotten your uniforms.. we will start tommorow.. the cars you saw, they are your first projects.. you will find a paper on the cars stating what the car should have and not have... understood??

us : yes sir..

him : good.. welcome to the xulu cars company...

we clapped hands..

him : lets work together.. remember team work is the best...

we nodded...

him : owk.. see you tommorow..

we left and i went back to my place...

.

.

.

****nompilo****

so we are here trying to plan our babies birthday.. its in march the 8... so we literaly have few to come up with a plan...

me : papas...

him ; mhm??

me : how about an aquirium.. i mean they only

turning 2 and theres a kiddies section were they play.. so that should do..

him : yah.. sounds great..

me : cool.. so aquirium it is.. i am so excited...

him : its not even your birthday...

me : mxm...lol..

we finished cleaning up and we went to chill in our bedroom... my babies were playing with thier grandfather and grandmother i the backyard.. the chiefs young wife went out..

we were laying on the bed facing up looking at the ceiling...

him : i wonder how my boys will be when they grow up..

me : headacue, shouting, misunderstanding and all that... its going to be a mess, trust me...

him : yah.. atleast you will only have 1 headacue.. mina double...

me : girls give headacue then 5 boys combined...

him : look whos saying that??? were you headacue??

me : no.. i was a blessing...

him : so.. sihle stands a better chance being a blessing too...

me : i know...

we laughed...

me : but i am afraid of what she might go threw...

him : you mean her eyes??

me : yes..

him : come on.. they look nice on her.. it suites her..

me : siya she has one black eye and one grey eye... hows that nice..??

him : uniqueness..

me : i guess..

him : well plus she has 2 brothers..

me : yah.. right.. i guess she has protection..

him : you see...

we laughed..

him : plus all girls will want her brothers.. so they wouldnt bully her becouse they would know that she is the handsome guys sister..

me : lol... hai siya...

we laughed..

siya got on top me..

him : no need to worry..

he leaned in kissing all over my face.. then he went down to my kneck.. shivers were all over my body...

he placed his hands in my shirt and in my sports bra...

he raised my shirt and bra up and started kissing my chest slowly going down.. kissing my twin babies (breast), kissing my stomache then as he went further down i pulled him up...

him : what??

his eyes were very low and so red... they showed lust...

me : nothing...

i pulled him in and we kissed.. first slowly then the heat got high..

we undressed each other... siya was now breathing on my neck as he kissed it...

he did what he did again.. he kissed me going down to my lower body.. again i pulled him up...

he looked at me and gave me a "whats going on" look.. i just smiled and he kissed my lips...

him : why do you keep pulling me??

me : i want you here not there....

him : but i want to taste you...

me : i would rather have you feeling me then tasting me..

him ; why not??

me : i dont like that.. i dont even imagine myself doing it..

him : well how about you give it a try??

me : nop..

he kissed me again..

him : as you say my lady...

he kissed me again and now i was flying high in motion...

before he even entered i stopped him..

me : siya??

him : mhm...

me : protection..

him : i am your protection...

me : siya mahn...

him : mhm...

me : you really want to go through 9 months of what you went through??

him : i can take the chance..

me : siya....

him : owk....

he reached in the drawer and he took one out..

him : wanna do the honours??

me : owk..

i took it out and inserted the protection... my word.. i really dont know how my lady down there handles this big man down there.. like he is huge...

well after i slightly inserted him in me...

he pushed in and the pleasure rose up...

he moved in and out giving me a great pleasure and feeling...

i held tight on him giving him full access...

after a while i felt my orgasm built up and i pressed him tightly on me, rasing my back on the bed.. i had full grip of the blanket...

after a while i came and he followed after...

he fell on me without pulling out.. then he kissed me and pulled out...

he went to take off the protection and throw it away...

him : i cant believe i just threw my other set of triplets...

me : mxm.. good thing... imagin going through all that again...

him : so in other words, you never giving me another child??

me : you have 3, so how many more you want??

him : these are triplets but are counted as one.. so you still have 3 pregnancies to go..

me : lol.. how about we adopt..

him : adopt??

me : yes.. alot of babies need families.. so rather we adopt..

him : am going to prepare the shower.. am not listening to you...

me : come on... lol...

him : am not hearing you...

i laughed.. he went in the bathroom and went to open water in the shower...

i followed.. so he had his gown on.. i went in there
butt naked..

i stood at the door..

me : you done.. i wanna bath..

he looked at me and smiled...

him ; almost done..

he came to me, kissed me and closed the door....

[12/14, 05:24] Zozaness: The villagegirl an the
playboy: arranged marriage

92

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.
.
****nonhlanhla****

its valentines today and Ayanda asked to take me to go bowling with him then go watch movies at the cinema... he is coming to pick me up with his brothers car, but he is picking me up at school, he doesnt know were i stay so i said we would meet at the school.. so i told my mom that am going out with a friend.. she just doesnt know that, that friend is actually a guy....

so i got up early and woke mbali.. we cleaned early and got done in time.. i went to bath and get ready.. Ayanda is fetching me at 11am so i still have about an hour... and dad still has to drop me off at school... you probably asking what lie i spined to get them to agree to take me to school on valentines day on saturday to school.. well i told them that i have a group of friends and we decided to do something fun together..

mbali was just laying on the bed, busy on her phone...

as i was getting dressed my phone rang... it was smangaliso..

i looked at mbali before i answered.. then i wispered "its your man"...

me : hay smangaliso

him : hay mbali... how are you??

me : am owk thanks..

him : great.. huh, can i see you today?? i kinda have a surprise for you...

me : huh!!... mhm... i cant.. am preparing something nice for my parents since its valentines day and after am going shopping for their presents..

him : ohhh owk.. we could go together...

me : huh... no.. i mean you could but am already going with my uncle...

him : ohhh, too bad..

me : hay it doesnt have to be a waist.. my little sister mba.... nonhlanhla would like to spend time with you..

him : what?

me : i mean, she always asking what type of guy you are.. and since you kinda getting to me mabye its a good thing to bond with my lil sis..

him : owk.. i guess it wont be that bad.. i mean she could soon be my sister in law right?

me : (couches) right.. (fake smile)...

him : so will i have to pick her up?? and were do i pick her up?

me : damn.. huh... at school.. around 11am.

him : owk.. huh.. have a great day.. i will give your lil sister your presents..

me : thanks.. am sorry again.. mabye i will make it up next time..

him : yah.. mabye..

me : oh and please return her exactly at 5pm.. at 6pm me and my uncle will pick her up..

him : oh owk... will do..

me : owk bye..

him : bye

i hung up and looked at mbali...

her : so i am spending valentines with him??

me : yes..

her : but what if i say something and the truth comes out that am mbali not you..

me : that would be great...

her : mxm...

me : listen, you have 30 minutes to prepare yourself.. at 10:15 dad is driving us to school.. i will tell them that i decided to bring you with since you my lil sister.. after they drop us and leave.. we will separate.. you will go stand at the shop and i will go to the gate.. that way there wont be a clash between ayanda and smangaliso...

her : ohhh.. clever.. seems like i shared some cleverness..

me : mxm...

she laughed...

me : ohh and please, by 5pm let him drop him at the shop.. please.. dont mess up.. set an alarm owk...

her : owk will do...

me : and mbali, you better plan telling the truth.. or i will..

her : but nonhla.....

me ; no buts... fix this...

she stood up to get ready..

and just then i called ayanda.. he answered on the second ring...

him : Queen...

me : King... were are you??

him : am still at home.. but i will be out in a sec.. just doing the last touch ups..

me : oh owk.. i am also doing last tough ups..

him ; owk.. no problem...

me : and King, please pick me up at the school gate...

him : the small gate or the big gate??

me : the small gate... (i chose that one because it was further away from the shop...)

him : owk.. noted..owk queen let me finish here and come pick you up..

me : owk..

him ; i love you.. dont you ever forget that..

me : i love you too... dont you ever forget that...

we laughed..

me : bye..

him : bye..

i hung up and i did the last touch ups..

mbali also got done..(she did a quick 360).. we went down already having everything...

we met mom in the living room...

me : mom.. i have something to ask you?

mom : what??

me : can mbali come with??

mom : why??

me : well, i want to give you and dad space to enjoy yall valentines and also even though am with my friends i would really miss my lil sister..

mom ; i really love the unity you guys have.. it makes me jelouse

me : hahaha yah... so is that a yes??

mom : owk.. no problem.. your father can drop both of yall at school...

i smiled at mbali, she smiled and winked at me...after a while my phone rang... its ayanda

me : hay...

i moved away from mom..

him : please leave your house in 3 minutes owk?

me : owk..

him : sho..

i hung up...

me : mom, that was one of my friends.. we need to go now...

mom : keven!! (calling dad).. kevin!!

he came down...

mom : you going to get the kids late.. lets go..

dad : owk.. everyone done??

us : yes...

dad : mbali is also going??

me : yes dad.. it wouldnt be a nice hangout knowing i left my lil sister alone at home...

dad : nice...

we got into dads car.. i sent smangaliso a text that he should fetch mbali at the shop...

he texted back.. "owk will do... but i really wanted to spend the day with you instead".. i replied..."sorry.. but i owe you a date".. he sent a reply.."deal".. i didnt respond...

dad got to school.. we asked him to drop us at the big gate.. its not far from the shop, but ist a little far from the small gate...

dad : theres no one, you sure these people said

11am??

me : yes dad.. am sure they just being delayed.. they will come..

mom : owk, we will wait till they arrive...

mbali : why dont you drop us and we will wait.. you guys dont have to wait with us..

me : yes, you can leave us here..

dad : and what if something bad happenes to you??
no we waiting...

the plan was becoming a desaster.. untill some
some guys got in school.. ohhhh yah.. i remember
grade 12 accounting learners have classes today..

me : ohh dad there they are..(pointing at those
learners).

dad ; you sure??

me : yah.. see, they going inside the school becouse
they dont see anyone..

mom : owk my babies, take care owk...

me : owk mom...

we got out and we headed inside the school while looking back.. we pretended to walk in and they drove away.. we checked them and their car drove away..

me : phew.. thanks to the learners hai..

her : i almost thought the plan was a bomb...

me : i need to run to the small gate before ayanda calls.. you go to the shop..

her : owk.. take care sis..

me : yah you also take car...

i felt like mabye something might go bad.. lets just wish its just a feeling nje... normal feeling...

i ran to the small gate.. on the way ayanda called me..

me : hay King..

him : hay Queen.. you sound like you running...

me : yes i am.. my dad dropped me off far...

him : didnt you tell him that he should drop you off here at the small gate??

me : i did but he thought i said big gate.. well i said it was owk..

him : so you preferd to run?/

me : ngizoyenzani?? (what can i do)

him : lol... owk.. i will drive towards you and meet you halve way..

me : am almost there, i can even see a car there.. guess its yours...

him : yah.. but am still gonna drive to you...

me : owk..

him : sho..

he hung up and i saw the car drive to me..

it stopped next to me.. i smiled...

he parked the car and got out the car.. this guy likes swagging hai...

he wore a black jean, not sagging... with black sneakers.. then he wore a light grey short sleeve shirt.. he wore a black man pouch/ side back... he had one long earring and had glasses on...

ohhhhhhhh Ayanda can be a snack yaz... he has this image of preddy ugly...

he came to me and hugged me then kissed me..

him : you look so beautiful..

me : thanks, same to you..

him : thank you...come lets go..

he held my hand, leading to the car and opened the door for me.. i got in.. he closed the door and went to his seat... he got in and smiled at me and drove away..

i still was feeling bad for leaving mbali alone at the shops..

me : please pass by the shop, i left my lil sister there..

him ; why??

me : someone is supposed to pick her up.. so i want to see if shes still there or not..

him : owk..

we passed there and she was still standing there..

him : is that her??

me : yes.. can we please park a little further away but not to further till she is picked up??

him ; no problem,.. phela you cant just leave her without knowing that shes safe or not...

me : correct...thank you..

he parked and we had small talks while i would still check if shes right or not...

after a while a car parked and i saw smangaliso going to her... i smiled..

me : her date is here...we can go..

him : nizjelile today neh?? (you planned today neh)

me : lol.. just go wena...

he drove away...

[12/14, 06:59] Zoaness: marriage

continuation

.

.

- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .

****nonhlanhla****

we got to the mall and went to the bowling club.. it was so beautiful.. so we registered and went in.. we got to our set and we settled in..

him : ready to play??

me : yes sir... ready to beat your walking self...

him : oh please, you cant beat the bolwing master... never..

me : and you think you can beat the bowling queen??

him : mxm.. you mean bowling learner??

we laughed...

him : ready??

me : ready....

he said i should go first.. i went and guess what, my ball went on the side, hitting nothing...

he kissed me on my cheek...

him ; well tried...

i gave him a smile with a little "really??" look...

he went and it hit everything...

he then looked at me and pushed his eyebrows.. i just smiled...

we continued playing, it was fantastic, nice and wonderful.. definitely best valentines day ever...

after that we ordered some food and went to take a seat at the tables to eat.. i like how ayanda eats.. just by seeing him eat makes me wanna kiss him or just eat...lol.. weird i know...

well after our meal we went to the cinema.. we went to watch titanic then followed by The proposal...

him : so have you watched titanic??

me : nop..

him : The proposal??

me : nop..

him : so it would be your first time watching it with me?

me : yes.. so you have watched it??

him : i havent watched titanic but i kinda know the story line becouse i have heard alot of stories about it... but as for The proposal i dont know nothing about it...

me : can you tell me the storyline of titanic??

him : no!! cant, i mean if i do then you would know what to expect...

me : please... just a little cherry...

him : no.. you will have to wait.. plus its first on the list..

me : first on the list??

him : yes.. it comes before The proposal..

me : oh owk.. i guess i will wait...

him : you do just that...

we got to the cinema and we bought some popcorns and snacks.. then went inside...

we got inside and sat at one of the lower chairs...

.

.

.

smangaliso

so i had prepared something nice for mbali, unfortunately she couldnt be here...but since am with her lil sister i changed some things..

we had to go to this romantic date.. so i couldnt take nonhlanhla to a romantic date so rather i council...

i dialed the number...

me : good afternoon sir..

him : good afternoon sir..

me : my name is smangaliso mnguni.. i would like to council my bookings for today..

him : huh, may i ask why sir??

me : well, seems like my date wont show up today so theres no use..

him : owk sir.. we appologise for that..so when did you make the booking??

me : yersterday..

him ; oh owk, found it... smangaliso mnguni right??

me : correct..

him ; all clear...

me : thank you bye..

him : bye sir

i hung up and finished cooking.... after i was done i dished up... sphe had also taken her girl out but will be back around 6 or 7 after dropping her girl off..

so i took the food to her and we sat down eating.. she was very good company, she makes me laugh, we have great moments together.. like i just got to

spend time with her for few hours but already i feel like i know her.. shes free, talkative and all.. she just brings life in me..

unlike mbali, she is always weired, she hardly talks, laughs at my jokes, she hardly even makes a conversation.. she just keeps quite and looks away.. then when i ask questions she give me a short annswer...

i have this weired feeling towards nonhlanla though, its just unexcplainable...

me : enjoying the food??

her : yah, its great...

me : really?? like really??

her : owk owk.. mabye you kinda overdid the salt here...

me : hahahaha, i knew it...

we laughed...

her : but its greatish for someone who is learning... but i cant stand the salt..

me : see, you just something else....

we laughed..

i just loved how opinionated she was and how she calls a spade a spade... yes shes forward and that alone makes her unique.. it sits well on her... what am i doing??

me : how about we go eat out and then go watch movies??

her : great... am game...

me : but we going to have to take a taxi... becouse i dont have a car yet..

her : its cool, aslong as am with you am owk..

me : huh??

her : i meant as my brother in law....

me : ohh.. but am not your brother in law yet..

her : mhm... but trust me you will be nonhlanhlas brother in law soon...

me : right... owk... lets go...

we went, took a taxi to the mall and went into a restaurant.. we ordered and ate....

her : now this is what you call food...

me : can you cook??

her : well, i try..

me : what you mean you try.??

her : i can cook pap, rice, eggs, tomato, chips, liver and someother things.. but i cant improvise.. the way you teach me how to make a meal is the way i will make it for the rest of my life.. i cant play arround with ingrediants..

me : woooow...really... mabye i must teach you how to cook...

she shook her head and looked at her food...

me : what?? (laughs)...

her : i think between me and you.. i am the best cook...

me : you recon??

her : yep.... want a cook show??

me : i will hold on to that... will see..

we laughed...

after we have eaten... she took a plastic, threw all the dirt we caused.. took a tissue and cleaned the table...

me : you do know that, that is someones job right??

her : yes, but that doesnt mean we should leave such a mess...

me : ohhhh owk...

we left... and went to the cinema..

i looked at the movies that would play and it looks like we going to have to watch The proposal because it starts in about 3 minutes...

me : just in time for a nice movie.. but its romance... so please no "ncoooooo" and crying..

her : (laughs) sure..

we bought snacks and all that then we got inside.. the bottom was kinda full so we had to sit at the top...

the movie started and we watched the movie..

we had snacks while eating.. out of nowhere i felt a popcorn hit me...

i looked at nonhlanhla she was so serious like it was not her...

i took some and threw it on her face... she looked at me with shock...

so now it was popcorn fight until we were caught...

lady : shhhh, please settle down, or we could have you thrown out...

we looked at her serious, then we looked at each other.. after she left, she poked me and imitated the lady in silence just by action and miming...

we laughed as soft as we could...

me : (whisper) stop it nonhlanhla, you will get us thrown out...

she then laughed softly and we calmed down...

after the movie, the lights went on and people started going out.. we were still seated picking up

the popcorns we were throwing on the floor...

as i picked my head laughing at what nonhlanhla was saying about the movie, i saw mbali hand in hand with another guy...

i didnt believe it was her... it couldnt... i looked closely as they approached the door and it was her.. exactly her..

me : nonhlanhla... is that your sister??

she looked then looked at me.. she didnt utter a word.. she looked shocked or scared or nervouse all of a sudden...

me : is it her??

him : y...yes...

i stood up and went to approach her... one thing about me.. i hate lies.. a girl that lies?? nah... if she had a boyfriend she would have told me, not lie about it...

i got to them and tapped her shoulder... she was very shocked to see me.. she even looked around like she was looking for someone.. guess she was

looking for nonhlanhla...

me : so this buying your parents presents??

her : huh....

the guy : and ?? whats going on??

me : my guy.. please.. its between me and my lady
owk...

the guy : you and your lady?? brah ungankhengi joe
(dont bore me please)... this is my girl.. my queen, so
whatever business you have with her is my
business...

i ignored him...

me : mbali... if you had a boyfriend you would have
told me and i would back off... not string me along,
giving me hope that one day we would be a couple...

the guy : nonhlanhla, lets go....

i got confused at to why he was calling her
nonhlanhla...

me : yazi udome mfanami...(you know you dom boy)
the way this girl doesnt love you, she even gave you

her lil sisters name...

nonhlanhla arrived and stood next to me pulling me away...

the guy : you the dom one my guy.. her name is nonhlanhla...

me : and how would you know...??

the guy : we in the same class bro.. now stay the hell away from my girl owk?

i didnt say anything.. i just looked at mbali/nonhlanhla what ever her name is... i also looked at her little sister... i wasnt sure of what was going on... i went away.. her lil sister followed me... i felt like telling her to go with her sister but that wouldnt be fair...

i took a taxi with her.. as we passed the school, i stoped the taxi...

i looked at nonhlanhla/mbali..

me : have a nice day.. please stay in the shop till they pick you up..

she looked dissapointed, like she might cry... but i

didn't care.. at least i brought her back were i found her...

.

.

.

****nonhlanhla****

we got in the car and ayanda didn't say anything... he just kept quite..

me : king??

he didn't say anything... he just focused straight at the road...

me : baby please say something...

him : should i drop you off at the small gate or big gate.?

me : king please...

he kept quite...

me : big gate please...

we drove like that (in silence) till he dropped me off

at the big gate... he didnt even say goodbye.. he just dropped me off and drove away.. he didnt even look at me...

i walked to the shop as i saw mbali...

her : you shouldve told me were ayanda was taking you...

me : yah... i messed up..

her : nah.. i messed up.. i wasnt supposed to get you in all this in the first place..

me : actually am not sad that smangaliso found out.. actually am relieved... am only sad becouse now ayanda might dumb me..

her : dumb you?? after telling smanga to back off?? i dont think so...

me : you think??

her : he really defended you from being humiliated.. so theres still love there..

me : i really hope so.. phela he didnt even say goodbye...

her : lets just call dad to pick us up...

me : yah... so smangaliso yena??

her : same.. hes very pissed...

me : eash.. yah neh..

i dialled dad,...

him : nana...

me : we back dad...

him ; owk.. we on our way...

me : owk, dad..

after a while dad came and found us at the small gate..

we got in the car...

mom ; yall look like you didnt have fun.. what happened??

me ; nothing ma! just ended with people fighting..

dad : eash.. its a good thing yall decided to come home.. no wonder yall came back early..

mbali : yes dad...

me ; dad can we order pizza, chips and milkshakes..

dad : didnt yall eat enough??

me : we did, but am craving that right now..

mom ; dont speak of cravings like you pregnant...

me : ma!! hao...

just so you know, ayanda and i are not in a sexual relationship.. it hasnt reached there yet...

we got home.. dad ordered and we stuffed ourselves with junk listening to sad music..

mbali : yah neh... love can make you a poet..

we laughed.. that came out of nowhere... mbali mara...

me : were does that come from manje?

mbali : am just saying nje...

we laughed....

[12/14, 07:00] Zozaness: 93

.

.

.

****2 weeks later****

****smangaliso****

i was sitting on my bed facing down...

him : how long are you going to beat yourself up
bro??

me : untill i have no feeling left inside for her.... or
her lil sister...

him : what??

me : nvm...

him : i know you once told me that you dont want to
talk about this.. but could you please talk to me
mahn.. i cant bear seeing you like this.. do you even
focus at work??

me : should i tell you a funny story?? well i am
always mixing up at work.. but pele always covers up
for me...

him : is he one of the interns??

me : yes..

him : atleast.. now share to tell me whats bothering you?? well i know its those 2 dark skin girls and something about facebook, so please clarify what they did...

me : lets just say i think i miss the young sister more then i miss the older sister...

him : what??

me : yah.. i know its weired...

him : so what about mbali??

me : another thing i suspect they switched names...

him : huh??

me : the young one is mbali and the old one is nonhlanhla..

him ; you sure??

me : well am not sure but its what was said...

him : by?

me : nonhlanhla's boyfriend..

him : nonhlanhla, the older sister??

me : yep...

him : so he had a boyfriend?? that would explain the weird tension she gave us when you confronted them... so who was speaking on facebook with you??

me : i think mbali the young one...

him ; why would you think that??

me : she is the one who recognised me.. and knew alot about my chats.. plus when i spent the day with her that day.. i felt like i had known her for a long time.. unlike when am with the older sister.. she acts all weird and shy.. clearly it was the young one..

him : have you spoken to either of them ever since??

me : no.. i needed some fresh air... plus they have been trying to call me all the time..

him : both of them??

me : no only the older sister calls me and texts me.. i dont even know who chats to me on whatsapp, must be the young sister...

him ; you know this because??

me : she chats like how she chats on facebook and how he talks when we were together on valentines day...

him : you in a tight space mahn...

me : its weired becouse even after all this.. mbali is the one always rooming in my mind...

him : call her, i will leave and give yall space.. let her explain and thats it...

me : should i??

him : yes boy..like a nike label... just do it...

me : hahahaha.. woooooow....

i dialed the number they gave me...someone picked up...

her : hay smangaliso...

me : who am i speaking to??

her : nonhlanhla....

me : is that your real name??

her : yes...

me : can i speak to mbali then...

i heard shuffling and she responded..

her : hallo...

me : can you meet up with me, i have to talk to you...

her : sure, no problem.. were should i meet you??

me : at the park.. i will come pick you up...

her : owk.. sure...

me : owk...

i hung up...

me : boy.. could you lend me your car, i would like to fetch mbali...

him : sure boy no problem..

me : and you dont need to leave.. you can just close yourself in your room, thats it...

him : no dont stress.. am going out with the gents anyway so.. yah...just take care of my baby...

me : your baby??

him : the car...

me : oh right... will do...

i got ready, freshened up and drove to the park....

.

.

.

mbali

i was now finished preparing and now whats missing is leaving without my parents knowing... so the park is like 40 minutes away from here if you walk... so i rather walk then to actually ask my parents to drive me there... it would raise alot of questions...

me : nonhlanhla.. you have done alot for me.. am not going to ask that you cover for me.. when my parents notice that am not in the house.. just say you dont know.. i will bail myself out...

her : so you really going to this guy??

me : yes.. i love him nhalnhla.. and i want to fix things...

her : owk.. just come back in time owk.. and be

careful.. dont forget to text me the location you are in when you meet him...

me : owk.. will do...

i hugged her and sneaked out.. she kept mom and dad distracted by asking them questions and talking to them... so i sneaked out and ran to the park...

after few minutes i finally reached at the park and i saw him sitting on the logs.. he had on a black jean, black short sleeve shirt and a black basketball hairband with his dreadlocs hanging loose.. he is a very fine brown skined guy...

he was looking at his phone..

i approached him and my heart skipped a beat...

he looked up and stood up opening the door of the car for me. without saying a word...

i got in.. he closed the door and got in..

he fastened his seat belt and looked at me...

him : please fasten your seatbelt...

i actually wanted him to say something thats why i

actually didnt fasten my seatbelt... his voice brought chills...

he drove to a a house and parked in.. it wasnt something big.. it was a normal house nje...

he got out and came to open for me.. he led me in the house..

him : should i get you anything??

me : just water please....

he brought the water and sat next to me on the small couch...

him : am listening...

me : huh??

him : why did you lie??

me : (clears throat).. i was scared that you would know that am very younger then you... then you would reject me...

him : what do you mean younger then me?? arnt you 19??

me : no.. am not 19...

him : then how old are you?

me : i am.. 15..

him : 15??

me : yes..

him : why were you not just honest with me??

me : i mean you 6 years older then me... i thought you would see that as too much...

him : is that why you asked your sister to pretend to be you??

me : yes.. i mean she was older.. and it could sell my story...

him : what if i had fallen for her?? what would you do, knowing its all your fault??

me :.....

him : huh??

me :.....

him : mbali what you did was selfish.. not only did you hurt me but you messed up your sisters

relationship...

me :.....

him : ****sigh**** valentines day?? did you plan all that??
you coming to visit as a future "lil sister in law"...

me : yes...

him ; woow... i must say for a 15 year old you
kinda forward..

me :..... does this mean you forgive me??

him : i couldnt stop thinking about you.. after
that day you were always in my mind.. i didnt
understand why but.. i didnt care either... what you
did is really unforgivable.. catfishing someone is
really wrong.. but weird enough, a part of me wants
to forgive you...

me : i also have been thinking about you.. when i
catfished you i thought maybe i would never meet
you.. i enjoyed chatting to so much that i didnt want
to let go...

him : mutual feeling...

i smiled at him.. we looked at each other...

my heart started racing again...

he leaned in and came close to kiss me.. well your girl has had a few french kissed before so it was all good..

we frenched kiss and he started touching me all over my waist.. i always knew that one day i would have to give away my innocence.. and since i am fond of smangaliso.. mabye if i sleep with him then he wont leave me...

he continued and feelings arose... i felt weired things happening in my body but i chose to ignore them...

he then pulled back...

him : sorry.. i got carried away...

me : please.. dont stop...

him : are you serious??

me : yes.. i think am ready...

him : ready??

me : am a virgin.. but am ready..

him : no.. i cant..

i pulled him in and kissed him..he responded for a while then pulled back...

him : mbali...

me : do you love me??

him : yes..

me ; then all is well...

he continued kissing me... he then picked me up and took me to his room... he took off my shirt as he slowly kissed my upperbody.. my breast, stomach and neck.. then he took off his shirt...

as he reached to touch my lady down there i kinda got a little scared.. but his touch assured me that all is well...

i took off my sneakers.. then he pulled my jeans off, then followed with my underwear.. it was rather a little uncomfortable when he pulled my undy off.. he also took off his jeans while kissing me and stayed in his boxers..

we were under the sheets.. i could feel something poking me.. i figured that was his man... after

sometime he reached for something in his drawer..

me : you have a condom right??

him : yes...

he did what he did then i felt something at the door of my lady down there...

him : you really sure about this??

me : yes...

he pushed slowly and slowly as i took grip of the blankets and arched my back... in a sec he pushed deep in and i felt an extreme pain that coused me to literaly cry...

i griped tight of the blankets and screamed in pain... he then started moving and the pain got a little more.. after a while the pain faintly dissapeared and there was a feeling of pleasure..

he moved in and out faster and faster till i felt like i was about to release something.. my body shook... it was like i was being electric shaken..

then he also moved more and finally fell on me...

he then layed next to me... i felt something wet.. i tried touching it with my hands becouse i was told that if you break your virginity you likly to come out blood.. i reached and checked my finger and it was blood.. i tried moving but it was really sore down there...

me : smanga.. i think i bled...

him : let me see..

he removed the blanket and i closed my face with my hands..

him : damn... you bled really bad.. are you owk..??

me : yes am fine..

he picked me up taking me to the bathroom...

him : sort yourself up.. i will take care of the blood owk??

me : owk.. thank you...

i poured water and took a bath.. i didnt use a cloth becouse i didnt want to use any of his cloths to wash my bloody self.. i used my hands instead..

then when i was done i took a towel and dried myself... i asked him for my clothing.. he gave me my clothing.. i got dressed.. cleaned the bathroom and headed out.. he wasnt in his bedroom.. well i sat there looking at my phone...

4 missed calls from nonhlanhla..

i dialed back..

her : i have been trying to get hold of you... were are you??

me : am still with smanga..

her : is he treating you alright??

me : yes.. he didnt do anything..

her : phew... so he forgave you??

me : yah... is mom and dad looking for me??

her : not yet... but you better come back before they notice that you not around...

as i was speaking smanga walked in with pizza...

me : listen i have to go..

her : owk.. be back fast..

me : cool...

i hung up...

him : who was that??

me : my sister..

him : oh owk... bought pizza...

me : when did you order this??

him : 20 minutes ago...

me : oh... thanks..

we ate, then and enjoyed then i asked him to take me back home... he dropped me back at the park..

i said goodbye and went home.. it was difficult walking.. i felt like to walk right i had to open my legs and walk with my legs open...

so i decided to walk very slow so that i dont show that i just gave away my precious innocence...

it took me about an hour and 40 minutes to get home walking as slow as i can so that my walk is

normal...

i dialed nonhlanhla as i got home...

her : you coming?? mom just asked were you at...

me : good..

her : stay there.. i said you went to the store to buy something so you can walk in normally..

me : owk thanks..

i hung up and walked in as usuall.. still walking slow..

i found everyone in the living room...

mom : hao mbali, are you owk?? nonhlanhla told me you have been sleeping for the whole day and you just left to buy pills at the store...

me : am owk mom (down voice)...

dad : what is wrong baby??

me : nothing dad...am fine..

i walked to my room.. they kept calling me but i didnt answer them i just went straight to my room...

i got in my and just slept... for some reason i felt

****nonhlanhla****

so ayanda has been avoiding me.. well he speaks to me about school work but he doesnt speak about us...

last week friday i asked him why he wasnt saying anything.. and he said that there was nothing to talk about.. as if thats the only thing thats stressing me right now.. well dimpho saw the tension between us and took advantage of it...

guess who was kissing who at the gate afterschool on friday??? ayanda kissing dimpho... really nigga??? well i am not going to beg someone who doesnt care, better yet who doesnt love me... nx (clicking my tongue).....

so today i am going to put on my big girl shoes and my brave bright face.... ayanda and his precious dimpho will not ruin my mood nor life no day.... period.. if they want to see the savage side of me.. then they will...

my alarm woke me up... mbali has been really off since saturday, after she came from smangalisos

place.. i am not sure why because when i checked on her yesterday she didnt want to speak to me... even smangaliso called me yesterday asking me why mbali is not taking his calls.. i am very worried about her, more she doesnt want to talk...

anyway i get up and wake mbali up...

her : mhm..

me : wake up, or else you gonna be late...

her : am not going to school today...

me : why?? you sick??

her : yes.. !!

me : whats wrong??

her : no questions please.. just tell mom and dad am not going to school today...

me : haibo mbali...

her : if you dont want to you can just say it...

i gave her the "and then??" look...she went back to sleep...

i let her be and went to shower and get ready.. then i went down for breakfast... mom was not out yet.. only dad was in the kitchen..

me : morning dad...

dad : morning darling...

i sat down dishing out my bowl.. we were having jungle oats with berries...

dad : is mbali delaying again??

me : nop.. she said shes not going to school..

dad : what?? is she crazy??

i shrug my shoulders showing that i dont know...

mom then came down in the kitchen...

mom : hao family....

me : morning mom...

dad : please go and tell that child to prepare for school and come out of her bedroom before i go and dragg her out myself.... she will go to school in pjs...

mom : what has mbali done now??

me : she doesnt want to go to school...

mom : did she say why??

dad : shes crazy thats why...

me : actually she said shes sick...

mom : ohhhh poor child... let me go check on her...

dad : theres no poor child here... she didnt want to tell us whats wrong since saturday, kept herself locked in the room whole day yesterday... for what??

i just kept quite and followed mom and she went to check on mbali...

we walked in the room, she was sleeping again...

mom touched her forehead...

mom : shes normal.. shes doesnt have a high temperature...

me : mabye its something that doesnt couse high temperature...

mom : normally when someone is sick their temperature goes up...

me : ohh...

mom woke mbali up...

mom : mbali?? mbali..

she shook her...

mbali : ma!!

mom : whats wrong baby??

mbali :.....

mom : talk to me baby, whats wrong?? were is it sore??

mbali :.....i.....i....(starts crying).....i just want to stay in bed mom..... please...

my heart broke down when i saw her crying.. i didnt understand why she was crying.. she wouldnt tell me or my mom.. i hate it when shes like this...

mom : baby dont cry.. speak to me nana... what happened?? why you crying??

mbali just kept crying and crying... she even burried her face in the pillow and started kicking her feet as though she was irritated or something then she

screamed in her pillow.. that moment my heart just broke into pieces...

i went to her and hugged her as she lay on her stomach... mom also hugged us both...

mom : owk baby.. you can stay and not go to school owk... but when i come from work please tell me whats going on owk...

mbali didnt respond, she kept crying...

me : what ever it is mbali dont beat yourself up because of it.. you strong lil sister.. very strong.. you actually stronger then me+mom+dad+mpilo combined.. you will be owk...

she kept crying in her pillow nonstop and fighting with the blankets and the bed...

for the first time i saw mom shed a tear.. i could tell she was heartbroken... i held moms shoulder and smiled at her...

me : we better get going mom.. mbali needs some space... and am sure dad is waiting for us...

mom : owk.....(whiping her tears).....stay well

baby....(speaking in a breaking voice).....

mom stood up and we went down... dad was outside already waiting for us...

we went out locking all doors and gates and went i the car...

dad ; uphe umbali (weres mbali)??

mom : shes really not feeling good..

dad : yaz, she has you eating in her hands....

mom : i dont think so kevin... when we left her she was crying, fighting with the bed..

dad : what??

mom : yah...

they kept talking about mbali, trying to figure out what could be the problem..

i was sitting in the backseat, replaying the scene of mbali crying with her face pressed on the pillow, screaming in the pillow and fighting the bed and kicking her feet...

all this had smangaliso written on it... i dont know

what happened but he is the cause... i am sure of that... i mean before she left to see him, she was owwk.. but as she comes back she is like this... no... damn... what if smangaliso actually beat her?? nah... that wouldnt be it... but what if...

i eliminated the thought and just replayed the scene in my head.. my heart just broke everytime the scene plays..

we got to school... they dropped me off and drove away...

i got in school and went straight to my classroom... i stood outside the classroom until the teacher came...

she came and i walked in and sat at my table... i looked at the board and zoned out....

the learners came in one by one and the next thing the class is full....

the teacher takes register.. then we went to assembly... trust me, i didnt even hear halve of what was said at the assembly... after assembly we went

to our next class...

the next 2 classes i dont share with ayanda.. its design and EGD.... but after that its physical science...

in these classes i was halve paying attention and halve away, thinking about mbali...

time passed fast and now it was time for physical science... i got in and sat down... later ayanda walked in with dimpho and some other girls...

i didnt even look at them i just looked at my table and thought about mbali... i just couldnt wait for afterschool so that i could go home and be with her...

i sat down.. dimpho leaned on my table waiting for ayanda to greet his friends.. i didnt even mind her...

the teacher came and she moved away...

the lesson started... i was very much distracted and out of class..

teacher : nonhlanhla!! nonhlanhla!!

me : (coming back to earth)... mam??

teacher : what was i saying??

me : huh... mam was explaining vertical projectile

teacher : could you please explain what it is??

me : mam??

teacher : i mean if you were listening then surely you can explain what you understand right??

me : owk... vertical projectile is...

dimpho : we cant hear you darling...

teacher : others cant hear you... how about you stand up and look at the class to explain...

i was not comfortable with this.. my heart was even beating out of the ordinary.... i breathed in and out then stood up...

i looked around and all the learners were looking at me like they seeing money.. like they stared at me.. their eyes were really piercing my eyes... i looked at ayanda, his eyes stayed fixed at mine.. i moved them to dimpho.. she smiled...

teacher : yes??

me : vertical projectile is an object upon which only force acting is force of gravity.... that object can either thrown or dropped... so we say that object is falling freely.... "free fall system" where the only force acting is gravity...

i looked at the teacher...

teacher : go sit down...

i smiled and went to sit... (i studied this last week so thats how i know... i wasnt really listening).....

the lesson went on...

time passed and finally it was afterschool and uncle bongani is taking me home...

he comes to pick me up afterschool because mom and dad are at work... so he drops us home and returns back to work...

so as i walked out the school, i bumped into dimpho...

her : you know.. the way you were so distracted in class tells me that you might have found out what happened on friday...

me :.....

i continued walking, she followed me...

her : i take it you did.,.... mxm... am really sorry about that.. its just that ayanda cant take no as an answer... and then way hes so attractive who would say no??

me :.....

her : i must say, he really has soft lips... mhm.... now that he has tastes how sweet my lips are, am sure we going to have more kissing scenes.. you know what comes after kisses??

me : blisters....

her :..... i wanted to say bedroom romance.... . you know i think its time you accepted that ayanda is nomore yours.. you nolonger the queen darling..... hope you enjoyed it while it lasted...

me : i did actually... atleast i was never kept a secret...

i said that becouse she was dating thabo (the schools soccer player) and their relationship was a secret.. when it came out thabo denied dating her....

but later witness arose that indeed they had something going on...

and that made her angry....

her : i was not a secret, we just didnt want attention....

me : keep convincing yourself that....

her : anyway that doesnt matter... i just came to say my condolences on your loss... which is your relationship with ayanda...

at that moment ayanda walked up to us...

him : nonhlanhla, can i have a moment with you please...

me : (looking at dimpho) looks like you came to say condolences too early while the patient is in coma.... now the patient made progress.... your bad wishes made God give the patience another shot in life....

i smiled at her and she gave me the "am gonna get you face".... she walked away....

him : what was that about??

me : you girlfriend came to send her condolences for my loss...

him : my girlfriend?? shes not my girlfriend, and who died??

me : our relationship died...

him : are you breaking up with me??

me : the relationship is not God, it cant resurect....

him : what?? i dont understand... i mean i should be mad at you becouse you made me stupid with another guy.... and i came here today to speak about that....

me : ohhhhh really?? i thought you came to confess about your kiss with dimpho on friday....

him :.....

me : thought i wouldnt know huh?? wanna know how i found out??

him : Queen, it was a mistake... we were standing with the gents and other girls then suddenly dimpho just came to kiss me.. trust me i pushed her away and walked away... ask my boys if you dont believe

me....

me : well it doesnt matter now... no need to mourn...
you can move on....

i saw uncle bonganis car.. so i went to the car
leaving him there...

i got in the car...

me : afternoon uncle...

him : afternoon nhlanhla...

we drove and finally i got home....

i unlocked the gates and went straight in my room...

i found mbali still on the bed eating my mayo, the big
one...

me : mbali!! really??

her : hi...

me : dude, that was my last one...

i buy these in bulks becouse i
loooooovvvvvveeeeeee them...

her : i will ask mom to buy you another bulk....

me : you so annoying... i take it you owe now...did you eat??

her : i had oats in the morning and mayo now...

me : are you not hungry??

her : no.....

me : so could you please tell me whats wrong with you??

her : well.... i.....i....smanga.....

me : did smanga hit you??

her : nonononono.....

me : then what??

her : i kinda gave smanga my virginity on saturday...

me : what???? you hardly know the guy....

her : i know... i feel stupid... (she couped her face)...

me : yaz mara mbali....

her : please dont lecture me, i already know that i messed up...

me : is that why you were crying earlier??

she nodded....

her : i feel stupid, i regret it... i feel dirty.. i feel like i just disgraced myself..

me : now why you not speaking to smangaliso?? why you ignoring him??

her : he probably thinks am easy, that he can do me anything.... am sure he told the whole world how an easy target i am.. see him once and already viginity gone...

me : that was really stupid... but you cant be a virgin again so why you beating yourself about it??

her : i know.. but again it hurts down there.. i literally walk open legs...

me : did he hurt you??

her : a little....

me : tell me.... how was it??

her : virgin mary... go find out yourself....

me : hahaha.. please hle...

her : preparing for ayanda??

me ; nop.. me and ayanda broke up...

her : is it about the smanga issue??

me : nop... he was kissing dimpho on friday..then he says dimpho forced the kiss and he pushed her back...but i dont believe him

her : ouch... but he could be telling the truth.. that dimpho girl is trouble...

me : whatever... so how was it...

her : how was what??

me : you know what am talking about... come on spill the beans...

her : ohhh the mayo is very nice..

i looked at her and she laughed....

me : owk owk... sit in the blanket let me tell you...

i lay in her bed and she started spilling the beans.....
(see you later guys... am still listening to this amazing story).....

[12/14, 07:45] Zozaness: The villagegirl an the playboy: arranged marriage

95

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

****smangaliso****

its 4pm and i just arrived home from work.. sphe was already in the house watching soccer...

him : ntwana!!

me : sho sho mf2..

him : how was work??

me : no complaints... wena, isgela besinjani (wena how was school)??

him : it was owk.. just alot of work nje..

me : you will get there ntwana....

him : yah...

i went to put my bag in my room then came back to drink some water....

him ; any progress??

me : with??

him : your girlfriend... mbali...

me : nop.. still ignoring me...

him : have you tried her sister??

me : yah.. she said she also doesnt know whats wrong...

him : eash yah neh..

me : 2 days bro.. 2 days and shes still ignoring me.. i just dont understand...

him : vele vele.. what happened that saturday??

me : we talked... she explained her story and all was forgiven...

him : did she leave here still cheared up??

me : well, she was a bit off and quite but i didnt read too much in it,...

him ; there must be something you did bro.... did you say something offensive??

me : no.. i would never....

him : mabye it sliped up or it was uninterntional...

me : no....

him ; are you cheating??

me : no....wait....

i went through my facebook, but there was nothing wrong there...

him : what is it??

me : i thought mabye my ex tagged me in a post or something but no, theres nothing....

him : you still chat to your ex??

me : no.. but we still facebook friends...

him : does mbali know her??

me : nop... she has never seen her... i started talking to mbali way after we broke up....

him : hai.... this is a puzzle we cant get to put together...

me : yah.. listen i am going to take a shower.. then we will order something...

him : sho....

i went in my room and threw myself on the bed... i went back to facebook and checked carefully.....

i then massaged her for the 100th time... "babe... whats wrong?? why you ignoring me??".... i sent the text and refreshed my newsfeed...

as i was scrolling i saw a picture of lebo holding a baby girl dressed in pink and wrote.... "smangele, my light in all darkness"... i actually just passed it and scrolled more...

i dialed mbali again... i really crossed fingers that she answered... well she didnt...

i threw my phone on the bed and went to take my shower...

.
. .
. . .

****next day****

nonhlanhla*

it was the 4th period now and its life science... when i broke up with ayanda i didnt feel anything, it was easy, there was no crying or anything... the matter only hit me when i woke up this morning that actually we broke up...

i was sitting down getting nervours and each learner walked in class... i guess i didnt want to see him becouse i wouldnt be able to face him... i was really scared.. my would skip a beat...

after a while dimpho walked in... i was expecting the dimpho that would gloat even more that i ended things with ayanda and walk around ayanda trying to make me jelouse.. but here she walking in with her face facing down....

she kept looking down till she walked in the class...

it was odd because no one even uttered a word to ask what was wrong...

well..... after a while ayanda walks in.. he leaned on the door and looked at me.. he looked at me for a long time then looked down..

i monitored him.. the untucked shirt, skinny school pants, shiny school shoes, one earring, rolled binnie and bag on one shoulder... ayanda.....

he moved away from the door and went to his seat...

i looked back at dimpho and what i saw was pain....

she looked like she was beaten.. ohhhhhhhh
nooooooo... dont tell me ayanda beat her....

i looked forward... the teacher came and the lesson proceeded...

lunch time i went in the toilet.. i used the toilet then all of a sudden i heard some sniffing... i got dressed and went to knock on the toilet door...

she didnt say anything.. i opened the door and she quickly closed...

her : there is someone..

me : dimpho is that you??

her :.....

me : dimpho??

her : its not.....

me : i know its you dimpho please let me in...

she got out...

her : are you happy??

she was teary.... that means she was crying...

me : what??

her : you must be happy... you got me humiliated...

me : what are you talking about? wait did ayanda do this to you??

her :.....

me : damn ayanda...

her : it wasnt him... it was his sister.....

me : for what??

her : apparantly i am the cause of ayanda being all

sad and down and gotten his heart broken so now i
get punished.....

me :.....

her : thanks

she stormed out and left me there....

i breathed and went outside..

afterschool i looked for ayandas bestfriend beast...
they call him beast becouse he is muscular... very
mascular...

i found him at the grounds...

me : beats...

him : hay nonhlanhla... huh, ayanda is not here yet...

me : am actually here to talk to you...

him : oh owk... shoot...

me : you always with ayanda right??

him : yah.. well not always..

me : so i heard he kissed dimpho last friday... did he??

him : well.....huh.....

me : you can be honest with me...

him : please dont be angry owk.. it wasnt his fault.. dimpho forced the kiss and ayanda pulled away pushing her back and left... we then followed him leaving dimpho there...

me : really??

him : yah... my boy would never do you dirty... when he loves, he loves really hard.. you may see him as this corruptive guy that never listens in class yet entertains teachers and passes his exams, the dancer that is admired by everygirl... but he really loves you...

me : how would you know that...??

him : hes my braza.. he once dated someone in grade 9.. that girl cheated on him 6 months down the line.. you know what happened?? his sister came to beat that girl up... she messed her...

me : ouch.. kanti why??

him : masterpiece and ayanda are sooooo close, they like twins... even though masterpiece is 4 years

older than ayanda... but they tight.. its like a touch one touch all...

me : shes a girl??

him : yah... tomboyish...

me : so i should prepare myself becouse shes gonna hit me??

him : lol.... no... this morning, ayanda came with masterpiece.. she was so furous that she didnt even greet us.. dimpho was with her friends at the shop... so she asked us who is dimpho, i think ayanda didnt tell her becouse he feard what she was gonna do.,. we showed her dimpho and she went there, without a word 2 slaps across the face then ayanda stoped her... she then left, leaving her with the words "homewreker"....

me : ouch... now i understand why dimpho kept saying its my fault...

him : i heared ayanda said yall broke up... was it about the kiss??

me :.....

him ; forgive him nhlanhla.. again it wasnt his fault...
ohhh speak of the devil...

i looked back and ayanda was approaching..

me : i better get going...

him : please dont.. please i hate seeing my boy like
this.. i mean we cant even make fun of the maths
teacher together becouse hes nomore in the mood
and always quite... even the teachers think hes sick...

me : lol.....

ayanda arrived...

ayanda : beast....

beast : mastermind....

ayanda : nhlanhla...

me : mastermind..

he chuckled...

beast : let me leave you two alone...

he left...

him ; i thought you wouldve gone home...

me : i couldnt leave without finding the truth about what really happened...

him ;.....

me : am sorry... i was just heated up so i just took decisions while fuming with anger.....

him ; no, am sorry... i was supposed to let you know as soon as possible....

me : truce??

he came close to me... he held my weist and pulled me in... he leaned in for a hug... then spoke in my ear...

him ; i missed your touch..

me : is that all you missed??

him : no... and your lips...

he pulled out looking at me...

he leaned in for a kiss and we french kissed... the kiss was super long.. i had forgotten that uncle bongani could be waiting outside....

all this felt right... i didnt want it to end.. it was like i

was floating.. we were still kissing...

voice : nonhlanhla!!

i didnt mind whoever was calling me.. i was just lost in the moment... i was lost in the softness of ayandas lips...

after a while i heard mbali calling me....

mbali : nonhlanhla, uncle bongani is coming....

i slowly let go of ayanda...

him : you better go before i get you in trouble.. see you tomorrow...

me : yah... see you tommorrow...

him : i love you...

me : i love you too...

we smiled at each other...

mbali : come lets go.. you will stare at each other tomorrow....

mbali pulled me as i waved goodbye to ayanda... he stood there waving back...

we got to the car...

uncle : hao, manje nonhlanhla where were you??

me : extra classes uncle...

uncle : oh... owk.....

mbali : such an extra class... fancy...

i slaped her and she laughed.....

[12/14, 07:46] Zozaness: The villagegirl an the
playboy: arranged marriage

96

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

weeks later

mbali

we writing 1st term exams.. we just started... so today we just came from school, uncle bongani just dropped up home.. mom and dad are still not here...they probably still at work...

nonhlanhla was making us lunch and i was in the bedroom changing.... my phone rang.. i checked it was smangaliso... i sighed and looked at my phone... (i have not spoken to smangaliso since that day we..... yah.....) i wasnt sure if i was ready to speak to him..

the phone stopped ringing... i picked it up and went through his facebook messages... i then also went to his profile and scrolled through his pictures...

after a while i decided to call him..

he answered on the 1st ring...

him : baby?? babe??.....

me :.....

him : babe, please... talk to me whats wrong??

me : can i meet up with you??

him : sure, i could pick you up at the park...

me : owk... i will be at the park in an hour....

him : owk.. already on my way... but do know my roommate is not here so i cant fetch you with the car, we will take a taxi, is that owk??

me : yah.. its cool...

him : owk no problem...

me : owk bye.....

i hung up and quickly got dressed and went to the kitchen....

her : you have timming, i was about to call you to come have lunch...

me : thanks...huh, listen i am going to smangaliso....

her : mbali its 2pm

me : i wont be long...

her : mom and dad come home around 4pm..

me : i know... but i really need to see smangaliso.. its been long...

her : service??

me : no... i just want to tell him how i feel and why i have been avoiding him...

her : oh owk.. please dont do something you will regret again...

me : i wont... thanks sis...

her : so what do i tell mom and dad if they come before you do??

me : homework at a friends...

her : mhm... owk....

me : thanks...

i took my lunch and ate as i left... it was toasted bread with mince and melted cheese inside... and a juice in my bottle....

i had 4 slices.. 2 toasted together... so i enjoyed my toasted bread and juice as i walked to the park... again i found him already there sitting on the log...

i was done eating my bread but my juice was still left....

i walked to him...

as he looked up our eyes locked... we stared at each other for along time... like a long time...

i wanted to just hug him, to just hug him... thats all i wanted...

he stood up and stayed there still looking at me... my eyes bacame watery.. his eyes also showed water.. its like we were having a silent conversation...

as my tears dropped i dropped my head looking down.. next thing i feel his touch.. he lifts up my head and looks in my eyes... his eyes are red, and watery... hes fighting the tears...

i couldnt resist.. so i hugged him tight.. very tight that i didnt want to let go... he slowly hugged me back.. he then started brushing my back and grabbing me to hug me more tighter...

we were like that for some minutes... just nothing but us together tightly and our heartbeats having a

conversation...

after a while we pulled out...

him : can we??

me : huh... well... its already late...

him : owk.. whatever you comfortable with..

me : owk smangaliso... the pretence is done now.. you can dump me....

him : huh??

me : you got what you want, so you can really just dump me now... let me get over you now and heal...

him : babe? what you talking about??

me : we all know that you only wanted to sleep with me... now that you got that, dump me....

him : babe...hahahah... listen.. sleeping with you was never planned.. even though it was never planned, i still dont regret it... it actually was special to me...

me : smangaliso.....

him : (interrupting me).. mbali... i fell inlove with you

before i even saw you.. i just didnt tell you becouse i never thought i would come to PE.. i thought mabye it was never ment to be becouse you so distant... when i got accepted at the internship i was so over the moon.. thats when i knew that actually its ment to be... when you and your sister switched names, i still prefered you.. i was confused myself.. i didnt know why i was finding you more interesting then your sister... mbali, you may be young.. i may be wrong for actually sleeping with you while you were still very young.. but i love you.. i truely do...

me :.....

him ; come here...

he pulled me in and hugged me tight.... i felt safe, relaxed... i just felt like i could stay like that for the rest of my life...

him : ngiyakcanywa mf2...(i love you mahn)....

i chuckled... i kinda like it when he speaks zulu... his zulu is not the zulu we speak... it shows hes from jozi... this guy speaks tsotsi zulu... yah...lol....

we chilled at the park for a while... at around 5pm i

bid goodbye... we kissed and he left... he wanted to take me halve way but i couldnt risk it.. just now my parents see us... so he took a taxi and left and i ran home...

shoot... i didnt even take a book for backup... hai we will see when i walk in...

i got home and walked in... luckily they were not in the living room.. i ran to my room very softly and closed the door....

nonhlanhla was studyng...

her : finally.. i was starting to get worried now...

me : am back... is mom and dad here??

her : nop... not yet....

me : haibo... this time??

her : yah... they still not back....

me : did you try calling them??

her : yep.. still voicemail...

me : haibo... this is unlike mom and dad...

her : i know right.. but mabye they took each other out..

me : nah... i have a bad feeling about this...

her : eash, please dont start.. you getting me worried...

me : owk.. nvm...

i also took my books, earphones on and did my school work...

.

.

.

bongani

i was in my house when i received a call...

i responded...

me : bongani speaking hello....

voice : hallo sir, we calling to inform you that mr nhlapo and mrs nhlapo and mr pieteron have been involved in an accident...

me : what?? are they owk??

voice : we really cant say at this moment sir.. they have really lost alot of blood.. we managed to get your contects from nurse Ntando, she managed to recognise them and told us that you were family...

me : yes i know nurse Ntando, and thank you for letting me know...

voice : thank you sir

i hung up and hurried to the hospital... this is going to break nompilo and her siblngs.. eash mara why..... ohhh no....

i drove like a maniac but carefully.. i got to the hospital and went to reception...

me : hay.. i believe there was a couple brought today due to car accident...

her : yes... they arrived about an hour ago.. please go this way and ask the doctors to which ward they are in...

me : thank you....

i went and met a doctor... i explained and he told me

which ward they were in..

me : may i see them please...

doc : unfortunately you cant... our doctors are busy helping them stop the blood and stitching and doing tests...

me : ****sigh**** owk doc...

doc : am sorry sir...

i held my head and went to sit at reception....

after a while my phone rang again.. mind you its very late at night.. its around 8pm now.. i checked the caller id and it was nonhlanhla...

me : nhlanhla??

her : hay uncle..

me : how are you??

her : not good.. have you heard from mom and dad today?

me :

her : they havent come home yet and this is unlike

them... we think.....

me : they in hospital nonhlanhla....

her :.....(heavy breathing in the background)...

me : nonhlanhla??

her : what?? (voice breaking)...

me : they received an accident...

her : no...no...

i heard mbali crying in the background.. then nonhlanhla followed....

her : how??

me : i dont know... but dont worry.. i am in the hospital right now owk... they will be fine...

mbali : you promise??

me : i cant promise anything baby... but i just know that they will be fine.. God is a great God...

they stayed silent... just breathing and sniffing...

me : go to sleep owk.. all will be owk...

them : yes uncle...

i hung up and sat down dropping my head in my hands...

"GOD LET THEM LIVE, PLEASE"

[12/14, 07:47] Zozaness: 97

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

nonhlanhla

my alarm woke me up.. i got up and found myself sleeping in mbalis bed.. my eyes felt heavy from crying... i dragged myself out of bed and went to

look myself in the mirror... my eyes looked swollen and dark..

i washed my face and went to wake mbali up.. she didnt take time.. she got up and looked at me... she developed tears...

i went to sit next to her and held her hand...

me : no mbali... dont do this, please...

her : they....they...

me : mbali please.... lets just freshen up and go to school owk...

she nodded...

me : you stronger then this mbali.. i know you are.. do this for them owk.. you do know that they would want us to go to school and focus on exams right??

she nodded...

me : uncle bongani is there for them.. he did say that they will be owk... so dont worry... owk?? now lets go..

she also got of the bed whipping her tears...

we went to shower, lotioned and got dressed...

after we cleaned our room.. when we were done i took my phone to call nompilo.. she deserves to know whats going on...

me : mbali... go down and prepare breakfast, i am going to call nompilo, owk..

she nodded and went out...

i dialed nompilos number...

her : nhlanhla!! hay...

me : hay sisi...

her : you sound so down, what wrong??

me : well, alot is wrong...

her : why?? whats happening?? are you owk??

i tried to not breakdown but my voice was failing me...

me : they.... ma.... acc.....hos...

her : nonhlanhla you not making any sense, whats happening?? whats wrong??

me : mom and dad....

her : what about them??

me : they in hospital...(i covered my mouth so that i dont cry, and breathed in and out)...

her : what?? what happened??

me : they got an accident...

her : what??

me : yah....

her : no no no...

she sounded like she was breaking down...

her : are you and mbali owk??

me : yah we owk.. uncle bongani going to take us to school and fetch us...

her : listen, be strong owk??

she was clearly acting strong, but i could hear that she was holding herself so hard not to cry...

me : its owk to cry sisi, we all know you strong, crying wont make you weak...

her :..... bye nonhlanhla...

me : bye sisi....

i hung up and i dialed uncle bongani...

him : yall done??

me : we about to have breakfast...

him : owk, i am on my way..

me : owk uncle....

i hung up and went down to have breakfast...

i found mbali playing with her food... she had made coffee with toasted bread and russians...

me : playing with food wont make you full..

her : am actually not hungry... i dont know why i even made this food...(she faked a smile)..

me : you made the food becouse your stomache told you that its empty.. now that you thinking to much you ignoring your stomache...

her : woooooow... since when are you a nutritionist??

me : i was born with the qualification... (we laughed

a little)... just eat please...

her : yes mam...

we ate... she didnt really eat her plate full but am just happy becouse she took some bites...

uncle bongani arrived and we left for school...

.

.

.

****nompilo****

i was starying in space, phone in my hand, eyes pouring tears without my permission... i am trying to make sense of what was going on... mom and dad had an accident?? nah.. i must have heard wrong...

what if?? what if?? ohhhh lord, please dont take away my parents as you took my grandma.. please...

i didnt hear siya walk in, i just felt his hand touch my shoulders... i touched his hand and squeezed it... i guess i wanted to know if this was a horrible dream or not...

him : mamas?? why you crying??

i slowly looked at him... i tried speaking but my voice was not participating...

him : mamas you scaring me, whats wrong??

i tried again, but this time only bits of the voice came out....

me :.....ma.....nhlanhla....

him : what about nhlanhla??

me : papas... i need to go back to PE...

him : what?? why??

me : i just got a call from nonhlanhla.... she said.... she said...

him : she said????

me : she said.....

him : yes....

me : mom and dad were involved in an accident....

him : what??

me : they in hospital as we speak...

him ; ohh no... are you owk??

i nodded... he came to hold me tight....

him : what about nonhlanhla and mbali?? how they holding on??

me : thats why i need to go back.. to make sure they focus on their 1st term exams and they are owk...

him ; owk.. we shall leave tommorow morning....

me : no... today...

him : you sure??

me : yes, please..

him ; owk.. let me go talk to my mom and dad...
owk??

i nodded and he left...

i sat there just starring in space crying... i then stood up and started packing...

i packed my babies things and every important thing i might need for my babies... i also packed a few of my things and siyas things...

after a while as i was packing our bags.. siya walked in...

him : ohhhh you already packing? good...

me : yah.. i didnt want to waste time...

him : owk... did you take everything you might need?/

me : yes...

him : owk... my mom and dad said they would bath the kids, so we need to shower...

me : ohhh thanks... i must say your mother loves the kids to much hay... shes always with them...

him ; yah... and they love them too...

me : mabye if my parents feel the presence of their grandkids they might wake up and survive...

him ; i hope so...

i learned on the bed and looked down.. siya came and held my hands forcing me to stand straight...

him ; mamas.. dont worry... they will be owk...

me : what if?? what if?? (broke down...cried...)

him : no... mamas no.... dont cry... they will be owk...
hush mamas hush...

me : what if they get taken like grandma?? what if??

him : shhhhhhhh... why think negative?? those 2
gave birth to 3 awesome, strong kids.. that means
they also as strong as strong can be... they will
make it...

he hugged me and i cried in his arms....

.

.

.

****bongani****

i was in my office... my mind is just over the place at
this moment...

i then received a call...

me : hello..

him : good morning sir... its doc, please come to the

hospital.. its about mr pieterse...

me : what?? whats wrong with him??

him : i can not say much on the phone.. so please come to the hospital...

me : owk.. am on my way at this moment...

i hung up and went out bumping into smangaliso, one of my fond interns..

him : sir...

me : not now smangaliso, i need to go to the hospital...

him ; what happened sir??

me : my twin sister and her partner got an accident....

him : am very sorry sir.. i wish them a speedy recovery..

me : thank you.. so please look after the other interns as i head out... i trust you will do a good job...

i tapped him on his shoulder and left...

after a while i got to the hospital and went to the

doc...

me : so?? whats wrong??

him : huh mr nhlapo... we have developed a problem.. mr pieterse has lost alot of blood and due to that his blood is really low.. and hour by hour we loosing him...

me : what?? cant you help him??

him : we have placed him in the waiting list of people who need blood.. but he is a rare blood type... he is type B-negative and that is very rare to find...

me : so his kids might have his blood type??

him : its not always the case.. but there could be a possibility...

me : owk...

him : how old are the kids??

me : the youngest one is 15, the middle one is 17 and the oldest one is 21....

him ; only the middle one and oldest one can donate...

me : the youngest??

him : underage...

me : mhm... owk.. and the rest of the family??

him : yah, they can test too....

me : owk... will get right on it...

him : i wish we do find a doner, becouse we dont have much time...

me : owk.. will do...

i went out... i sighed and dialled siya's number....

him : hold on let me position my phone...

me : you driving??

him : yep...

me : owk.. i wont be long... you gonna have to come to PE with nompilo...

him : yah.. we already on the way...

me : you on your way to PE??

him : yes.. we heard about what happened to my inlaws...

me : huh... were did you hear it from??

him : nonhlanhla called nompilo...

me : am sorry... i was gonna call but hearting nompilo after she went through so much wouldve been unfair...how is she..

him : shes owk..

me : owk.. see you when you get here..

him : sure grootman..

i hung up and drove back to work...

[12/14, 07:48] Zozaness: continuation

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .

****ayanda****

its lunch time and i miss my Queen... i have not seen her the whole day at school.. and thats becouse i was bunking for the first 5 periods.. hay dont ask me why i bunk owk.. i know what am doing...

i may be this "naughty boy" but when it comes to exams i nail it..

ohhhh were my manners at?? sorry...

my name is Ayanda ndamase and i am 18 years old, and am a xhosa guy... owk i surrender i once failed grade 6... but apart from that i have not failed again...

i live with my mother, father and older sister... My older brother lives in jhb, on campus (UJ)..

so here i am walking around the grounds looking for nonhlanhla.. well i didnt seem to find her so i went to my gents, next to the tuckshop... it was beast, small and michael...

me : beast, uke wambona u nonhlanhla ?? (have you seen nonhlanhla)??

beast : nah bro.. i have never seen her...

me : oh owk... and then??

small : ukhalangani ntwana?? (whats wrong)...??

me : you all bought ikota, kodwa mna ?? (but what about me)??

they laughed...

beast : we thought you will be chilling with your girlfriend...

me : lol.... hai its owk.. i will go buy one....

i went to the tuckshop but the line was hella long... so i went to a girl that was 3rd in the line...

me : ola....

her : hay...

me : can i ask for a favour??

her : sho... you want me to buy you something??

me : haha.. yah..ndixela undi thengele ibunny...
(please buy me a bunny)...

her : owk..

i gave her money...

one of the girls i know but dont know her name
started comenting...

girl : hai ayanda... qala line hao...

me : andimanga iline mna..(am not in a line)...

girl : then what do you want there??

me : am just standing hao.. besides, ndiyathengelwa
mna.. (people buy for me)....

girl : heee.. the one buying for you must go back and
start a line...

me : ohhh wait...

i started asking the girls that were after the girl buying for me, if they mind...

and they all didnt mind...

me : uyabo... (you see)...

just then the girl i sent had finished buying.. so she gave me my change...

me : thank you... heres something to say thank you...

i gave her R5... its all i can give...

she smiled and walked away...

girl : i see the way you looking at her... you want her??

me : hai.. ndithathiwe mna (am taken)....

i said that smiling and leaving.. i heard she said something but i didnt hear properly becouse i was walking away...

i went back to my gents...

micheal : ha ha ha... fast so....

me : i got connections...

small : probably a girl...

i just looked at him and didnt answer... somehow no one believes me when i say that nonhlanhla is my Queen alone... i mean owk i get that i dated nonhlanhla while dating this other girl from another school but i ended that relationship the moment i saw how serious nonhlanhla was.. and since then i have not set an eye to anygirl...

small : so it was a girl??

me ; haibo.. whats wrong with it being a girl??

beast ; vele vele boy.. you settling??

me : yah... gents, i have been telling yall this since....

small : hai mahn.. its hard to believe nje...

me : ndinyanisile (am serious)...

micheal : hai saba nonhlanhla.. the dark chocolate took the multy player out of the game...

me : nje....

beast : hai... i kinda believe you though.. i mean the way you handled u Dimpho was unexpected....

small :i heard he even brought his sister to beat

dimpho up...

micheal : hai.. it was hot....

small : hahahahahahaha...

me : no mahn... its just that when nonhlanhla dumped me i felt like i was going crazy.. bendibila (i was in flames)... i angrily wanted to hit dimpho myself... but i resisted and went home.. my sister saw how angry and furious i was, so she asked me what was going on.. so i told her and we shared the anger... next day i didnt want to come to school... so she forced me to and she insisted on coming with.. i didnt know she was going to hit her.. i thought she just wanted to talk to her or try and talk nonhlanhla into forgiving me...

they looked at me giving me a long silence... then they started looking at each other and clapping their hands... i always knew i had crazy friends, but i just didnt know how crazy they are.... kanti why are they clapping their hands??

me : and nou??

beast : owk we all know you love nonhlanhla.. thats

not a secret because i myself have seen you sulk like a sick person.. but the story you just told us is too extream.. you spicing it nje...

me : yall dont believe me??

micheal : masterpiece look... if you would say that you loved nonhlanhla as your main, we would believe you...

me : huh??

small : like mabye having 3 girlfriends but sticking to nonhlanhla as your main..

me : hell no...

they laughed and jumped like little monkeys..

beast : yaz mf2.. this girl ukdlise ikorobela...(this girl gave you korobela)...

small : no.. begaminanyedwa (only look at me)..

micheal : no... sofaslahlane (till death do us apart)..

we laughed so hard that my stomache hurt...

me : hai mara you guys.. nah.. am divorcing yall...

we continued laughing...

small : so masterpiece, on serious note.. you dating nonhlanhla alone??

me : yah...

micheal : you can be honest with us mahn.. we have your back...

me : am serious... shes my only Queen...

beast : this is not masterpiece.. this is ayanda...

we laughed...

me ; whats the difference kanti??

beast : remember in grade 5?? you were innocent and didnt know much about love.. you were called ayanda.. then in grade 6 we came up with the names mastermind and masterpiece.. but in grade 7 i changed to beast becouse i was the bulkest in the group...

me : so now am back at being innocent??

beast : yah.. i mean you dating one girl.... woooooow.... and see a future with her?? hai...

me : its life guys.. we grow up when we meet our soul mates...

beast : haha.. owk..

small ; yazi am dry... asthenge icholi (lets buy a drink)...

beast : masterpiece will go.. he has connections moss...

we laughed...

micheal ; yah masterpiece go...

me : hai.. let me be...

the bell rang... beast ran to buy the choldrink...

our next class was physics so i was relaxed... i am in class with beast.. micheal is alone and small is also alone...

beast came back...

small : iron brew.... my frave...

it was a kingsley bottle...

we sat under the tree as everyone went to class and

we drank our drink... the topic had changed now.. we were talking about soccer practice...

after a while we saw the principal.. so we stood up and splitted to class..

we got in class and i saw nonhlanhla sitting in my table at the back... she looked sad... she very down...

i didnt even greet my class gents.. i went straight to her...

i got to her.. i pulled a chair and sat next to her...

me : Queen?? whats wrong??

she looked at me..

i saw pain and hurt in her eyes..

me : Queen?

before she could even tell me the teacher walked in and she just looked down and opned her book...

i kept wondering what was bothering her... and to not know was bothering me...

i held her hand under the table and she squeezed mine...

she then wrote something on a piece of paper... and gave it to me..

i read it and smiled.. she wrote "hay.." and drew a heart...

i looked at her.. she looked at me...

mam : nonhlanhla and ayanda?? please concentrate... letlajola kante...(you will date outside)...

me : sorry mam...

mam : and nonhlanhla.. if i was you i would reconsider dating ayanda... a good girl like you deserves better, not some naughty corruptive boy..

i wanted to say something but nonhlanhla squeezed my hand again and shook her head... so i kept quite and just looked at the teacher...

akga shes just jelouse that she doesnt have a handsome guy to hold her hand and look into her eyes... nx...

after school i saw nonhlanhla walking out of the design class.. i quickly went to her...

me : Queen, whats going on??

her : my parents are in hospital...

me : what? are they owk??

her : they got an accident...

me : ohh my word.. am so sorry.. i didnt know... so thats why you were so down..

her : yah...

me : come here..

i hugged her and she hugged me tightly... then her lil sister came also looking sad...

me : hay lil one... am sorry owk... mom and dad will be owk though.. i know that...

mbali : thanks ayanda...

i hugged her too..

nonhlanhla : we better get going... my uncle is probably here...

me : owk...

i watched them go.. then i went to soccer practice...

[12/14, 07:49] Zozaness: 98

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

**** march ****

****bongani****

mbali : i dont understand why i was not allowed to test...

me : we told you mbali, you underage... you

supposed to be 16 years to be able to donate blood....

mbali : but to test nje... just to know if am a match or not...

me : even if you were a match, you still wouldnt be able to donate...

mbali : but....

nompilo : nothing you say might change... anyway there must be a match between us..

me : lets hope so...

nonhlanhla : am tired... am gonna sleep now..

she left and mbali followed saying no word...

nompilo : me too..

nompilo reached for the pram and pushed it to her parents room...

nompilo : you coming??

siya : no, i rather just keep myself busy and go meet the interns..

nompilo : oh owk... please come back..

siya : lol... will do mamas..

he kissed her and i just looked away...

nompilo : owk... bye uncle bongani...

me : bye nompilo...

she left...

me : i cant stand this.. too much jelousy... how did we get here again??

him : haha.. what happened to Naledi?? i thought you preparing for your wedding...

me : well she wasnt ready..

him : did she say that??

me : she didnt have to.. her actions were just clear nje....

him : eash, hade grootman (sorry bigman)...

me : its life mahn...

him : so yall separated??

me : yep... we nomore...

him : eash too bad... but dont worry you will find

someone...

me : i dont think so.. i think its really late...

him : nah, its not mahn...

me : lets go...

him : sure...

we got out and went i my car...

him : can i drive??

me : sure..

i threw the keys to him...

we got in and he drove...

him : you know.. its really hard to believe that you have never went to school... its really unbelievable...

me : hai.. dont go around saying that owk..

we laughed....

him : but seriously though.. like not even crech??

me : mxm... blame it on your dad...

him : so vele vele.. if there were no maids at my dads

palace, then you would still be a virgin??

me : am not gonna answer that...

him ; hahahaha... owk.. hai i rest my case...

me : hahahah.. rest it vele...

we laughed...

me : but hai... am doing a great job at your company for someone who never went to school...

we laughed...

him : am about to see that myself...

we laughed...

we got to the company and he parked..

we walked in....

receptionist : morning gentlemen.... welcome back mr xulu..

siya : goodmorning thando.. but am not back...

she smiled...

receptionist : ohhh...

we continued walking to my office (it used to be his office)....

on the way we bumped into smangaliso and pele....

smanga : goodmorning gentlemen... mr xulu??

siya looked at me shocked but smiling...

siya : yes.. in the flesh...

smanga : Ohhhh My..... am sorry... its just that i looked up to you as a motor business man...

siya : really??

smanga : yes.. i always wanted to be like you..

siya : well.. i appreciate...

smanga : i cant believe this.. am standing next to thee mr xulu?

siya : and working in his company...

smanga : what??? really?? this....this is your company??

siya : yes...

smanga : woow...

siya : may i ask.. how did you???

smanga : google... in grade 10 i would search for big car companies already looking for funding for my tuition fees... after looking for a long time, i came across your company name.. it was labeled "top car company in africa" so i started getting myself familiar with it... i kept looking into your life on social media and checking your company till grade 12.. since i got funding from my moms workers,i stoped and focused on school.. after that i have been checking on your life on social media but not too much.. so why did you change the company name??

siya : long story short.. i wanted to mark my surname.. thats why its xulu's car company..

smanga : am amazed...

siya : thank you...

smanga : no.. thank you sir...

we then walked to the office...

he say down.. i poured some wiskey in a class and i also sat down..

him : so... was that one of the intern??

me : yep...very hard working young man..

him : he looks determined aswell.. we might go along way with him.. i mean a young mahn who looks up to me?? thats GOLD....

me : hai suka.. stop boasting..

him : hahahaha... owk got me...

me : owk so ready to meet the rest of the interns??

him : firstly please get me their files.. i want to familiarise myself with them...

me : sho...

i took a phone and dialed the receptionist..

her : goodmorning again mr nhlapo, how may i help you??

me : the interns files please..

her : coming right up..

me : thank you...

after a while she knocked..

me ; come in..

her : here sir...

me : thank you so much...

she left and i gave the files to siya..

we made conversation as he looked through their files...

.

.

.

mbali

i was in my room laying on the bed... its still the afternoon... nonhlanhla was sleeping, i couldnt sleep...

i then dialed smanga.. he answered in the 3rd ring...

him : hay babe...

me : hay (low voice)...

him : you dont sound well, you owk??

me : not really..

him : whats wrong??

me : my parents.. they got an accident..

him : oh no... am very sorry.. are you owk??

me : yes, i will live...

him : the world must be a cruel place.. i mean my bosses sister and his man also got an accident.. whats wrong with our roads though?? jho..

me : yah.. to make it worse.. my dad ran out of blood, so everyone went to test to see whats their blood type except for me.. i feel so useless..

him : dont worry... am sure they will find a match..

me : no smanga.. hes type B negetive... thats rare to find..

him : and your mom??

me : we dont know..

him : then dont worry.. mabye one of yall are a match.. dont stress about it...

me : i pray and hope so becouse if non is a match am testing.. i dont care who says what...

him : you underage remember??

me : i will convince them.. the doctors work is to save their patience.. am sure if am a match they wont let my dad die just becouse am underage...

him ; hai.. you are so stubborn mbali....

me : mxm...

him : listen i have to return to work now.. again am very sorry about your parents owk.?

me : thank you...

him : stay strong.. pray for them.. i will also do that..

me : thanks..

him : owk... i love you owk??

me : i love you too...

he hung up...

i went to his pics.. i saved some pics of his on his facebook..

i clicked on one were he shot close face and kissed it and hugged my phone closing my eyes....

.
. .
. .

bongani

siya was almost done looking at the papers then he got to one and smiled, also laughing a little...

me : and then?? whats the joke??

him : remember mama lindo...

me : who??

him ; her name was lindokuhle.. one of dads oldest maids..

me : ohh yah, i remember her...

him : that lady i will never forget her.. she used to be my favourit maid in the house.. she would play with me, take me to parks and all that... my dad was very fond of her..

me : yah..she was a very kind, happy soul...

him : yah she was.. i wonder why she left...

me : i might know...

him : what happened??

me : well you do know i used to sleep with the maids right??

him ; so you slept with her??

me : yah.. but i never had feelings for anyone.. it was just hit and pass.. you know..

him : ohhhh so she caught feelings??

me : yes.. and one time she caught me with another maid.. she was so angry that she didnt even speak to me for 2 weeks.. after that i heard shes sick and then boom.. she has quite her job and left...

him ; shame.... how many maids were you banging kanti??

me : 3... including her... if i went for more, the whole palace would fight moss...

him : so 3 maids since you were 18..

me : yah... well some left and i added some.. but my limit was 3..

him ; lol... hai yah neh.. what a memory...

me : what made you remember her??

him : smangaliso's mother is lindokuhle mnguni...

me : what??

him : yah.. so the name just reminded me of her...

me : her name is lindokuhle mnguni?? you sure??

him : yes... why you looking all shocked...

me : nothing..

lindokuhle mnguni?? can it happen that a persons name and surname be the same??? could it be just a coincident??

him : hallo.. earth back to you.... whats wrong??

me : nothing...

him : owk... am done with the reading.. lead me to the interns...

me : sure..

i took him to them

[12/14, 07:50] Zozaness: 99

- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .

****days later****

*****bongani*****

this "lindokuhle" situation has been bothering me for days now... i toss and turn everynight, i cant stop thinking about it.. even when i see smangaliso here at work, i just zone out and think about lindokuhle...

the thing that got me thinking too much about this is his age....

i mean he is 21.. and his birthmonth is April....

now counting nine months back, means he was made around july.. and our last incounter happened around 22 years ago in july/ august around that time...

and when i remember carefully, 3 weeks after our last intercourse, we were told she is sick and had quite work... well i couldnt ask her anything becouse she was still angry at me for sleeping with someone else (she cought me with another maid)...

unless.. mabye if smangaliso is a premature then mabye he is not my son... or mabye lindokuhle slept with another guared to spike me but got marked and had to leave so that she doesnt feel embarrassed.. i dont know...

but the only way to know more info about this is if i ask smangaliso...

i snaped out becouse someone was knocking.. i looked and it was smangaliso... my door is a class door... so no silly business here...

i signaled for him to come in..

him : goodafternoon sir, sorry to disturb...

me : no problem smanga, take a seat..

he sat down....

him : huh sir, i know i have just started and it would be a little unfair to ask you this but...

me : what is it?? a raise??

him : no, no sir...

me : then what is it?? a leave??

him : sort of.. but not a leave sir.. just 3 days off...

me : 3 days off?? why?

him : well, you see my woman is not emotionally well... her parenst just got an accident

me : ohhh really?? am so sorry... seems like accidents are becoming common hay...

him : true.. i also said that to her given that i know your sister and her man also had an accident...

me : yah.. sad.. could your womans parents be the couple that bumped into my sister and her man???

him : was it a couple that bumped into them??

me : yes.. they also in the hospital...

him : eash....bad..

me : yah.. it bumped their car and drove straight in a wall leaving my sisters car spining into the poll...

him ; tjho... am so sorry.. hope they recover soon..

me : you two... wish your inlaws recover...

him ; wow.. such a coincident... thats a wow..

me : yes it is.. smanga, tell me.. where are you from again??

him ; am from johannesburg.. i was born and grew up there...

me : you never visit family??

him : nop, my mother never talks about her family.. she says they abondoned her after finding out that she is pragnant with me and didnt want to tell them who the father is...

me : so your mom doesnt know your father??

him : she does...

me : ohhh so, you were living with him aswell??

him : no.. my mom says my fathers name is themba khumalo.... but by looks of things, i just think my mom lied to me just so i could stop looking for my dad...

me : so what you saying is that, you dont know your father nor his name??

him : yep... but am over that now.. i mean he didnt want nothing to do with me, he didnt care about me, he even abandoned my mom after knowing she is pragnant.. so i dont blame her.. he can just jump to hell..

me : (cleared throat).. how could you make such a conclusion?? i mean what if he never knew about you??

him : well, i dont think my mom would lie to me.. she has no reason to..

me : ohhh.. are you a premature??

him ; no.. am not.. why??

me : just asking... you know what they say right..
premature babies are the most crazy, wise souls to
live/work with....

him : ohh.. hahah.. no, unfortunately not...

me : ohhhh huh owk...

him : so sir?? about the 3 day off?

me ; ohh, yah.. owk.. its owk.. just make sure you
sign the papers at the reception...

him : thank you so much sir... thank you...

this young man is so humble.. reminds me alot of
my young self.. look at him.. at this age he has
learned to take care of his woman.. whoever that
lady is, she has scored herself GOLD.. i hope she is
also GOLD....

i went back to his file...

owk.. lets try his mothers numbers.. mabye by
chance this might be the wrong lindokuhle and i
would be stressing mahala...

i dialed her number and she answered...

her : halo...

me : saubona lindokuhle... (hay lindokuhle)

her : saubona...(hay).. who am i speaking to??

me : bongani..

her : bongani??

me : yes... bongani mnguni....

her :

me : lindo??

her : where did you get my number??

me : so you remember me??

her : ngithe, witholephi i number yam...(i said, were did you get my number)??

me : smanga...

her : what??

me : small world hay.. smanga works for siyabonga's company..

her :

me : i see you have run out of words... so is smangaliso my son??

her : what.. hai, dont get a hang of it...

me : is he??

her :

me : am waiting??

her : no, hes not... didnt he tell you who hes father is??

me : no.. so you tell me...

her : i dont have to.. why dont you go and focus on your life and leave me alone.. stop pretending like you care...

me : stop pretending like i care??

her : you played me.. toyed with me... pretended like you loved me, but all you ever wanted was to sleep with me..

me : lindo i never said anything about love...

her : bye bongani...

me : lindo w.....

she hung up...

i dialed her number again, it ran unanswered..

i placed the phone down and sat back....

i took a deep breath.....

after a while i heard another another knock.. i
looked up and it was siya...

i signaled for him to walk in...

him : hao grootman..

me : yah siya...

him : you look very.....

me : tired?? yah...

him : i was gonna say messed up... but owk...

me : mxm... whatever son... so what you doing here??

him : am here to see to the business as you go to
the hospital.. remember yall tests are coming out
today...

me ; ohh i forgot...

him : didnt they send you a message??

me : huh, yah they did.. this morning... but it skiped my mind,...

him ; is work stressing you.... i mean i could come help you and weigh the weight off...

me : no its not work... its lindo...

him : what about her?? you miss her??

me : no... smangaliso's mother is the lindo from your dads palace...

him : what?? nah... cant be...

me : i called her.. its her...

him : wow, small world...

me ; yah... and smanga could be my son...

him : what??

me : yah... hes 21... and was born in April.. that means he was made around july/august...

him : so??

me : around 22 years ago in july/august, that was the last time we became intimit.. 3 weeks later she quite

her job.. and word was she was also sick...

him : so grootman.. you have a son you never knew nothing about??

me : yep, you know whats worse?? he was told that hes father is themba khumalo.. and that he abandoned them and all that...

him : what if thats true... i mean mabye you reading too much into it...

me : it would only make sense if mabye she slept with one of the guards around the same time she was sleeping with me... but there was no themba khumalo at your dads palace...

him : what if she slept with someone the day or week she went to the new place??

me : we never know...

him ; theres only one way to get to the bottom of this...

me : what??

him : DNA test...

i looked at him...

him : thats the only way.. but question is, how??

i sighed and looked at my watch..

me : let me go before i become late.. kevin needs us...

him : great... pass by the house first to fetch the kids...

me : konje you dont like hospitals neh.. now it makes sense why you here.. you running away..

him ; guilty...

we laughed...

me : see you when i get back..

him ; sure grootman.....

i left....

[12/14, 07:51] Zozaness: continuation

.
. .
.

.
. .
. .
. .
. .
. .

****mbali****

him : hay beautiful, i have been meaning to call...
how are you??

me : am owk.. i am taking it one day at the time..

him : keep staying strong.. they will be fine...

me : i hope so... mhm smanga??

him : yes babe...

me : are you at work??

him : nop, i kinda wanted to call to tell you that i have
taken a 3 day off at work.. so if you want me to
accompany you at the hospital or if you want a
shoulder to cry on then i can be free...

me : ohhh so you home now??

him : yes.. want me to accompany you at the hospital??

me : no.. today my family is going to check their blood tests to see if they are a match or not.. i dont want to hear anymore bad news so i was thinking maybe i could be with you instead..

him ; huh!! wont your family be worried on your whereabouts??

me : nah.. plus i wont be gone for long... and i miss you.. with nhlanhla and nompilo worried and mom and dad not here, you the only person that still makes me laugh and forget reality for a little..

him ; yah.. this connection between us is so strong, you would swear we were siblings..

me : hahahahahaha, be careful what you wish for...

him : that was not a wish.... imagin...

i laughed...

me : stop it smanga... hahaha..

him : it melts my heart when you laugh.. atleast am certain that you owk..

me : it melts your heart?? then shouldnt you be dead by now??

him : hahahah.. uyaphapha yaz.... (you forward)

me : unghanda nginjalo... (you love me like that)..

him : true... my forward lady...

me : owk my backward man...

him ; woooooooooow... you serious...

i laughed...

me : owk.. owk.. stop, serious.. stop..

him ; you started....

me : haha.. owk.. i stopped.. now you stop..

him : owk...

me : so, are you keen on spending just few minutes with me?

him : sure... i will get you at the park then..

me : in 30 minutes..

him ; on it...

me : owk... see you...

him ; see you.. and i love you.. dont ever forget that..

me : i love you too.. always remember that...

him : always will...

me : owk bye..

him : bye...

he hung up and i smiled alone.. i then went to grab a jacket and left.. i locked the doors and gates and walked to the park...

after a while i got to the park.. this time i was there first.. but minutes later he arrived..

me : guess who arrived first?? meeeeeee

him : mxm.. you were just lucky this time...

me : lol.... sore loser....

him : was it a race??

me : mxm..

he came to hug me...

him : i see you looking amazing...

me : thanks..

him : am glad you.....

me : please dont talk about it.. i dont want to get emotional...

him : owk.. lets go..

we went to the stop and got a taxi.. then got to the destination and went to his house..

we walked in and his room mate was home...

smanga : ntwana..

sphe : sho sho you back?

smanga : yah...

i was rather uncomfortable and scared to look his roommate's eyes because the last time i saw him was the day i lied and said my name was nonhlanhla...

smanga : babe, this is my roommate sphelele, bro this is my lady mbali...

sphe : the original one??

smanga : lol... yah.. the original one...

me : halo... am here..

they laughed...

sphe : am sorry.. you know i knew from the begining
you very forward..

me : well am not...

smanga looked at me acting surprised...

sphe : smanga's reaction says a lot...

we laughed...

smanga : owk.. enough.. babe, wanna play games??

me : what comes??

sphe : girls dont play games bro.. they rather just sit
and talk or stroll outside or go do outside activities
or watch movies...

me : true..

smanga : jho... so what do you wanna do?? watch
movies??

me : thats owk..

sphe : owk, can i please just play this and i will give yall space...

me : owk.

smanga : we will chill in my room for time being then..

sphe : owk..

we went into his room and the scene of when i was last in here flashed back.. i smiled and looked down.. he sat on his bed and signaled for me to also sit...

i sat next to him and we talked...

after a while the conversation got to comfortable and amazing that we ended up looking at each others eyes...

i leaned in and we kissed... as things heated..he tried backing out but i pulled him in... i wont lie i missed him.. and i was also trying to forget about this whole accident situation...

me : condom??

him : yah..

he reached for it and gave it to me to open as he got on me...

.

.

.

bongani

we got to the hospital and went to the doctor...

doc : good afternoon everyone.. this way..

we greeted and followed the doctor.. we got to his office...

me : so doctor, was anyone a match??

doc : unfortunately no...

us : what??

nompilo : not even 1??

doc : no..

nonhlanhla : how?? are we not his kids??

doc : it is possible for the kids not to have a matching blood type..

me : can you tell us our bloodtypes..

doc : here are your results, you can look at it yourself..

he gave us our results..

me : it says am blood type O+

nompilo : mine is B+

nonhlanhla : yah me too B+

me : so what bloodtype can donate to him??

doc : bloodtype O- or B-

me : what about mrs nhlapo?? how is she doing??

doc : shes progressing day by day but still unconscious.. but she will be owk..

me : atleast some goodnews...

doc : am really sorry.. is there no one else in the family??

me : no.. unless we get in touch with his family..

doc : then do that.. as soon as possible.. because we dont have time..

me : will do doc..

we got out and went to see sbongile...

.

.

.

mbali

we were laying in bed... facing up...

me : i wonder if anyone was a match..

him : dont worry too much, mabye someone is donating as we speak...

me : i hope so..

my phone rang, i checked it was nonhlanhla..

i answered..

me : nhlanhla??

her : were are you??

me : at smanga's house.. i wanted to get off some steam before i explode...

her : well, we at home and nompilo is worried sick.. phela she doesnt know that you seeing someone...

me : please keep it that way.. am on my way..

her : owk, i will say you went to a friend to cool off..

me : thanks..

her : owk..

i hung up and looked at smanga...

me : i have to go.. nonhlanhla just told me that nompilo is looking for me...

him : whos that??

me : our eldest sister..

him : ohhh owk...

i got up and got dressed...

him : i will drive you owk..

me : owk..

he got dressed and went to ask the car from sphe..

we then got in and drove.. i didnt have time to still walk so i just asked him to drop me off few feet away from home..

[12/14, 07:52] Zoaness: The villagegirl an the playboy: arranged marriage

100

- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .

** 4 weeks later **

** nompilo**

its been a tough year.. i mean we didnt even enjoy my kids 2nd birthday but hay.. atleast we had dinner as a family...

so good news... my mom woke up about 2 weeks ago.. we havnt told her about dad yet.. we just told her that dad is owk..

ohh and siya voluteered to test aswell.. we not putting our hopes high but we just wish my dad finds a donor....

i was in my parents room (i sleep there with my kids... siya refused to sleep here...he said he doesnt want to disrespect my parents so he sleeps at uncle bonganis house and comes to us in the morning or afternoon)...

i heard a knock..

me : its open..

it opened and siya walked in with bunch of flowers hiding his face..

me : i see you siya.. i see you...

he laughed...

him : goodmorning mamas...

me : ncoooooo, are those for me??

him : unfortunatly not.. these are for my baby sihle..
am new mamas...

me : ha!! sihle, i feel betrayed.. (sihle just looked at
us and laughed putting her small hands on her
mouth...

him : tell mommy, sorry but life goes on..

she tried saying it but she was just mumbling nje...

siya took out one rose and gave it to sihle..

she took the rose and hugged it, then went to hug
and kiss siya...

i pretended to be sad.. i folded my arms and
continued blinking my eyes trying to be a cute
puppy...

him : sihle.. look mommy is sad...

she looked at me and her smile faded then she
pointed at me mumbling something looking at siya...

him : shes sad??

she nodded..

him : really??

she nodded again and mumbled something....

him : should daddy give her these to cheer her up??

her : this.....

she raised her rose...

him : yes?

her : yes....

him : owk...

he then looked at me and bowed as though i was a Queen giving me the bunch of roses...

him : here you go your highness..

i wanted to smile but i pulled my ignorant self and ignored him...

she shook me and pointed at the flowers..

her : ta....

me : should i??

she nodded..

i then smiled and took the roses...

me : thank you...

him : phew, i almost got cramp bowing like that for long...

me : yes because you a grandpa..

him : am what??

me : grandpa...

he came to tickle me.. sihle tried helping to get siya off me but siya tickled her too...

you must be wondering were the boys are..

well in this house.. lihle is mbalis husband, kuhle is nonhlanhlas husband and mina, am stuck with sihle... but when siya is here.. she is sihles wife.. mina?? dololo...

so i gave sihle her laptop toy to play with...

me : siya...

him : mamas...

me : so.. what time you going to the hospital for the results today??

him : the doctor said around 2pm..

me : can i accompany you??

him : you dont have to, plus after that am going to the office.. besides the kids need you..

me : i guess.. plus my siblings also need me..

him : yah.. true...

me : please may i ask for a favour??

him : anything...

me : please check on my mom for us..

him : arnt yall going to the hospital to check on her??

me : we might, we might not..

him : oh owk.. will do..

me : thanks..

him : cool.. let me go make breakfast for yall..

me : ohhh you such an angel...

him : am always an angel...

we laughed...

he tried leaving but sihle called out to him..

her : dada... dada...dada...

him : ohhh, want to come with daddy??

she nodded while opening her hands for him to pick him up on the bed...

siya picked her up and put her on the floor then held her hand and went..

when she got to the door she waved goodbye and i waved goodbye back and she left...

see?? i told yall that on days like this i become alone....

i then got up and tidied the room.....

.

.

.

hours later

siya

i drove to hospital with bongani and we went to the doctors office....

me : doc.. am here..

he smiled...

doc : great.. i have good news and some bad news..

i looked at bongani and looked back at the doctor...

bongani : can we have the bad news first??

doc : mr xulu, you are going to have to go on a diet.. just for health issues...

me : why??

doc : when you want to donate blood we need to make sure you healthy and in good condition..

me : wait!! so am a match??

doc : yes... i must say you a very lucky blood type to people bcouse you can donate to all blood types.. you are type O- but unlucky you can only receive

blood from type O- only...

me : am a blood blesser??

doc : sort of..

we laughed..

doc ; so you can just fill up this form and sign here as aproval..

me : owk..

i filled in and sighned....

doc : please come back tommorow for the follow up...

me : will do..

we went out...

me : huh, grootman, let me go check on my mother in law..

him : i will go with you.. i kinda miss her too..

we went to her and got in..

me : hay mother in law...

her : hay son.. unjan?? (how are you)??

me : awesome you?

her : am pulling strong... one day at the time...

bongani : i am happy that you have come back.. now we waiting for you to come home..

her : hahah.. i am.. hows kevin??

we looked at each other..

bongani : doing owk.. he will be fine..

her : cant wait to see him...

me : yah.. am sure he also longs to see you..

her : do you come from him??

we looked at eachother with bongani..

me : huh!!

bongani's phone rang.. he excused himself and went to answer the call.. then later came back..

bongani : am sorry, business call, i got to go..

me : no problem.. see you at the company..

bongani : am taking the car...

me : sure, i will uber back..

bongani : owk.. stay well sis...

her : will do.. go well..

he held her hand and left...

her : siya, be honest with me, how is kevin??

me : he is owk...

her : i can tell you not telling me something.. please talk to me..

me : owk.. but dont panic...

her : what is it??

me : kevin lost alot of blood.. so without a blood donor we might lose him...

her : no!!

me : dont worry... we found a match..

her : who??

me : dont worry.. but we found a donor.. so kevin will live..

her : did everyone do the test??

me : yes..

her : even mbali??

me : no..

her : ohhh thank god.. i was starting to think the secret might get out...

me : sbongile untill when are you planning on keeping this secret??

her : until death.. it wont heart anyone..

me : what if mbalis father comes back for her??

her : he wouldnt.. he made it clear that he wants nothing to do with her..

me : people grow.. the truth will still unfold...

her : mbali will always be kevins daughter..

me : well, if you ready to fight this secret till death then.. suite yourself.. but dont say i didnt warn me...

her : i have to.. mbali is old now.. and if she figures out that kevin is not her father, she is going to break in pieces...

voice : WHAT???

[12/14, 07:53] Zozaness: continuation

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

****siya****

i looked at the door.. and there stood mbali,

nonhlanhla and nompilo with each one holding the kids....

mbali put lihle down and came towards us..

mbali : what did you say ma??

i looked down, avoiding eye contact...

sbongile : mbali i.....

mbali : you what ma?? you are sorry?? huh??

sbongile : mbali....

mbali : when were you going to tell me??

sbongile :.....

mbali : (screams in tears) when ma!!

me : mbali, please calm down...

mbali : calm down?? calm down... uncle siya you knew??

me :.....

mbali : (looks at nompilo) did you also know??

nompilo ; no nana.. i didnt.. am also in shock...

mbali : (looked at siya) did they know??

i shook my head...

mbali : (started crying)... does he know? my so called dad, does he know??

sbongile : yes... he does...

mbali looked down and cried painfully.. i tried comforting her by trying to give her a hug....

mbali : DONT TOUCH ME.... dont be here pretending to care... because if you did, you wouldve told me the minute you knew about this...as for you ma... i give it to you... but hay.. now i understand why you dumped me to gogo.. it all makes sense now...

she hurried out..and nonhlanhla put kuhle down and ran after her...

i took a big breath and looked at nompilo...

me : mamas.....i.....

mpilo : no junior.. i will deal with you when i get home, for now please leave...

i looked down and looked at sbongile.. i then looked

at nompilo and she moved her eyes away... i walked out....

i was hoping on seeing mbali, but i couldnt see her.. i also wanted to leave but i couldnt.. but then i called an uber and left... i actually went to the company...

.

.

.

nompilo

i stood there waiting for an explanation from mom...

me : is he my dad?? nonhlanhla's dad??

her : yes...

me : can i ask something??

her : owk....

me : who is her father?? were is he??

her : mhm....

we were then interupted by the doctor...

doc : sorry to disturb.... but we need to do some

check ups on mrs nhlapo..

me : oh owk..

doc : thank you...

i looked at my mom and looked away....

me : lihle, kuhle lets go...

as i was about to leave nonhlanhla ran in....

me : nonhlanhla??

her : am sorry.... mpilo... its mbali...

me : what?? whats wrong??

her : she ran away...

mom : what?? couldnt you run after her and stop her??

her : you are in no position to be yelling at me right now.. it is your fault that she ran away...

mom : nonhlanhla i am still your mom and dont you dare speak to me like that..

doc : please relax.....

mpilo : please guys... shouting and screaming at

each other wont bring mbali here... so please,
nonhlanhla call the cops, and i will call uncle
bongani...

nonhlanhla : owk..

nonhlanhla called the cops, i went out and dialed
uncle bongani but his phone went straight to
voicemail... i dialed again and still voicemail...

i didnt want to speak to siya right now but my lil
sisters life could be in danger so i dialed him...

he answered on the first ring..

him : mamas...i am so sorry....

me : junior, now its not the time.. mbali is missing...

him : what??

me : she ran away.. nonhlanhla tried to run after her
but couldnt keep up...

him : shoot... owk, we on our way....

me : thanks...

i hung up...

me : nonhlanhla, what did the police say??

her : akga... they busy telling me about 24 hours and 48 hours.. hai... these people wont help us now...

me : eash...

mom : i just want my baby back please...

me : and she will be back safe.. dont worry mom...

nonhlanhla looked at us and just stormed out...

i looked at mom...

mom : am really sorry..

me : its going to take a while before they cool down, but be patient... and be strong for mbali...

she nodded... i left her there going outside to nonhlanhla...

me : nhlanhla??

her : i dont know how you still forgive someone who took the oppotunity of us having a biological father...

me : dad is our dad.. he is just not mbalis dad...

her : are you sure about that??

me : mom said that...

her : and you believe her??

me : why would she lie??

her : how did she lie about mbalis father??

me :.....

her : exactly.... now look at us now... mbali is missing...

me : we will find her...

tears streamed down her cheeks... after a while siya and bongani came.....

we went to them...

siya : we came as soon as possible..

me : we dont have time.. mbali could be anywere... we have to find her before the sun sets...

bongani : owk... nonhlanhla come with me and siya will go with mpilo...

me : no... i and the kids will go with you and nonhlanhla will go with siya...

siya : mamas??

i looked at him and looked at bongani...

me : lets go.. we running out of time...

we went...

we splited...

we drove all day and night and we still couldnt find her...

we then called nonhlanhla to ask if they found her and still nothing...

i was now scared, and nervous...

we then rode back home.. we arrived then minutes later siya and nonhlanhla arrived...

we got in the house all looking defeated...

nonhlanhla : its late now... were could she be??

me : i dont know sis...

i then went to make food for my babies...

nonhlanhla : wait!! i think i might now were she is....

me : were??

nonhlanhla : let me make the call.. i dont know why i didnt think about this long ago...

nonhlanhla went to make the call...

i then sat down waiting to hear what nonhlanhla was talking about.. meanwhile feeding my kids...

after a while she came back...

nonhlanhla : yall can all relax guys.. shes safe...

us : what??

nonhlanhla : yah.. shes owk...

bongani : were is she??

nonhlanhla : she ran to a friends house, they go schooling together...

siya : do you know were the friend lives??

nonhlanhla : unfortunatly not.... i just know the friend..

me : please ask her were she lives.. just for us to see mbali.. please..

nonhlanhla : i doubt she would tell us...

me : nonhlanhla??

nonhlanhla : owk i will try...

me : great do that.. i will go put the kids in bed..

nonhlanhla : i will order something becouse right now its too late to cook...

bongani : well we will see ourselves out.. see yall in the morning...

siya : i actually would love to speak to mpilo before i leave..

mpilo : not today junior, not today...

he looked down...

siya :..... owk.. grootman, lets go...

they left..

my heart was painful seeing him leave with so much pain. but i still stood firm..

nonhlanhla : sis nompilo.. can i say something??

me : what is it??

her : dont you think you becoming too hard on siya??

me : and how old are you??

her :.....

i left her there going to put my kids in bed

[12/14, 07:54] Zozaness: The villagegirl an the
playboy: arranged marriage

101

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

****3 days later****

**** siya ****

me : mamas, i cant do this anymore... 3 days and you still dont want to talk to me??

her : junior please... i am not in the mood to fight with you...

me : good... am also not in the mood.. thats why i want us to talk... please..

her : owk junior, lets talk...

me : mamas please...

her : no, please, tell me... how long did you know about this??

me :.....

her : you said you wanted to talk.. so whats going on?? cant talk??

me :..... mamas.....

her : how long??

me : since.. the weekend of your grandmothers funeral...

her : what??

me : yah..... i wanted to tell you but i thought.....

her : no junior you didnt think, because if you did you couldve told me...

me :.....

her : i thought we vowed never to keep secrets from each other...

me : it wasnt my place to reveal this secret...

her : that weekend, when i told you that my parents would come back, you said they were though a lot... was this what you were referring to??

me : yes...

her : so... did they perhaps tell you who mbali's father is??

me :..... no...

her : this is no time to lie junior...

me :.....

her : junior!!

me : owk.... they did...

her : who is he??

me : i cant tell you... its a whole lot of story... only your parents can tell you...

her : so you not gonna tell me anything??

me : please, let your parents heal first then we will talk about this... after they are out of hospital, i promise to tell you everything they told me...

her :.....

me : mamas??

her : i have to go bath the kids....

she left me standing there alone and went to her kids, who were in nonhlanhla's room...

i left...

i got in my car and drove to the hospital....

i went to the reception and asked to see the doctor...

i was then directed to him...

me : good morning doc..

doc : good morning mr xulu, you here for.....

me : blood donor for mr pieterseon..

doc : right... this way...

i followed him and we went to his office...

doc : please lay here mr xulu...

i went to lay there.. he asked the nurses to bring him stuff and he prepared the needles and whipes and all that...

doc : this might sting alittle sir..

me : dont worry, am a strong mahn...

doc : hahah.. no one stands strong against a needle...

me : well siya is the first..

doc : haha..

we did the process and as i said it wasnt really bad at all...

after the pulling of blood i felt a little bit weak and

tired.. like i was empty or something...

doc : you know.. its rare to find people with your type of blood.. i mean you can donate to anyone..

me : yah but cant receive from anyone..

doc : yah thats the sad part... we have a whole lot of patients that need blood all over the world.. if only people with type O- dont die and always regain blood.....

me : hahahah... i wish...

we continued with small talks while he was also busy packing my blood and taking it to some place..

after he treated my arm and gave me some meds...

doc : please do rest, i hope you not driving...

me : i am.. but i will be owk..

doc : i wouldnt recomend that as you are quite weak..

me : owk, i will call my brother..

doc : better..

me : thanks doc.. just make sure mr pieteron

makes it..

doc : will do..

he called some nurses and they went... i left...

i dialed bongani.. he answered on the third ring...

him : siyabonga...

me : yebo grootman... listen, i need you to come pick me up..

him : were are you??

me : at the hospital.. am kinda weak so i cant drive..

him : weak?? what happened??

me : i just went to donate my blood to mr pieteron today and am really weak.. i even feel like closing my eyes and sleeping at this moment...

him : hao.. why didnt you tell me, i couldve went with you...

me : well i thought you would be busy....

him : why didnt you tell mpilo??

me : she is still angry at me..

him : siyabonga kodwa... owk am on my way...

me : sure.....

i hung up.. got in my car and layed back...

after a while i heard my phone ring... i picked up...

me : am in my car in the parking lot..

him : ok..

i hung up and still layed back..

after a while i heard a knock on the window.. i opened my eyes and saw it was bongani, i opened for him to sit on the drivers seat..

him : you owk??

me : am good... i just need to rest nje..

him : owk...

me : did you uber here??

him : nop.. i asked smangaliso to drive me here using my car and drive back to the company...

me : oh owk... i must say, you have grown fond of smangaliso.. you going to get disappointed man...

him : no mahn...

he started the car and drove...

him : i called his mother the other day.. and her reaction made me even more sure that hes my son...

me : come on bongani.. i thought you said he told you that his fathers name is themba..

him : you think thats the truth..??

me : i still stick to the dna.. its the only thing that can work...

him : but how will i get his dna sample??

me : well.. you the boss.. tell them that all interns should underdo tests.. call in my doctor and slice him the deal.. tell him to test everyones blood for health issues but take smangalisos test as a dna sample..

him : thats like a whole process..

me : tell you what... once this whole mbalis issue is over, i will help you... i mean smangaliso is here for 4 years right??

him : true... i guess i will have to wait a little.. thanks mahn.. even in your worst you still think of helping me..

me : family matters bro... family matters..

we got to bongani's house.. he helped me out the car and helped me walk in.. he helped me till i got to the guest room... he helped me on the bed and i layed...

him : i will leave some food here before i leave.. for now a little rest will do..

me : owk.. thanks grootman...

him : family matters boy...

i smiled and closed my eyes...

[12/14, 07:55] Zozaness: The villagegirl an the playboy: arranged marriage

102

.

.

.

- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .

****smangaliso****

me : its been 4 days now.. dont you think your family is worried about you??

her :.....

me : babe.. since you have come here you have been crying and sleeping the whole day.. you hardly even eat or talk...

her :.....

me : babe... would you talk to me please...

her :.....

i looked into her eyes as she looked away... she had tears on her eyes....

so 4 days ago, mbali called me and told me to pick her up at some place.. so i asked sphe to drive there.. we got there and picked her up.. we wanted to take her home but she refused.. she said if we take her home she was going to run away for good and we would never meet her again...

so i had no choice but to let her sleep in my place..

when she arrived she went straight to bed and slept.. i tried giving her food but she refused and just cried herself to sleep..

second day i went to buy her some toiletry stuff and 1 underwear just to bath before going home and not to repeat the underwear she wore the prevouse day.. but she said she was not ready to go back... she used the toiletry i bought her to shower that day then wore my t,shirt and went back to sleep.. i made food for her but still she didnt eat.. she just kept a bottle of water on the drawer.. i went to wash her clothing and hang them.. when i came back she still havnt

touched her food...

i begged for her to eat but she refused.. she cried herself to sleep again.. she thought i couldnt see that she was crying becouse she was crying in silence...

third day was the same thing.. but atleast she ate something in the afternoon.. but thats all that she ate that day...

today its still morning and shes doing the same thing..

me : babe please..... please tell me whats bothering you... why dont you want to go home??

her : how would you feel, finding out that someone you thought was your mother is actually not your mother??

me : yho... i dont know.. but am sure gonna get sooo angry.... why?? your mom is not your mom??

her : no.... the man i always knew as my father has turned out to be my stepdad...

me : ohhhhh, huh... am sorry...

her : i just cant believe that all this time they lied to me... i mean why??

me : mabye your biological father was a bad person.. who knows??

her : have you ever thought that mabye your father was also a bad person??

me : it has crossed my mind, thats why i have stopped looking for him.. i mean if he never cared about me then guess what, i dont care about him..

her :..... i guess...

me : so, go home, find out what happened, who he is and why he was kept away from you...

her : i guess so...

me : owk... no go shower, lets eat and let me take you home...

she nodded and went to shower...

i waited till she got done, then i also went to shower after...

she wore what she wore when she came..

we ate.. then after i took money and we took a taxi that dropes us at the park.. then we walked to were she lives.. i couldnt risk her running away again so i risked being seen by her family...

we got to the gate... she called nonhlanhla and she came out to the gate...

nhlanhla : yho mbali...

they hugged...

me : i think its my time to leave...

nhlanhla walked her in and i left....

.

.

.

****mbali****

her : kodwa mbali... what were you thinking??

me :.....

her : we were so worried...

me : smangaliso told you i was safe moss...

her : ****sigh**** i know but i couldnt say that to the family.. so they were very worried to what were you eating, were you bathing and all that...

me : well i was taken care of...

we walked in the house and immediatly my livers just turned black...

my mother was sitting on the couch with mpilo and the kids...

as she saw me, she stood up coming to me... she was walking in pain.. you could tell that she was not fully healed but she was owk...

she stood here infront of me and looked at me...

mom : mbali.....

she cried hugging me but i didnt hug back...

she pulled out and looked at me..

mom : i was so worried my baby...

me :

mom : am really sorry my child.. am seriously sorry....

i just kept quite and made my way to my room....

.

.

.

****nompilo****

mom was discharged today.. she is still in pain and has to rest so that she can heal..

but shes not only physically hurt.. she is also emotionally hurt...

yes am angry at mom for doing this to mbali.. but i also feel moms pain.. its all in her eyes... so now i need to be a mediator and bring peace between the 2 because even nonhlanhla is not giving mom a chance... eversince mom arrived in the house.. nonhlanhla just stays in her room... mom tried talking to her but shes not biting...

as mbali went to her room, nonhlanhla followed her...

mom started crying bitterly as she fell on the floor...

me : mom, please.. dont do this to yourself...

mom : i messed up mpilo.... just when i thought i have reconciled with my babies and this happenes...

me : mabye if you didnt lie then all this drama wouldnt be here...

mom : i know.. but i had to mpilo... mbalis father is nothing but bad knews....

me : i know am way too young to ask this.. and i dont mean to disrespect you.. but did you have mbali while dating dad??

mom looked at me and looked away crying.... i guess she wont answer me so i might aswell leave it....

me : owk am sorry i asked.. please get up.. the floor is cold and you still healing...

he leaned on me and i picked her up...

as i was struggling to pick mom up.. bongani and siya walked in...

they quickly rushed to me to help... we helped mom to her room and layed her on the bed..

bongani : what happened??

me : mbali came back.. she saw mom and didnt speak to her.. mom is upset..

siya didnt say nything.. he just went to sit down in the living room..

i noticed that siya was also kinda off today...

me : uncle bongani?? whats wrong with siya??

him : he is still weak from donoting blood yesterday...

me : he went??

him : yes...

me : ohhh..

we made our way to the living room and siya was playing with the kids.. they looked quite cute...

me : uncle bongani, could you give me few minutes with siya??

him : sure.. i will be in the kitchen making food..

me : thanks...

uncle bongani left and i went to siya..

me : you didnt say you were going to donate...

him : i thought mabye you were busy... or still angry at me...

me : ****sigh**** i still think you shouldve told me as your wife what was going on...

him : they told me this in confidence and i promised that i wouldnt say anything until they are ready to tell yall.. so was i supposed to brake that promise??

me :

we stayed silence for about 5 minutes...

him : mamas.. i am sorry.. i never meant to hurt anyone.. i just thought your parents would tell yall... besides its not my place to say anything...

me : i know.... am also sorry... i was just angry....

him : so we cool??

me : yah we cool...

we hugged while still seating.. then he looked at me...

him : thank you...

me ; no... thank you...

he smiled and i smiled back...

uncle bongani brought the babies food and placed it down... they took their bowls and started eating... all i know is they are about to make a mess because they are not still, they eat and move around,....

me : heeee uncle bongani.. be prepared to clean afterwards...

bongani : eash konje these solders of mine...

we laughed...

he brought our food... and siyas plate was full of greens...

hai, you couldve heard siya complain...

siya : hai hai hai hai hai... grootman.. hai hai hai...

he sat up staright...

bongani took food to nonhlanhla and mbali aswell...

we thought we should give them space to clear their heads...

then he came back...

siya : grootman...

bongani : yebo siya...

siya : whos plate is this??

bongani : yours...

siya : mine?? hai hai hai... theres a mistake here..
nyeke (never)...

bongani : remember you said the doctor said you
need to eat healthy so that you can regain your
strenth...

siya : hai.. grootman.. dont tell me of the doctor.. do
you think even the doctors eat this... badli papa ne
nyama (they eat pap and meat)...

bongani : hhahahaha.. and how would you know??

siya : tell me one doctor you know that eats greens??

bongani : they are alot...

siya : so show me one...

bongani : the doctor that treated you...

siya : did you see him??

bongani : uyambona nje (you can see him nje)...

siya : dude.. am as bulk as him.. so whats the difference?

bongani : will i ever win this argument??

me : nop.. its better to just dish him what we all having...

siya : well said mamas.. so grootman.. do whats needs to be done please..

we all laughed... hai here i have one hell of a drama king...

atleast we had a moment of laughter in this difficult situation...hope mom heals and my siblings forgive....

[12/14, 07:56] Zozaness: The villagegirl an the playboy: arranged marriage

103

.

.

.

- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .

****weeks later****

****nompilo****

everything has calmed down.. things look ok now... mbali has warmed up to mom, even though they not like before but atleast shes trying.. nonhlanhla has also forgiven mom...

dad woke up.. he is not ready to be discharged but he is progressing...

so we went to see him yesterday and he seemed ok.. i am glad all is coming together.. i just hope theres no more secrets, except there is a big question that most of us especially mbali would like

to know the answer to... "who is mbalis father??"

lets hope the answer wont have the repeatition of what happened...

so today mbali and nonhlanhla are going to school, mom went to see dad in hospital... and mina am staying with siya and the kids..am sure they miss crech...

uncle bongani was at work...

i got up and started cleaning.....

it was rather difficult cleaning with lihle and kuhle running around and sihle also messing around and grabbing me..

but i managed to clean vele... siya made breakfast, while playing with lihle and kuhle....

he is rather rough with them.. he plays so rough yaz.. and they like it.. even sihle likes playing rough...

he would pick them up and throw them on the couch.. or pick them up and spins with them...

we then sat down having breakfast..

we ate and after i cleaned the mess they made and siya went to bath them.. i also helped....

after we sat down...

me : am very tired yaz...

him : me 2...

me : you know.. i have never said thank you about what you did for us...

him ; what you talking about??

me : you donating blood to my father... i really appreciate that...

him : woow.. it took you weeks to say thank you??

me : no... its.....

him : its owk relax, am just playing...

me : ohhh... but seriously thank you...

him : anything for my family...

i smiled...

i lay my head on his shoulder and looked as my babies play... he kissed my head and brushed my

hair...

.

.

.

mbali

i was in the LO class when chantel came to me..

her : tione....

me : wow.. you even call me by my second name??

kunzima (its hard)...

her : hahah.. i like that name...

so chantel is my classmate.. well she is also a friend
i chill with most of the time but shes not a best
friend.... she is coloured.. she understands a little
zulu but not alot...

me : so, whatsup??

her : so this friday, we having a chillas at the park...

me : the freedom park??

her : yes.. we will be just chilling afterschool having

drinks...

me : well i do need some distractions right now so yah.. count me in...

her : yahhhhhh... i knew i would count on you...

me : so, how much we gathering together??

her : R50...

me : owk.. i guess i have 2 days to gather that... its owk...

her : sho....

she then went to talk to others...

the teacher came and we went to our seats and sat down...

.

.

.

****lebo****

mom : yaz lebohang.. this thing of proving a point is not going to be good...

me : ma, akere utlwile hure mme wa smanga ure rebatla chelete fela kaobane smanga usathotse musebetse..(ma, you heard that smanga's mom said we just want money since smanga got a job)...

mom : you also stupid.. why didnt you tell smanga about the baby from the moment you got pragnant??

me :

mom : it was gonna be better if smanga rejected you and the baby then you not telling him as all.. what will you do if he finds out and comes to fight you for the child..??

me : he wouldnt...

mom : he is working now.. he is financially stable... he is old.. he could fight for sole custody...

me : no.. he wouldnt...

mom : really.... lets wait till he finds out that he has a daughter that is months old and he was never told a thing about her...

me :

mom : lebo ngwanaka (lebo my child)... what you

doing is selfish.. i get that you dont want his money and want to prove that you dont need him but atleast tell him...

me :

mom : do it for the child.. please...

me : owk ma...

mom : am serouse.....

me : yes ma!! i will....

she left.. leaving me with my baby...

me : (looking at smangele)... do you also agree with gogo.. should i tell daddy about you?? no?? yes?? ncoooo... everychild would want to grow knowing both their parents.. am sorry i took you away from your father.. but i will make things right owk... i promise...

i then took my phone and went on facebook...

i searched for his name on my friends list and found him.. i then texted him...

"hay.. its been long.. listen we need to talk, its

urgent..."

i then placed my phone away and kept playing with my baby....

.

.

.

****mbali****

we just arrived home.. i went up changed and did the deeds.. then i went to the living room to watch tv.. mom was surely in her room sleeping...

nonhlanhla joined me...

me : is mom in her room??

her : yes.. i went to check on her.. shes sleeping..

me : oh owk.. were is mpilo, the kids and uncle siya??

her : i dont know, i just came with you from school...

as that was said, the door opened.. it was the xulu family... siya, mpilo and the kids...

them : hay guys....

us : hay...

mpilo ; is mom here??

nhlanhla : yes... in her room...

i called the kids and started playing around with them... after a while mom came down..

mom : afternoon everyone..

us : hay mom...

me : may i please be excused... i got homework to attack...

i got up and left...

i got to my room and went in my closet.. i took a chair and climbed up to the top shelve and picked up a box...

so since i moved here i actually builded myself a money box... everytime they gave us money for food at school or stuff i would put it in the picki box and make lunch.. nonhlanhla found out months later that am doing that then also strated doing it..

so i took the box and took out R50... i then placed

the money under the pillow in the pillow case.. so that i dont have to struggle on friday...

i then took out my books and tried studying.. (but who studies on the bed, laying on their stomache??) and i ended up sleeping on the books...

later i was woken up by someone shaking me...

me : mhm...

her : wake up...

i opened my eyes in was nompilo...

i got up really irritated...

her : i thought you doing homework...

me : i was, but i fell asleep...

her : mhm.... you sure...

me ; kanti why did you wake me up..

her : i wanted to speak to you...

me : couldnt you wait till i naturally woke up??

her : if i were to wait till you naturaly wake up then that means i would actually wait forever becouse

everyday afterschool you sleep and wake up late to eat then boom sleep again...

me : school is tiring.. plus i dont have anything to do in the afternoons so what should i do?? watch tv??

her : there are 2 things that are in my mind right now... its either you avoiding mom....

me : or.??

her : you pragnant.....

me : hahahahahah lol.... non of the above... am just tired...

her : are you seeing anyone?? actually no... are you in a sexual relationship with anyone??

me : huh.... no...

her : you know you can tell me anything...

me : no.. am not....

her : so you still sealed??

me : duh.... unless am virgin mary.. being pragnant while a virgin...

her : lol... owk.. so you also not avoiding mom??

me : not at all...

her : you serious??

me : very....

her : oh owk...

me : can i go back to sleep now??

her : how about you go play with the kids??

me ; hai hai.. am tired...

she looked at me shaking her head.. i just looked away and layed my head on the pillow.. i put on my earphones and played music..

i listened to the words as they hit home and eventually slept...

[12/14, 07:57] Zozaness: The villagegirl an the playboy: arranged marriage

104

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

****friday****

****nonhlanhla****

its afterschool and i am at the back block with
ayanda..

him : so.. queen... how was your day??

me : it was owk.. besides the anoying teachers...

him : woooooow.. i didnt know you had teachers that were annoying...

me : what does that mean?

him : nerds love all their teachers...

me : lol... that means am not a nerd...

him : really?? owk... how many times have you bunked classes since grade 8??

me : what question is that??

him : answer...

me : i have never bunked classes...

him : how many times have you bunked school??

me : never...

him : how many times have you gotten a red or white letter??

me : (chuckle) never..

him : see?? you have passed the nerd test.. queen, you definatly a nerd...

i laughed...

me : mxm... uyangjwayela...

him : hahaha... so tell me.. hows things at home?

me : things are owk.. my mom is great, shes back as how she was before the accident but still has some more healing to do.. my dad is out of danger.. but not out of hospital...

him : atleast theres a progress... am glad you didnt loss your parents in the accidents..

me : yah me too..

him : yah.. and i think its time i also went to visit my dad in law....

i looked at him as he pulled a straight face.

me : utheni?? (what did you say??)

him : mhm??

me : dont give me that look... what did you say??

him : i just said that mabye i should go visit my dad inlaw in hospital.. hao..

me : mhm... if you can duck my mom, uncle and sisters husbands whip then be my guest...

him : what?? hai forget i said anything...

we laughed...

as i looked up after laughing i found him looking at me..

me : what??

him : your smile.. your laughter.. its just so.... shhhhh cant explain it..

i smiled...

him : you really driving me crazy nonhlanhla... i even look like a twerp to my friends, but i dont care..

me : what you mean a twerp??

him : well since all my gang knew me as a player, they think i lost my touch becouse am lost in your (clears throat)...

me : huh??

him : they say i am lost in your..... (looking at my lower body)...yah...

me : ohhhhh sies...

him : hahahaha.. ntoni??

me : nvm.....

he came close to me and perked my lips...

him : i love you my dark chocolate...

me : i love you too..

he leaned in and kissed me, i responded gently while my body experienced some feelings and shivers...

he started running his hands on my back down to my waist, and also grabbed my butt.. my body was experiencing some emotions, i was having some movements...

the kiss was so passionate that my lady down there started beating.. it was like my heart was beating down there...

he then went for a hug and breathed on my neck while kissing it...

then he pulled out...

his eyes were low... its like he just smoked or something...

he looked at me...

him : ndiakthanda vha??

me : nam ngiyakthanda...

he leaned in again for another kiss... but we were interrupted..

voice : (clears throat)..

i looked back and it was mbali..

me : oh, mbali??

her : uncle is here..

me : oh owk.. (looking at ayanda)... i need to go, i will see you on monday...

him ; sure.. have a great weekend...

i baby kissed him and left, as he ran to the grounds for his soccer practice...

we walked to the car and got in...

uncle bongani : tell me its classes...

we looked at each other..

mbali : its classes..

uncle bongani : hahahah.. hai wena mbali...

we laughed..

uncle drove us home and dropped us.. we went in the house and went to change...

.

.

.

****mbali****

my phone rang.. it was chantel...

me : hay... chantel..

her : hay tione.. so were are you?? we already on our way to the park...

me : oh owk.. am coming.. just got home..

her : great...

me : owk...

i hung up and quickly got dressed...

i then took my R50 from the pillow and put it in my jean pocket...

i then packed my backpack.. i put my jersey and some stuff...

after a while, as nonhlanhla made lunch, i took bread, made some sandwich.. and sneaked out...

i then walked to the park while eating my sandwich..

i got to the park and dialed chantel..

she answered on the third ring..

her : tione...you at the park??

me : yep.. were yall at??

her : right behind you...

i turned back and they got out of a taxi.. they were alot of them.. more then i expected...

me : hay..

chantel : hay babe.. you made it...

me : yah.. i needed the distraction...

chantel : great... we about to have some fun..

we made our way under the tree at the park and the gents played the bluetooth speaker..

she introduced me to all the others and helped me relax...

they opened bottles and started drinking...

chantel : want a drink??

me : huh.. no.. i dont drink...

chantel : come on... its just s drink.. no need to overdo it...

me : well owk..

we drank and danced...

the guys rolled a joint.. they smoked.. they were also smoking oka pipe(hooker)..

theres this guy called milo... he is so sexy.. so tall, brown colour, bedroom eyes.. mhm.. its too sad because it seems like hes taken.. well i know that because his friends were always talking about nadia and he would get touched...

milo : want a joint??

me : sure, i can try...

i tried it and pulled it.. it chocked me that i coughed

so hard my chest burned...

milo helped me by handing me some juice...

milo : wanna try again?? just dont pull hard.. pull it and release.. take it easy..

me : sure..

i took it again and smoked.. it took me sometime before i got it right...

i also started smoking oka pipe.(hooker)...

we smoked, drank and danced.. all that..

chantel : am catching munchies.. am hungry..

me : theres a shop down there...

milo : sure.. and i can go buy food for us..

chantel : really??

milo : yah.. (looking at me).. will you come with me??

me : huh... sure..

i stood up and we went to the shop.. i was not balanced and a little dizzy...

milo : you owk??

me : yah.. just a little off..

milo : you mean drunk and high??

me : something like that..

we laughed..

me : you know, no one told me that theres life out here.. am here stuffing myself indoors and acting innocent but truth be told am just a bad girl...

milo : bad girl??

me : yah.. baddest..

milo : what do you mean.. ?? how bad are you??

me : well i dont listen, i am a headacue...

milo : nah, thats not a bad girl... a bad girl is a girl thats bad..

me : like this bad..?

i went close to him and stood on my toes towards me.. he leaned in and we shared a passionate kiss.. it was sweet and short..

i smiled and walked to the shop..

he just looked at me and smiled..

milo : mhm.. great kisser huh??

me : i know..

milo : so, do you have a boyfriend??

me : mhm.. yah.. i do..do you have a girlfriend??

milo : yah.. i do...

me : nadia??

milo : yah...

me : mhm...

milo : but am sure what happens tonight will stay between us..

me : nothing will happen tonight milo...

milo : i thought you a bad girl..

me : only to my man...

milo : the kiss??

me : well yah.. your lips were just attractive.. so i didnt have much choice..

he laughed...

we then got to the shop, bought food.. and went back..

we got back to the park and ate.. then drank more as the sun setted..

i was so drunk that i didnt even know what was happening anymore...

[12/14, 07:57] Zozaness: The villagegirl an the playboy: arranged marriage

105

- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .

.
. .
. .

****mbali****

i woke up with a spinning headache...

as i woke up, i realised that i was in a room i wasn't aware of.. i looked around and i feared my life.. i checked myself.."great, am fully dressed"... i touched my lady down there..."good, no pain, that means nothing happened"...

now, the big question.. "where am i??"..... maybe it's chanel's house...

well i get up, and look around.. this room looks more like a guy's room.. am beyond confused now...

i then heard voices coming close, so i pretended to be asleep with the sheets over my head...

the door opened.. it was male's talking.. and it seemed like one of them was milo...

voice : so milo you smashed??

milo : shhhh bro... not so loud.. shes sleeping...

voice : (speaking softly) owk... but tell me did you smash her??

milo : no..

voice : you lying bro.. you did smash...

milo : i didnt..

voice : bro, we all know that any girl that enters in this room comes out smashed...

milo : well not this one..

voice : owk milo.. even though i feel like you lying...

milo : whatever mahn..

i heard him put something on the drawer..

voice : so what time are you going to nadia??

milo : huh, around 3pm... she might even come here..

voice : will she be around at that time?? did you invite her for todays party??

milo : nop.. i didnt.. she only slept here becouse chantel asked me to accomodate her.. she was sooo

drunk last night.. she probably wont know how she got here...

voice : hahaha.. i saw that...

milo : yah...

voice : owk boy, let me go.. you will find me with the others..

milo : sho..

voice : oh and please.. hand me the dark beauty owk...

milo : i thought you into thick chicks with big bums and boobs..??

voice : its not wrong to know how thin, slender, chocolate girls tast like...

milo : mhm.. owk..

voice : so you gonna spin her to me??

milo : no..

voice : but...

milo : go bruh...

voice : i knew you want to smash her first..

milo : bruh... dont let me jump on you..

voice : owk am gone..

i heard the door open and close.. the friend mustve left... then after a while i felt the bed move, guess milo sat on the bed.. he then shook me...

milo : tione!!... tione!!... mbali!!...

i pretended to have just woken up.. i stretched and yawned...

me : mhhhm... what?

milo : its owk.. nothing happened.. i slept on the floor..

me : oh owk.. but how did i get here??

well am sure am a great actor hai...

him : you were extreamly drunk last night, so chantel asked me to accomodate you..

me : oh owk.. hope i didnt cause any issue between you and your girlfriend..

him : shes not here..

me : oh.. i better go before my family worries and before your girlfriend comes..

him : owk.. i can drop you home..

me : thanks...

him : ohh, yah.. i brought you food.. help yourself...

me : thank you...

i checked my phone as he headed out.. i realised it was flat..

me : huh, milo..

him ; sweety??

me : (chuckled)... can you borrow me a charger.. my phone is flat...

him : owk..

he seached for the charger and the twin plug.. then gave them to me..

him : the plug is that side.. next to the bed...

me : oh thanks..

him : owk.. shout if you need me...

me : litteraly, i will do...

him : hahahah....

he laughed as he walked out.. i charged my phone and opened it...

after a while my phone opened and reported alot of massages.. i was actually nervouse becouse my family didnt know were i was... and what makes it worse is that smanga also doesnt know were i am...

i dialed nonhlanhla...

her : mbali??

i didnt respond becouse this was not nonhlanhla speaking.. it sounded like mom or nompilo...

her : mbali??

me : hay..

her : were are you??

right... its mom...

me : at a friends place...

her ; who is the friend??

me : huh... Chantel..

her ; can i talk to her mother??

me : huh... am not in the house.. i just left, coming back home..

her : can i speak to her??

me : well.. you cant, becouse i left her at home...

her : then who is taking you home??

me : her driver...

her ; can i speak to him..??

me : huh.. huh.. (pretending as if the phone is breaking).. mom??... you cutting, mom?? hello??
hello.

i hung up... "phew".. that was close...

i then swiched of my phone and took it off the charger.. so that when i get home i could have proof that my phone died of battery...

i stood up and went to the bathroom... i washed my

face, fixed my hair...

my heart was pumping.. i was now scared to go home..

i got done washing my face and looked in the mirror...

"mbali, is this what you have become??" " really??"

i looked so hard at the mirror that my concentration focused only at myself in the mirror...

voice : you wont have a twin looking at that mirror..

i came back to earth and saw milo through the mirror... i didnt turn around, i just spoke to him while looking at him through the mirror...

me : ****sigh**** am just scared...

milo : whats wrong??

me : a part of me wants to stay away for sometime.. but another part wants me to go back home...

milo : what does your heart say??

me : my heart says i should stay away from home for a little while.. maybe go to my boyfriend or

something..

milo : what does your mind say??

me : my dad is still in hospital, he doesnt need such stress.. and me acting like this seems childish and not right...

milo : then you have your answer...

me : huh??

i turned to look at him...

milo : you said your dad is in hospital, right?? so dont be selfish...

me : well he is my father, but not my real father and i just found out weeks ago...

milo : ohhhh. huh am sorry...

me : yah.. i thought i have forgiven my mom, but truly speaking.. i rather go away then be in that house..

he came close to me and comforted me...

milo : its owk.. just go back and be there for your step dad... i mean its not everyday that a man takes

another mans child as his own... i mean he loved you right??

me : yah.. he never gave me any reason to doubt his love...

milo : see??

i smiled and looked at him...

gosh.. his dimples... smooth...

i stared in his brown eyes..

me : thank you...

milo : its a pleasure...

he leaned in.. i leaned forward.. we were close.. i wanted to kiss him, but at that minute i thought about smanga... i quickly snapped out of it and moved away....

me : am sorry..

milo : huh.... yah... am also sorry... i shouldnt have..

i moved away and went to the room...

he followed...

milo : huh.. i see you didnt eat...

me : i was about to.. then i went to wash my face....

milo : oh owk...

he left and i ate.. after i made the bed, tidyed up..

i then sat on the bed...

after a while milo came up again...

me : about time...

milo : you couldve just screamed for me, i was gonna come..

me : nah... anyway.. can we go now..??

milo : sure...

me : you still know your way to the park right??

milo : hahaha yah... i see you also made the bed and cleaned the room...

me : yah.... i was bored..

milo : hahaha... owk, lets go..

me : wait.. how many people are down??

milo : 4, why??

me : brothers??

milo : no.. friends...

me : oh owk...

milo ; owk, lets go..

we got out...

i must say he has a very beautiful house... very beautiful to be his...

[12/14, 07:58] Zozaness: continuation

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

****mbali****

we were in the car..

me : thats a nice house you have there...

milo : mhm.. thanks..

me : so, what do you do for a living??

milo : me?? well, i am studying...

me : studying??

milo : yah, what did you think??

me : you studying?? yet you can afford to buy such a house??

milo : hahaha.. no.. my family is rich.. my father owns a law firm and my mother is a doctor...

me : woooooow... so what you studying??

milo : law...

me : ohhh like father like son huh??

milo : you could say that...

me : oh...

milo : and you.. what grade you in??

me : grade 10..(I said that looking down)...

milo : no need to be ashamed of your grade.. i mean chanel is also in grade 10 and i still hang around with her..

me : mhm... vele vele, how did you and chanel get to know eachother??

milo : through my friend.. they are dating..

me : ohh..

milo : yah... and he is also in varsity..

me : woow...

we then arrived at the park..

me : thank you so much...

milo : you sure dont want me to drop you off at home??

me : nah.. if my mom could see me getting off a car,

she would.....

milo : ohhh i get it...

me : no actually.. please do... in that way she can buy my story of being at a friends place.. you can act as the brother...

milo : huh...!!

me : i told my mom that am on my way from my friends house..

milo : i dont know about this hai..

me : please... i beg you..

milo : owk.. lets go.. direct me,..

he drove as i showed him were to go..

we arrived...

me : please borrow me your phone..

he handed me his phone and i dialed mom..(i know her numbers by head)... she picked up...

her : hallo...

me : huh... mom.. its me...

her : mbali??

me : yes... am outside, with the driver i was talking about...

her : is this his number??

me : yes....

her : owk.. am on my way...

she hung up and i sighed looking at milo...

me : owk.. shes coming.. remember you are my friends brother..

milo : and whos this friend??

me : chantel...

milo : oh owk...

me : great.. leave other things to me...

milo : oh owk..

we stood there and waited..

after a while my mom, siya and bongani came out...

me : woow.. she brought the squad...

milo : damn, now am scared..

me : cool down.. they not that bad...

milo : i hope so...

we got out the car heading to them...

mom : saubona nomzan.. (hallo sir)..

milo : (clears throat)... yebo ma...

bongani : you must be the driver, from the friends place...

milo : no sir.. am chantels brother..

mom : i take it chantel is mbali's friend??

milo : yes.. did she not mention it??

mom : mbali?? why did you lie about him being a driver??

me : huh.. if i had said that its her brother, you would have thought that mabye am lying..

mom : dont you think, i think you lying right now?

me :.....

bongani : why didnt you bring her yersterday? what

happened?? were yall studying??

milo ; no sir.. it was chantels sweet 16.. so i threw a party for her.. our parents are away on some vacation..

bongani : i take it they also dont know that you did the party??

milo : (looked down).. yes sir...

i looked at uncle bongani and mom, they looked convinced.. i must say milo is a pro at this lying game... but uncle siya doesnt seem like he has bought the story.. he is looking at milo like he is observing him and milo is also avoiding looking at his side...

bongani : i wont lie.. that was wrong.. expecially you mbali.. becouse you left here without a word..

mom : nonhlanhla tried covering for you.. but was busted..

bongani : thank you son for your honesty... but please dont be throwing parties without your parents consent, what if something goes wrong??

milo : i hear you sir..

mom : thank you..mbali, come in..

me : bye... thanks for the lift...

milo ; its cool...bye..

siya : yall can go.. i want to have a word or two with this little kind brother...

we went inside.. but my spirit was there outside.. i was scared.. what if uncle siya interogates him until he reveals the truth?? eash...

.

.

.

****siya****

so i have been looking at this guy for a while now.. he says one thing but his face and body language says another...

come on.. i was a liar once.. i used to lie my way in the house when i have left for a few days or more.. or lie to a girls parents about their whereabouts.. and i

must say, he is one genuise lier.. i mean what good way to lie then painting yourself as the bad guy...

me : is that your car??

him : huh.. no sir.. its my dads...

me : please call me siya...

him : oh owk...

me : whats your name??

him : milokuhle..

me : nice name... my son's name is also milokuhle.. but i call him kuhle.. am sure you milo right??

him : yes.. my friends call me milo..

me : yah.. every child whos name is milokuhle, is called milo.. thats why i decided to call mine kuhle..

he faked a smile and nodded...

him : can we talk, in the car, if you dont mind...

him : sure...

we walked to his car and he led me in.. then we closed the door...

me : drive to the station...

him : huh.. owk...

he looked a little uncomfortable.. and rather nervous because his hands were shaking...

me : stop being nervous, you will cause an accident.. am not gonna kidnap you...

he faked a smile and tried relaxing...

me : owk.. owk... stop...

he pulled over..

me : let me drive.. you too nervous....

he swallowed and got out.. i chuckled and went to the drivers seat..

me : relax boy.. i own a car company.. and cars are my passion.. relax..

him : ohhhh..

me : yah.. i just saw this machine and thought i should feel how it rides... but here you are being scared and nervous...

him : sorry...

me : so, why you nervous vele?

him : i dont know.. i guess mabye having a stranger in my dads car, telling me to drive somewere makes me nervouse...

me : hahah.. right...

we got to the station and i filled his tank...

him : ohhh siya, you didnt have to..

me : come on... you gave my sister in law a lift.. so why not...

him : thank you so much...

me : its cool...

i then drove back home and parked the car next to the gate...

me : milo... i know that you are either mbali's boyfriend, or you are the friend of the boyfriend..

milo : (coughed)... no.. non..

me : i have been really nice to you.. trust me, if i was

to be angry.. things would go south...

milo :.....

me : so am gonna ask again, and am gonna ask one last time.. who are you to mbali??

milo : to be honest sir...siyabonga.. my friend is dating chantel.. and yesterday we had a chillas at the park till late.. so we moved the party to my house.. she was too drunk to tell us the directions to her place.. so chantel asked me to let her sleep at my place..

me : your parents??

milo : at a vacation..

i gave him a serious look....

milo : am serious.. you can call them if you want...

me : mhm... so did anything happen??

milo : (got uncomfortable)... no... nothing happened...

me : good... but listen.. i cant tell mbali who to date or who not to date.. but what i can say is treat her like how you would want your sister to be treated.,...

owk..

milo : yes sir..

me : siya is the name boy.... anyway.. (threw the keys at him).. have a good day..

i got out and headed in the house...

[12/14, 08:00] Zozaness: View Edit History

The villagegirl an the playboy: arranged marriage

106

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

****months later****

****bongani****

doc : here is your parcel mr nhlapo..

me : thank you..

doc : its a pleassure.. hope its what you were hoping for..

me : hope so too....

doc : owk....

me : bye doc.. thanks again...

i went out and went to my house..

so nompilo and siyabonga and the kids stay at my house now.. since kevin is back home..

i found nompilo in the kitchen.. the kids were playing on the couches in the living room...

me : mpilo...

her : hay uncle.. how was your day??

me : great... yours??

her : handful..

me : haha... is siyabonga around??

her : huh, nop...

me : owk thanks...

i went upstairs and took my phone and dialed his phone...

him : grootman??

me : the results are in boy...

him : ohhhhhhhhhhh did you open??

me : no boy... how fast can you get here??

him : huh... you want me there when you find out the results??

me : yes boy.. i need you now more then ever...

him : oh owk.. i will there in a minute...

me : owk boy...

i placed the envelope on the bed and looked at it.. i walked around the room as i waited for him...

after a long while he came in...

him : owk, am here...

me : (took a long breath)... what if it says negative??

him : then hes not your son...

me : what if am a match??

him : then hes your son...

me : mxm.. yaz wena...

we had a short laugh....

me : i am scared mahn..

him : can you open already.. am curious...

i took another breather and took the envelope...

i opened it.. before i checked the paper i gave it to siya..

me : you read it mahn...

him ; me?? mhm owk...

he opened and looked at it..

he then looked at me with that "oh my word" face...

me : what is it?? what does it say...

him :.....

me : siyabonga??

him : huh.. bro...

me : whats up??

him : grootman... your a father..

me : what??

he nodded in excitement..and i grabed the paper from him and checked it...

i then sat on the bed looking down...

him : grootman you a father, isnt that what you wanted??

me : if i was a father to a newborn baby, mabye i would be jumping up and down.. but now.. am a newly father to a 21 year old man, who has his life all figured out...

he came to sit next to me....

him : i get that you scared and all but, its not like you knew...

me : thats not what the mother said... that lady painted me as the bad guy...

him : then wash the paint off and show him that you not... already yall get along..

me : as boss and employee yes.. but not father and son..

him : eash.. i wont lie and say i know how you feel becouse i dont.. i have never experienced being a father of a 21 year old, whom i knew nothing about.. but what i can tell you is that i got you.. whatever you need, just shout mahn.. even when you whisper i will hear you..

me : hahaha.. are you being emotional mahn...

him : hahaha.. get out of here mahn... me?? emotional..?? theres no such..

we laughed...

him : all am sayinga is, you getting old now.. time to

reconcile with your son, get a wife and have a family..

me : yah.. right.. lets hope i dont get a floozy party animal like naledi...

him ; hahaha.. yah... you gotta throw those in the trash mahn...

we laughed again...

him : since we all relaxed now.. how about a little guys night out.. just to celebrate your fatherhood...

me : your wife will be owk with that??

him : am a husband, not a slave..

me : hahaha.. you know, even if you a husband, you still need to great a friendship kinda vibe with your wife...

him : i do.. but when i go out.. i dont ask permission.. i just tell her where i am going and what time i will be back.. thats it...

me : whoooooooo.. mr hubby...

he hit me on the shoulder and we laughed...

him : owk... get up, grab a jacket and lets get going...

me : your treat right??

him : yah... my treat.. but we first going to get some food so, your treat??

me : you bad.... like you really bad...

him : hahahah.. am smart.....

we laughed...

me : owk, i buy food... and you buy drinks... deal??

him : poetry to my ears...

me : i thought its "music to my ears" ??

him : originality... uniqueness...

me : siya, you a girl bro..

he opened his mouth in shock.. then smiled while being shocked....

him : we better go before i mess up...

i laughed...

he went to tell mpilo that hes heading out then we took my car and drove to a chisanyama.. we ordered our food and ate... then we went to a club to

celebrate..

i wont lie, i was still scared and nervouse.. atleast siya managed to settle me down but truth be told, i am truely scared... now i wish the results were negative...

.
. .

****smangaliso****

i had seen lebo's message on facebook.. she has sent the message months ago saying... "hay... its been long..listen we need to talk, its urgent..."

so i read it before but i didnt intertain it becouse my thoughts were telling me that she is onto something...

but these days, all i thought about was that message.. i kept thinking mabye something went wrong back at home.. so after doing my deeds today.. i responded.. it was about 6pm..

so sphe and i are sitting in the living room, watching

a movie as i also catch up with whats happening back at home..

.

****text conversations****

me : hay

her : finally, a reply after 3 months

me : sorry, i kinda skipped your message..

her : ohh owk, how are you doing??

me : am great wena??

her : am good..

me : so, what is it that you wanted to tell me about?

her : huh... well.. its nothing major..

me : owk..

her : yah so its owk.. no need to stress anymore..

me : are you really owk??

her : yah, i am..

me : lebo.. just tell whats wrong owk.. i know we

both gone our separate ways but i still care about you..

her : can i ask you something?

me : sure...

her : do you have a girlfriend??

me : yes, why??

her : just asking..

me : am sure you also moved on..

her : nah.. smangele has been keeping me busy..

me : ohh yah.. i have been seeing pictures of yall... she has really grown hai..

her : yah.. she has..

me : how old is she now??

her : 8 months..

me : ohhhh... owk.. congratulations by the way.. am sure you will make a great mather..

her : yah... congratulations to you too.. Am sure you would also make a great father....am sorry i tried

keeping your daughter away from you...

i froze... i re-read the text so many times, i lost count... WHAT?? smangele is my child?

i responded... "WHAT??, what are you exactly saying??".. she didnt respond.. minutes later and still no respons, it doesnt even show that she read it...

i wrote again... "quite playing games lebo... is smangele my daughter?"... still after minutes theres no reply.. i then got a feeling that she might have switched off her data or something.. so i placed my phone down and watched the movie.. but my mind was just re-reading the message over and over again...

.

.

.

****lebo****

i sat on my bed crying as my baby lay next to me playing with her toys..

my mom then walked in and i quickly wiped my

tears...

mom : my baby.. i am back.. guess what i got for my sweet grandchild... "TADA"

my mom showed me a nice pink dress with redish flowers on them.. it looked so cute..

mom : i saw it ko pep.. couldnt leave it behind..

me : hahah... thanks mom..

mom : my baby, you look like you've been crying.. whats wrong??

me : nothing mom..

mom : dont say nothing.. your eyes are red and show that you have been crying.. so whats wrong??

me : (started crying)... i told smangaliso ma.. i told him that he is the father...

mom :..... thats.. thats good right??

me : no ma! hes gonna hate me for keeping his daughter away from him.. kanti what was i thinking?? you know i always thought just becouse my dad left you when you were still pregnant i could prove to

men that i dont need them.. but i realise what i did was wrong..

mom : its owk my baby... its owk...

me : no ma.. its not owk...

i cried as she held me in her arms and comforted me, telling me not to cry... what i did was wrong and i need to correct it.. even if its already late...

[12/14, 08:00] Zozaness: 107

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

****bongani****

its monday.. it was friday when i got the results and knew that smanga is my son... so today is the day i come to work and see how i come about trying to tell smanga that am actually his father..

i walk in the building.. i greeted the receptionist..

me : morning thando..

her : morning mr nhlapo..

me : any messages for me??

her : ohh yes.. and a message specifically to mr xulu..

me : ohh owk.. bring it to me, i will get in touch with mr xulu..

her : thank you sir.. have a great day..

me : ooooouuuu, i hope i do...

she smiled and i made my way to my office..

i sat down and layed back..

i took a deep breath and went through my work..

****hours later****

i just got off the phone with mr naidoo.. now i need to dial siya because he has to prepare for the meeting for thursday...

i dialed him and he answered on the third ring..

him : grootman..

me : sho siya.. listen, you have to prepare yourself, you meeting mr naidoo on thursday..

him : why dont you prepare yourself and go??

me : he specifically requested you..

him : oh owk.. thanks for letting me know..

me : sho...

him : anyway, did you speak to smanga yet??

me : not yet.. i havent even seen him today..

him : he didnt show up at work? is that what you saying??

me : mabye, i dont know..

him : oh.. did you give him leave??

me : no.. but am sure hes here.. i mean i have been

in my office all day so i wouldnt see him unless he comes to my office..

him : or mabye you avoiding him becouse you dont know how you will act when you face him...

me : you think??

him : i know...

me : eash...

him : anyway, let me go grootman.. wena just relax and start a normal conversation.. if it leads to yall speaking about the issue, tell him.. if it doesnt then just tell him..

me : wont it scare him??

him : it might scare him.. and just to tell you.. if his mother has said really bad things about you.. he might even quite and cut the internship short..

me : he wouldnt do that, he has a contract with us..

him : if they check the contract carefully, there are loopholes that would set him free..

me : but still he wouldnt even think about it... i mean

he is really passionate about cars.. he reminds me of the younger you...

him : since everyone seems to think smanga is my duplicate, then he might aswell be my child.. easy..

me : hahaha.. mxm..

him : owk, shap grootman, gotta bounce... wena, speak to smanga..

me : sho... thanks ntwana...

him ; shap..

he hung up and i put the phone down.. minutes later the interns supervisor came to me.. he is mr mokoena...

him : afternoon sir, may i come in??

me : afternoon.. please come sit...

he came to sit down..

me : how may i help you??

him : huh.. i am having a problem with one of the interns today.. he looks very distrcted and disturbed... he hardly gets anything right...

me : and which intern is this??

him : smangaliso...

me : ohhh..

him : yes sir.. am afraid he might just mess up everything..

me : please, tell him to come to my office..

him : owk sir.. thank you..

he stood up and went to call him....

after a while he knocked on the door...

me : ohhh come in...

he came in and took a seat as i showed him to..

him : afternoon mr nhlapo..

me : afternoon.. i hear your supervisor tells me that today you have been lacking...

him :

me : care to tell me what the problem is??

him : well, its just family problems... nothing else sir..

me : well, you gonna have to tell me exactly what is going on for me to find reason as to why i shouldnt give you a warning.. phela i heard you almost damaged a car...

him : ****sigh**** well i just found out friday that i have a daughter...

me : huh?? isnt that good news??

him : it is.. well it wouldve been a great surprise if mabye the woman was pregnant.. not telling me when the child is 8 months old...

me : 8 months??

him : yes.. i dated that girl a while ago.. then we broke up way before i even came here.. she didnt mention to me that she is pregnant..

me : now thats really wrong...

him : and not to mention that i have found someone i love here.. and i want to make things right with her.. i always wished that she could be the mother of my children.. my wife.. now will she take all this??

me : if she truely loves you then she will accept your

child.. yes she might be angry for a few days but she will eventually understand whats more important and accept you and your child...

him : i guess so.. but moving to whats really stressing me.. is that, i grew up without a father.. and now am supposed to be a father, i dont even know how a father should act...

me :

i looked down with my heart beating fast..

him : am sorry...

me : no.. please.. carry on...

him : when i grew up i always thought dad was always at work.. waking up early and coming back really late when am already asleep.. untill one night i sneaked into my moms bedroom and layed under the bed... guess what.. she slept alone.. there was no sign of dad.. in the morning as she was in the shower, i sneaked out.. in breakfast i asked her if my dad came last night.. you know what she said??

me : what did she say??

him : she said that he had already left..

me : so what did you do..

him ; i sat there, crying.. she asked why i was crying.. i just cried.. after a while i told her what i did.. she got a bit embarrassed but also started crying.. then she told me that actually dad has never been around.. that he has never seen me because he abandoned my mom and i before i was even born.. before i was even formed...

me : did your mom tell you that??

him : yah.. she did...

me : have you once atleast tried looking for your father??

him : yes.. but i got tired and just gave up.. i mean he didnt want us right...

me : why did you give up??

him : come on.. there are alot of themba khumalos in this world.. were would i begin... i mean the discriptions that mom gave me tells me that hes not even on social media.. i tried..

me : mabye i could help you look for him..

him : no.. am convinced that he wants nothing to do with us..

me : and how would you know?? i mean your mom could be lying to you..

him : no... she wouldnt..

me : did she know about you having a child??

him : i doubt she knew.. if she had known, she wouldnt have kept it from me...

me : ohhh owk... but i still think you should hear your dad out..

him : come on.. its not like am still 5 years old you know, aint like am gonna be sitting up every day asking, "when is daddy coming home" you know, who needs him?? hai he wasnt there to teach me how to shoot my first goal but i learned, didnt i?? and i got preddy damn good at it too didnt i?? got through my first date without him, right?? i learned how to drive, i learned how to shave, i learned how to fight without him, i had 21 great birthdays without

him, he didnt even send me a damn card, or a call..
so TO HELL WITH HIM.....

he said this shedding a tear.. it seemed like he
wanted to cry.. i looked away as my eyes filled with
tears.. i wanted to cry.. i couldnt hold myself but i
pulled myself strong..

i really underestimated her anger towards me.. lindo
has really poisoned me against me...

i wiped my tears quickly as he rubbed his eyes...

me : am sorry son.. am really sorry..

him ; its ok.. i guess i will live.. am strong aint i??

me : yes you are.. indeed you are..

him : mr nhlapo?? whats wrong?? you seem abit
emotional...

me : its just that your story is similar to mine..

him ; really?? you also dont have a father??

me : no.. i do... but my son was taken away from me..

him : ohhh am so sorry...

me : yah... see i never went to school..

him : never??

me : no.. i was born into slavery.. as i was born i was taken into slavery.. my parents knew about me but i didnt know about them.. but the chief and his wifes took care of me.. expecially becouse i really took care of their livestock.. and their household.. all my life i served.. when i was 21/22 i was a bit naughty.. i never had a straight girlfriend, i just slept with the chiefs maids.. i would just sleep with them... one time i slept with one maid.. she caught feelings, i was dumb to actually let her believe that i want something serious.. one day she caught me with another maid and got really angry.,. weeks later word came that she quit and she has left..

him : ohhhh.. was she pregnant??

me : yes.. but i didnt know.. it was only this year around march/april that i figured out that i had a son.. but i wasnt sure.. its just that his mothers name and surname was exactly the same as the name and surname of the boy..

him ; how did you meet him??

me : work...

him : ohhh...

me : so in his applications, i saw his mothers numbers, so i called her to verify what i already know.. when i called her, i heard it was her voice.. i asked her if he was my son.. she said no.. something in me just knew she was lying because when i counted the boys date of birth back to 9 months.. it pointed at the exact month, i last made love to her... i let her be and did my own research.. with the help of siyabonga i managed to get the boys dna sample..

him : is he your son??

me : i got the results this past friday.. yes he is my son..

tears streamed out my eyes and i looked down wiping them..

me : but you know whats more painful??

she shook his head..

me : that this boy thinks his father is piece of rubbish that abandoned them..

he looked at me as if he was catching on, on what i was saying.. he then leaned forward with his hands on the table and his eyes got watery...

him : what is the name of the boys mother??

i looked up and looked down.. i then leaned back and looked at him..

me : lindokuhle mnguni

his eyes shot open and his tears streamed down like a it was raining on his face...

he then stood up and stepped back shaking his head...

i had no words.. i was just speechless.. but i kept my eyes fixed at him...

him : may i leave.. sir...

i wanted to protest but i kept it to myself.. i nodded...

he stormed out of here and rushed out..

i hit the table with my fist and placed my head on the

table..

shit just happened..

[12/14, 08:01] Zozaness: The villagegirl an the
playboy: arranged marriage

108

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

****smangaliso****

the alarm woke me up.. damn this hangover is killing me...

i make my way to the living room.. i found sphe sitting on the couch... he was all dressed up and having his breakfast...

me : sho sho sphe...

him : yes smanga...

me : ouch... dont you have headache pills.??

him : huh.. i think i do.. check on the fridge, in the basket..

me : sho...

i went and luckily i found grandpa..

me : just what i need..

him : yah.. it really illiminates the pain fast mahn...

me : mhm...

i took it and drank it followed by water..

i then made myself coffee...

him : you really had it rough last night mahn.. whats up??

me : nah.. nothing bro..

him : that didnt look like nothing.. gulbing 4 big bottles of sminoff, alone??

me : long story mahn.. dont want to talk about it...

him : owk.. but i hope its not mbali..

me : nah, its not...

him : really??

me : nah...

him : oh owk.. let me get going mahn, am even late for class..

me : yah, run..

him : i dont run i drive...

me : haha.. owk drive ke, but dont speed...

him : owk sir..

he gave me a salute and hurried out.. i just shook my head while giggling..

i sat down and logged on facebook..

good, she has answered.. she responded saying.."yes, she is your daughter, am sorry..."

so i responded..."can i have your digits".. i then logged off and dialed my moms number...

mom : hay boy.. finally, how are you keeping up??

me : am great mom.. thanks.. how you??

mom : am also great boy.. i miss you..

me : mhm.. so how are things that side??

mom : they great.. your dad also misses you.. are you going to visit us soon??

me : tell him i miss him too.. oh and i will be visiting soon, given that i have just been told that i have a daughter...

mom :.....

me : hallo??

mom : huh.. am still here son... what did you say about having a daughter??

me : yah.. i have a daughter..

mom : huh... so am going to be a grandmother??

me : yah.. mom you sound off rather than excited...

mom : huh.. no.. i am just shocked.. i mean i dont even know the girl...

me : yah.. we actually not together now..

mom : i dont get it..

me : we broke up a year and some months ago..

mom : huh??

me : yah.. mom.. my daughter is now 8 months and i never knew about her...

mom : that sad...

me : which brings me to think.. what goes in the heads of woman who keep their children away from their childrens fathers...??

mom :

me : its cruel isnt it??

mom : huh... yah.. it.. it is....

me : now begs the question.. did my father know about me??

mom : smangaliso.. i thought we spoke about this...

me : we did..?? nah we didnt.. you spoke about this, i didnt.. i was just listening, remember??

mom : smangaliso....

me : smangaliso!! thats a nice name.. when you translate it, its "suprises" or "suprise".. so i was a suprise to you neh? like.. "TADA, nangumtwana"..

mom : smanga??

me : no, am not done.. am speaking now.. tell me, what does, "wokumuntu bongani ismangaliso sethu'...

mom :

me : owk, i will tell you... its "everyone give thanks to our suprise".... woooow mom.. you had a good taste of names huh...

mom : smangaliso you acting crazy...

me : acting crazy?? ma, you lied to me.. told me that

my dad wants nothing to do with me, but you knew that he doesnt even know i exist...

mom : humbhedo loyo..(thats rubbish)..

me : really?? well my father..bongani nhlapo.. told me so...

mom :.....

me : mhm.. cant talk??

mom :.....(started breathing loudly)...

me : oh so you shocked as to how i found him right??

mom : nx...

she hung up..

i looked at the phone and laughed in disbelief... i then took few minutes to catch my breath...

i then logged on my facebook...

i saw lebo's message.. "its 064 ### ####"

i then video called her ,she connected...

her face appeared on the screen...

looked at her for a long time then..

me : please hold on, i need to get my earphones..

her : owk...

i stood up, got my earphones and plugged it in.. then i layed on my bed and positioned my phone..

i then looked at her again for long without utering a word...

her : you wanna see smangele??

i looked at her for a while then i sighed looking down and nodded my head...

she showed the phone to her and she lay on the bed, kicking and playing with her toys ohh and eating it.. when she looked up and saw me on the phone, she started wanting to take the phone and eat it...

i smiled..

her : say helo to daddy, say "hallo daddy"... "halo papa".. i heard her giggling at the background as smangele tried reaching for the phone..

me : hay baby.. hay nana.. hallo..

she got excited as she kitcked hard and mumbled

and screamed.. also spitting...

me : lebo!!

she faced the camera to her...

me : let her take the phone i wanna see what shes gonna do with it...

her : owk.. if it breaks though, you buying me another one..

me : hahaha.. owk..

she smiled and faced the camera at smangele.. then let her take the phone...

her : mhm nana... take..

she took it and it went straight in her mouth.. i laughed..

i saw her little tounge trying to get hold of the camera.. little fingers just toughing nje.. i laughed alone as i saw the sight..

for some reason she brought some light in me.. my anger and rage were settled...

after a while the camera was showing me the

ceiling.. then after a while lebo took it and whiped the camera..

i looked at her as she looked at smangele and putting her in place... she had a nose ring now.. and she looked cute...

her :

i looked at her in a very serious way...

her : smanga listen, am sorry... i know i shouldnt have kept her away from you, it was definitely wrong of me.. please dont take my child away from me.. please..

me : why?? why didnt you tell me??

her : i was under the impression that even though my dad ditched my mom, i was gonna prove to the world that i can survive as a single mom...

me : didnt your mom prove that?? i mean look at you?? all grown and matured, without the help of your father..

her : yah.. guess i acted without thinking.. no wonder your mom decided not to tell you.. mabye she

thought i was lying...

me : what?? my mom knew??

her : yah.. my mom and i went to your house when smangele was still 5 months.. she also asked me the same question, said that.. am only pinning the child on you because you working now in one of the most top car companies..

me : are you??

her : smanga?? what do you take me for??

me : am just asking..

her : ****sigh**** am not gonna fight with you.. dont wanna unsettle my child.. but i wanna say this.. i dont want nothing from you.. no money, no clothing, nothing, but please be there for your daughter.. thats it..

me :..... am sorry..

her : its cool.. i guess i deserve that...

me : owk.. huh.. i will call later on..

her : oh owk.. thanks for understanding... and for

forgiving me..

me : no darling... i havnt really forgiven.. i will calling to see my baby.. thats it...

her :.....

i then hunged up layed my head down...

why does this world have to be so harsh all in one go.. i mean here i find out that i have a child, not only that but my only mother knew and kept it away from me.. then also boom.. i find out that my boss, is actually my father and apperently my lied about him too...

my life is a mess yaz... all becouse of my mom...

i then dialed my step dad...

him : boy.. what did you do to upset your mother??

me : hay dad..

him : am listening...

me : well, how about you ask her...

him : am your father not your friend..

me : sorry.. dad...

him : so what is happening.,...

me : i dont think you wanna hear this.. it could be sensitive to you..

him : let me be the judge of that..

me : ohh owk.. huh.. i found my biological dad... well more like he found me..

him :..... you sure about that?? you sure he is your father??

me : well he has no reason to lie right...

him : so, your mom is upset because you found your biological dad??

me : no... shes mad because i found out that she lied to me..

him : about what??

me : my fathers name is bongani nhlapo, not themba khumalo.. he didnt abandon us, mom hid me from him..

him : what??

me : yep.. and i wanted to ask.. did dad also know that am having a daughter or did mom know this alone??

him :.....

me : huh.. i take it you also knew... i cant believe yall kept such news from me.. why??

him : your mom was not sure if that girl was lying or not..

me : still you couldve told me dad...

him :.....

i didnt have much to say, so i just hung up, threw the phone away and just layed facing up...

after a while, my phone rang.. i ignored it.. it rang again and still i ignored..

i layed flat till sleep came to devoure me...

[12/14, 08:03] Zozaness: The villagegirl an the playboy: arranged marriage

109

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

****bongani****

i was with siya at home, playing video games...

him : so.. how did it go??

me : what??

him : did you tell him??

me : yah...

him : and??

me : well.. lets just say, he didnt take it well.. he stormed out after i told him...

him : and today??

me : he didnt show up for work...

him : eash.. tough hai...

me : very mahn.. i can imagin what hes going through right now...

him : yah.. hai.. and he has no family around here...

me : you know what makes all this even worse??

him ; what??

me : he also just found out that he also has a daughter of 8 months..

him : (wristles)... really??

me : yep.. i wish i never said anything..

him : well wish not granted becouse its done..

me : eash.. yah neh...

i put my controller down and he paused the game...

i layed back and looked up...

him ; listen man.. give him space.. he will come around.. i mean 2 bombs at the same time??

me : yah.. the bomb of finding his father and finding his daughter...

him : yah..

this stupid guy, pulled me in as though i was a girl, heartbroken and he is patting me like am his girlfriend...

me : bro what you doing??

him : hahahahaha.. am trying to comfort you..

me : i always knew you a little girl..

him : hahahahaha.. maybe am transgender..

me : siyabonga!!..

him : or gay..

i jumped up from the chair and he laughed so hard i also joined in...

me : uyadina yaz...

him : just jokes.. i mean i have a whole wife bro.. and kids.. i shot 3 goals with one ball.. get that...

me : eeew siya.. get out of here...

him : hahahaha.. owk owk.. sure..

me : i dont even wanna sit next to you right now..

him : its a good thing..

we laughed...

.

.

.

****FEW DAYS LATER****

these passed days, smanga has been avoiding me..
he comes early, gets to work.. spends lunch working..
then leaves without a word...

so today i thought of breaking this tension..

i went to their working grounds...

me : smangaliso.. may i see you in my office please..

him : huh.. actually sir, am kinda busy at the moment..

me : now smanga...

he looked at me and looked away making way to my office...

i followed..

we got to the office and sat down...

me : whats going on??

him : i was working and you came and disturbed me by calling me.. so i should be asking you that...

me : dont get smart with me....

him :.....

me : i know you avoiding me...

him : why would i avoid you??

me : smanga.. i know this whole father, son thing is tough but.....

him : sir.. please.. i have work to do..

he stood up..

me : smangaliso??

he stopped and looked at me..

me : you think am lying dont you??

him :.....

me ; owk.. take a seat, let me prove to you that am not lying...

he sat down and looked at me..

i dialed lindo's number (his mother)....

her : hallo..

me : its me.. bongani...

her : i told you to not call me again..

me : i just wanted to say that i have told him everything...

her : everything?? i told you he is not your son....

me : really??

her : yes.. now back off bongani.. dont you have a life.. get your own son...

me : ouch that hurts.. if i had not done the dna tests,

i would say owk.. but now that the dna tests are done.. i cant..

her : you did dna tests??

me : yep.. and guess what, they say am the father..

her :.....

me : i just dont believe that you would stoop so low and tell my son that i abondornd him, yet i didnt even know about him...

her : smanga we were young.. you were a slave.. how would you have taken care of him??

me : just knowing about him wouldnt have hurt, would it??

her :..... i wasnt thinking...

me : so why did you paint me into a bad guy??

her : i guess i wanted someone to blame..

i looked at smanga and he was shocked and wanted to cry.. he gave me a signal to hand the phone to him.. i did...

him : good job mom.. atleast now i know what kind

of a woman you are..

her : smanga??

him : yep, its me...

her : smanga baby.. am really really sorry..

him : yah.. you didnt mean to do it right?? yah.. great stuff..

he hung up and gave me back my phone..

him : am sorry.. its just that i had believed what my mom said... it was hard to believe you..

me : yah.. i understand..

i went to his side and hugged him.. he cried..

as we were hugging, siya walked in.. he stood at the door and just looked...

after a while we broke the hug..

siya : about time.. yall have been hugging for days now..

me : also want a hug??

siya : dont start with me grootmahn..

we laughed..

me : huh... proper intro... siya, this is smanga, my son... son this is mr xulu..

they laughed...

siya : is this a way to brag bro...??

i laughed..

smanga : its good to know i have a funny father and uncle..

siya : warning though.. the rest of the family, they crazy...

me : dont be lying to my boy.. they great people..

siya : hahahah... anyway.. it would be nice if we could have a family dinner..

me : yah that would be great.. then you can meet my whole family..

siya : except for my parents..

smanga : yah.. i read you are the chiefs son.. and you next on the throne..

siya : the way you know so much about me, i swear its like you my son... you sure you not..

we laughed...

me : i am glad you managed to find your father and know how innocent he is in this matter..

smanga ; am also glad..

me : yah.. we could have guys night outs.. and know more about you..

he smiled...

me : thank god i have a decent guy to hang around with.. i wont be stuck with a gay like siya....

siya : want a kiss.??... (mwa! mwa!!)...

siya came close to me really trying to kiss me.. i pushed him back..

me : see?? see what i get to everyday??

smanga laughed...

smanga : owk love birds.. can i go back to work??

me : sure.. you may.. before siya starts kissing on

you too..

smanga : yah i better run..

he left...

me : am truely happy bro... i have a son..

siya : yah.. thats hella amazing..

me : yah... hella amazing..

siya : no more double sward.. no more "bad boys for life"... now we thriple sward... "goodboys for life"...

me : how about we end the bad boy squared tonight with some nice bad night...

siya : yah....

me ; am speaking strippers, girls, ladies.. whoooooo...

siya : yeah yeah....

me ; huh huh siya... remember you married, right.. so leave the ladies, girls, strippers to me.. the single one.. owk??

he mumbled something as we got out the office with his head facing down and i couldnt stop laughing.....

[12/14, 08:04] Zozaness: History

The villagegirl an the playboy: arranged marriage

110

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

****mbali****

i woke up.. went to the bathroom and freshened up

then cleaned the room, even nonhlanhla's side..
when i was done, i took out a book and read.. it was
an english novel book.. so i was studying in a way...
after a while nonhlanhla came in...

her : woooooooooow.. look who cleaned the whole
room...

me : mxm.. get out of here..

her : mom and dad are calling you..

me : am studying...

her : mbali please...

me : i said am studying...

her : mbali, you cant avoid mom and dad forever..

me : am not..

her : then go down...

me : akg... hai....

i got up left my books on the bed and went down...

so all this time since dad came back.. its always
been school, bedroom... thats it.. trust me am not

avoiding anyone.. i just need privacy thats all..

i got down and mom and dad were in the living room...

i went and sat down...

dad : mbali...

me : dad...

dad : i know you still hurting my baby and i get that... but you need to let it go.. i love you and thats what matters.. owk..

me : owk dad...

dad : good.. i know your mom made mistakes in life and we cant turn back the time.. it was something that happened once and by mistake you were conceived.. she doesnt know who the father is because she was drunk, young and having fun.. yes it was an embarrassing moment.. yes i got angry when i found out what she did because we were still dating... but we cant turn time, we cant go back... you need to be grateful that she didnt even for once thought about aborting you.. that she still kept you...

i looked down.. i was embarrassed that i was acting selfish..

dad : i know baby.. its really painful not to know your biological dad.. but am here nana.. am here...

my heart broke down.. tears streamed down my cheeks..

i stood up and went to hug them both as they were sitting next to each other...

me : am sorry mom.. am sorry dad... i just wasnt thinking...

dad : its owk nana.. we understand you...

mom : and we will never stop loving you...

i hugged them tight and shed some tear...

after a while uncle siya walked in..

siya : now this is what i call a happy family...

mom : we just glad that our mbali is back...

siya : great.. so weres my family??

mom : in the room...

siya : ohhh.. hai... let me go...

siya went to the room to his family...as he says...lol..

dad : you owk??

me : am great..

mom : you sure??

me : 100...

i smiled and hugged them again...

i then stood up..

me : am sorry once again.. am truely sorry...

mom : its owk baby...

i then left...

.

.

.

****mom****

me : phew... you think she bought that??

him : yah.. its the best we can come up with...

me : i hate lying.. its like lies after lies...

him : do you rather she knows that his father is a drug dealer who is currently in prison which will dig out your drug history or lie and say you had a one night stand with someone you dont know..??

me : **sigh**

him : thought as much..

siya then walked passed..

siya : i guess all is well now?

mom : yah.. all is sorted...

siya : did yall tell her about her father being a drug dealer??

i looked at kevin., then back at siya.. then we looked down..

siya : yall didnt right?? so which lie did you come up with?

mom : we said.....

siya : (interrupting).. actually no.. dont tell me.. i dont want to get involved..

mom : siyabonga....

siya : no thank you.. see yall later.. have a good day..

he left..

i looked at kevin and sighed...

.

.

.

****mbali****

my phone rang... i checked and it and it was milo...

me : hay milo...

him : hay mbali...

me : whats up??

him : nothing mahn.. just missing you..

me : lol.. you missing me.?? this is mbali.. tione.. not nadia...

him : hahahah.. i know that.. hao..

me : lol... owk..

him : dont you miss me??

me : nop..

him : wooooow.. really??

me : huh huh.. nop..

him : am hurt..

i laughed...

him : anyway... listen am throwing a house warming this weekend.. you up??

me : you trying to get me in trouble huh??

him : hahaha..

me : you want uncle siya moment episode 2??

him : hai.. dont go there bruh...

we laughed...

him : so does it mean like you not coming??

me : i will see..

him : owk.. you will let me know when you coming right??

me : yah will do..

him : deadline to let me know is friday becouse the party is saturday...

me : owk.. sure..

him : great.. so see you there..

me : thats if i will come..

him : hahaha.. sure..

i hung up and layed on the bed.. after a while someone banged the door.. this has to be one of my kids..

i opened and it was kuhle..

i left the door open becouse i knew the other 2 will follow...

after a while as kuhle was playing.. nompilo and nonhlanhla walked in..

nompilo : hay lil sis..

me : hay yall..

nonhlanhla : wanna go out?

me : go out??

nompilo : yah, as sisters.. go get some ice cream...

me : ice cream?? yummmmy... am i getting 2...??

nonhlanhla : i told you nompilo.. she is just a manipulator...

we all laughed...

me : 2 ice creams or am not going anywere...

they looked at each other then back at me..

i folded my arms and looked away pulling an attitude...

nompilo : owk owk.. 2 ice creams..

nonhlanhla : but mbali, why 2 ice creams??

me : vanila and chocolate..

nonhlanhla : why not buy one with both flavours..??

me : no.. the vanila one must be a cone, with strawberry syrip and sweet sprinkles.. the chocolate one must be in a cup with chocolate sprinkles..

nompilo : such drama...

me : i know..

we all laughed...

we stood up and took the kids down...

we actually took the kids to mom and dad in the living room...

mom : and whats all this??

nompilo : the sisters (pointing at all us 3) are going for some ice cream.. so we cant take the kids..

dad : are the parents not allowed to join??

nonhlanhla : no dad.. only the sisters..

me : yes.. the 3 ninjas...

they laughed..

we left....

[12/14, 08:06] Zozaness: 111

.

.

.

- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .

****wednesday****

****ayanda****

so we were playing a match today.. the match is over.. i must say it was a hard play but we won by 2:0...

so we waiting for the school transport...

we at the grounds of the school we played against.. i was with beast, small and micheal.. we always just 3.. but we had some other guys too..

we were playing music.. gukhala amapiano.. we

dancing..

the guys from this school came and decided to challenge us..

beast : represent us boy.. please ntwana...

me : hai jho.... nah...

small : please bruh..

i looked at him and just looked away.. the guys just love putting me in the spot..

me : sho owk..

the song played and they started dancing...

as they were done i moved in the circle.. the circle was now full.. the whole soccer guys and netball girls were there. even the once that came just to support..

i danced.. there were cheers and all..

after the dancing we saluted each other.. and they gave me the hand..

guy : you got it mahn.. i give it you...

me : thanks..

my phone then rang.. it was queen...

me : Queen??

her : King??

me : how are you??

her : am great.. how was the match..

me : it was amazing.. we won...

her : ohhhhhh, woow.. amazing... congratulations
babe...

me : thanks babe..

her : pleasure..

me : i miss you..

her : i miss you more... wish i was with you this
moment...

me : i also wish that.. would be kissing those lips
right now..

her : hahaha.. usho??

me : yep...

her : owk hubby.. got to go owk.. love you..

me : love you too....

she hung up and i turned back bumping into small and beast..

beast : i love you (imitating me)...

they laughed...

me : yall guys should be journalists..

they laughed again...

we walked and we were aproached by some girls from this school..

girl 1 : hay guys..

us : sho..

girl 2 : huh.. ayanda, right??

me : yah.. thats me..

girl 1 : huh.. our girl is really crushing on you..

me : and who is your girl??

girl 1 : that one sitting over there..(pointing at her)....

me : oh...

she looked cute... but i wasnt interested...

girl 2 : so, you gonna go talk to her..??

me : sure...

i went to her...

me ; hay..

her : hai..

me : mhm.. am ayanda, you??

her : ntombi.,..

me : right ntombi.. listen, you very cute.. nice body..
yah very nice girl..

her : thanks..you look handsome yourself..

me : thanks.. but huh.. i have a girlfriend.. i love her
so much that i dont have love left for another
woman... am sorry..

her ; huh.. ohhhh...

me : yah.. am really sorry but i cant date you..

her : ohh.. your girlfriend must be very lucky to have

you..

me : yah.. huggy??

her : sho...

i hugged her and then smiled and left her there..

beast : now thats the masterpiece i know.. the player..

me : what you talking about?? i didnt ask her out..

small : what??

me : yah.. i am serouse about dark chocolate.. now please.. let me be..

i left them there as the transport came..

.

.

.

****mbali****

i was playing games on my phone with nonhlanhla fantasising about ayanda...

then my game froze and a call came in.. its smanga..

me : hay...

him ; hay babe..

me : so, holiday finish??

him : what do you mean??

me : you took days without calling me.. i tried calling but you ignored my calls..

him : you sure i ignored them??

me : then what did you do since you didnt ignore them.. becouse your phone was ringing unanswered.. and you always answer my calls..

him ; sorry babe.. i just came across new developments in my life..

me : what developments??

him : how about you visit me tommorow..

me : mhm.. owk.. i will.. if you promise to cook lunch..

him : home made??

me : yep..

him : woow, i really suck at cooking hai.. but for you

i will....

me : great stuff... will be there..

him : owk, one thing..

me : what??

him : i have a dinner date on friday night.. i am going to meet somepeople.. and i kinda told them about you.. so you wanna come with me...

me : huh sorry babe... i too have a dinner date with my family.,... i cant.. we expecting a guest...

him : who?? president??

me : hahaha lol... no babe.. apearantly its someone important..

him : mhm owk.. well mabye next time...

me : yah, mabye next time...

him ; owk.. i miss you..

me : i miss you too babe...

him : i miss laying next to you..

me : dont start with me..

him : what?? am just saying..

me : mxm..

him : hahaha.. owk.. goodnight..

me : goodnight..

we took a while before hanging up then i did...

nonhlanhla : you are so inlove..

me : yes i am... i love him...

her : really now... lets hope smanga wont play you..

me : nah he wont.. i mean he wanted me to go dinner with him to meet some people.. i think his family..

her : thats great..

me : yah.. i know..

her : well, he does look like a decent guy..

me : found true love in grade 10..

her : lol... hahahaha..

me : what about ayanda?? love him??

her : to the moon and back..

me : so, when are you going to give him the treasure?

her : eash.. i dont know hay.. mabye on our matric dance night...

me : mhm.. talk about romantic..

her : mhm...

we laughed..

mom came in..

mom : yes gossipers.. dinner is ready..

us : owk..

we droped what we were doing and went to the kitchen

[12/14, 08:06] Zozaness: The villagegirl an the playboy: arranged marriage

112

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

****friday morning****

****smangaliso****

i just came back from fetching mbali from the park..
we got in the house and lunch was ready..

i just made chessy russian rolls.. dont look at me, i
told her i cant cook.. i even got this receipt from
youtube "tasty"...

me : make yourself at home..

her : thanks.. so were is sphe??

me : he went out..

her : mhm.. owk..

she sat down as we viewed for a movie to watch..

she chose some chickflick and i watched...

as we watched we had some popcorns and snacks..

we ate and watched and had fun..

after i brought the food and placed it on the table..

her : did you make this??

me : yep.. got the receipt from tasty..

her : serouse??

me : yes, am serouse...

her ; owk.. lets see what we have here...

she took one and gave it a bite..

her : mhm.. mhm... (mouthful) amazing...

me : i know..

she giggled...

we sat down eating and having small chats.. we

alsoi had drinks on the side..

after eating we lay on the couch.. her head on my lap
and me laying back..

me : babe...

her : yes??

me : i have some troubling news to tell you..

her : what??

she said this sitting up and looking at me..

me : i have found my dad..

her : really?? (excited).. am so happy for you..

she came to hug me and kissed me all over my
face...

her : so thats who you going to have dinner with??

me : yah.. and i told him about you..thats why i
wanted you to come with me..

her : i feel so guilty now.. but sadly i really cant..

me : no its owk.. there would be other dinners..

her : sure..

me : and theres another thing...

her : what?? (excited)..

me ; i have a daughter..

her smile faded and she looked at me...

her : what??

me : yah.. i just knew few days ago..

her : you have a daughter??

me : yes, shes 8 months old..

her : and you only found out days ago??

me : yes... the mother is the girl i dated back in jhb...

her : eash.. ohhh..

me : you not angry??

her : its not like you cheated.. so its cool...

me : really??

her : yah... oh and i have to go..

me : baby..

her : i have to.. i need to prepare for dinner tonight

with my family..

me : oh.. owk..

she stood up..

even though she says shes not angry, i think actually she is.. because why would she just change mood all of a sudden??

but i let him be..

we took a taxi and it droped us at the park..

her : bye smanga...

me : just like that??

her : what??

me : you know what its owk...

her : shap...

me : owk...

she turned and left.. i watched her go.. then i also took a taxi back..

.

.

.

****mbali****

i got home and there was no time to even go sobe about what i just heard...

nonhlanhla ; were have you been?? we need more hands... go help in the kitchen..

mom : yho.. if mbali takes over the kitchen, we will see smoke.. literaly..

we laughed...

siya : guys, bongani is coming with a guest today, so please.. let everything be perfect..

nompilo : hai papas, wena you speaking of perfect but you just standing there calling the shots..

siya : yaz woman.. when i help, you say i am messing up.. when i leave you say am not helping.. what should i do then..

dad : true.. we should just disapear then...

we all laughed..

after a while we were all done...

mom : finally we are done.. so now can we all go bath and smell nice for this guest..

me : you would swear we meeting a president..

we laughed...

then we all left and we went to our rooms to freshen up...

we showered and got into our best dresses...

me : nonhlanhla, how do i look??

her : great.. mina??

me : you always looking great girl..

her : hahaha.... so how was the meeting with smanga??

me : mxm... well it was great in the begining.. untill he told me about him having a daughter..

her : what??

me : yep.. and mina girl, i dont think am ready to play stepmom..

her : jho... thats heavy hay..

me : i know..

her : hai.. mabye its not even his child..

me : you think??

her : yah... exes come with this "its your baby" trap to have your man..

me : eash.. you think??

her : yebo...

me : well lets hope, no ex comes and claims ayanda..

her ; i kill..

i laughed...

me : its time lets go..

we went down and sat in our places around the table..

everyone was really looking amazing..

we heard the car outside...

me : finally the president is here...

everyone laughed...

mom : hai suka wena mbali..

they knocked and walked in...

my smiled faded away as i saw who the guest was..
we locked eyes and i could see he was also
confused....

i looked at nonhlanhla shocked and she looked at
me aswell..

i kept my eyes fixed at him as they approached...

bongani : good evening everyone.. this is my guest..
smangaliso.. my son...

i opened my eyes even wider when he mentioned
that its his son.. like SON??

smangaliso not only has a daughter but he is my
uncles SON??.....

[12/14, 08:07] Zozaness: continuation

.

.

.

- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .

****Mbali****

me : smangaliso ?

smanga : mbali?

everyone looked at us wondering how we know each other...

bongani : wait!! so you 2 have met before??

uncle bongani looked at me and looked at smanga..

i was feeling hot, like someone put the heater on... i also felt nervous and felt like i would faint...

so i moved away and ran to my room.. i locked myself in my room and threw myself on my bed... only God knew how i was feeling at that moment.. i

felt sick, dirty, sad, angry, confused, dizzy, upset, frustrated and all those emotions..

.

.

.

****nonhlanhla****

it was bad.. just when i thought all will be back to normal, then BOOM.. uncle bongani has a son, and its smangaliso, mbali's boyfriend... kurough...

mom : i will go check on her..

dad : yah.. please..

mom went...

siya : owwwwwwk.. what just happened??

bongani : my question exactly.. smanga, whats wrong??

smanga : huh... she... she is the special lady i wanted you to meet...

uncle, siya, dad : WHAT??

smanga : yes...

dad : let me get this straight.. you were dating mbali??

smanga : yes sir..

mom then came back..

mom : shes not opening for me...

dad : this is a mess...

mom : what?? whats a mess??

siya : smanga is mbali's boyfriend...

mom : what??

dad : yep...

bongani : can we have a private talk as guys.. please..

mom : ohk.. nonhlanhla, lets go try and convince mbali to open for us...

.

.

.

****smangaliso****

this is a whole mess..

i dont know how to feel at this moment, i mean my girlfriend that i love so much has turned out to be my family member...

so am standing there with my father, siya and the other coloured guy, am guessing hes mbali's father...

so they direct me to sit and they sit looking at me..

bongani : am sure this wont be a big problem... i mean mbali is still young and has a huge future ahead.. so she will find someone else and forget about this whole mess... how about that??

smanga : you suggesting that mbali and i break up??

dad : son, you a great person, and am sure you know what right and whats wrong..

i looked down..

siya : well it shouldnt be hard right?? unless yall already went under the sheets...

bongani : nah.. mbali wouldnt.. were would she find the time??

i kept quite not saying a thing.... i was battling in finding out whether to lie and say we were never intimate or to just tell the truth...

dad : well smanga?

me : ba!!

dad : did yall go that far??

me :.....

siya : ohhh no.. you did, right??

i looked down...

siya : grootman.. its bad...

bongani : yah. its bad..

dad : yho... but when though... i mean mbali is either at her friends place or here at home.. she never slept out...

siya : wait?? the time mbali was missing for 4 days, was she with you??

smanga :..... (i nodded)...

siya : ohhhhh.... so this guy milo, he was covering for

you huh??

smanga : huh??

siya : the milo guy..??

smanga : no.. i dont know anyone named milo..

bongani : oh you mean the guy that brought mbali home the other day?? ohhh..

i didnt say anything.. for a moment i got a little angry for the fact that mbali is going out sleeping over at guys places.. really??

dad ; this is a mess... a whole mess..

siya : tell me about it...

we sat in silence for a while...

.

.

.

****mbali****

so i have opened..

nonhlanhla : mbali??

me :

mom : baby, listen.. we are sorry...

nonhlanhla : yah.. i mean you didnt know that smanga was your cousin so dont beat yourself up about it...

mom : yes baby.. and now dont cry..

me : you dont understand mom.. i love smangaliso.. i love him so much.. even though he told me that he has a child, but i still wanna be with him..

mom : no babe.. its just a crush owk.. you will eventually find love..

me : so you saying that we should break up??

mom : you cant be dating your cousin...

i looked at her and just looked away...

its crazy how life can be so cruel at you.. i mean i gave my all to smanga, my heart, my innocence and my whole only to find out that he is my cousin...

my life right now is a reality show at its best..

me : may i be alone please..

mom : baby..listen..

me : please mom...

my eyes were getting watery...

nonhlanhla : lets give her space mom...

they left.. i threw my face on the pillow and cried in
the pillow...

LIFE....

[12/14, 08:09] Zozaness: Go to Home

The villagegirl an the playboy: arranged marriage

113

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

- .
- .
- .
- .

****months later****

****mbali****

these past months have been hell to me...

smangaliso has distanced himself from me.. well lets just say he went back to jhb.. he left a month after we found out we were cousins.. and untill today he is still there..

i last spoke to smanga the friday we found out that we cousins.. i have been miserable.. i mean this guy took myt virginity.. but then am cool now.. i guess life goes on.. but that doesnt mean i have healed, am still in the process...

so today is saturday.. mom and dad went back to work, nompilo, siya and the kids went back to the village and nonhlanhla went to saturday classes.. so am here all alone..

i was very bored and i missed smanga..

i had cleaned and done everything i should do... now am sitting in my room busy on my phone..

i scroll down my news feed and i see a new post by smangaliso.. it was a pic of him with his daughter and a lady (must be his baby mama)... he wrote "bonding session"..

the picture kinda hurt me in a way, he seemed happy.. maybe smanga has forgotten about me, maybe he has moved on...

i reacted with a heart and commented.. " nice pic cuz" ..

i then logged off and went down to get myself some snacks and go watch a movie...

after a while my phone rang...

it was milo.....

me : yes boy..

him : come on, am 5 years older then you and you calling me boy...

me : hahaha..... mxm.. owk grandpa..

him : hahahaha... u see now..

me : hahahaha... sorry ke...

him : anyway how are you??

me : great you??

him : am awesome... so what you doing??

me : just chilling alone at home..

him : are you bored??

me : yah.. worse then bored even..

him : owk.. how about we catch some ice cream??

me : since when do you know that i love ice cream??

him : since the day you called me crying and asked me to come take you for ice cream....

me : lol... i even forgot about that day..

him : wooow.. darling, small moments should be cherrished and always remembered...

me : why should i do that??

him : to remember one day when am no more..

me : hahah.. wow.. talking about death already??

him : haha... owk well are you down for some ice cream and a walk in the park??

me : sure, why not... aslong as you are buying...

him : sure.. i am buying... now get ready am on my way..

me : sure...

i hung up..

i then wore my snickers, put on my jacket and comb my hair in a bun...

after a while my phone rang again.. its milo...

me : hay again..

him : is it safe to park infront of your home??

me : yah... uncle siya, nompilo and the kids went back to kzn, parents went to work..

him : owk.. well lets throw a party then...

me : hahaha.. uyabeda

him : hahah.. lol just trying my luck..

me : you a party animal neh??

him : isnt it obvious.. expecially this season..
kusazongiwa..

me : lol...

him : owk, am 5 minutes away from your home, so
please come out..

me : owk..

him : shap..

me : shap..

i hung up and went back to my room.. i wore my
snickers, put on my jacket... i took my bagback..

i then locked all doors and gates and went out.. then
i put the key under the stones at the corner of the
house.. then i made a voicenote to nonhlanhla
explaining were the key was becouse i know she is
gonna get home before me..

i then got in the car and we drove away...

him : looking good huh??

me : thanks, you not bad yourself..

him : am a snack hay.. i know..

me ; hahahaha... woooooow, how does nadia deal with a donut like you??

him : (clears throat and fakes laugh)... yah..

me : o....w.....k... whats up??

him ; mhm??

me : i mention nadia and you start getting off, whats up??

him ; well lets just say i cought nadia cheating on me....

me : what??

him : yah... there was a nice even at the club and i couldnt go... but mk forced me to go.. so i decided to go on last minute, around 10pm.... when i got there my friends told me that they saw nadia drunk with some guy.. i was mad, so i looked around the club for her.. after a while i saw her kissing that guy on the couch..

me : am sorry...

him : its owk.. i mean its life hay..

me :.....

him ; yah.. so at this moment am avoiding thinking about her or even talking about her...

me : yah.. i get the feeling...

him : i guess you still hanging on smanga...

me : yah.. also the chapter i want to close..

him : yah.... oh we here..

me : cant wait to have ice cream, it helps me forget...

he laughed and did a funny face...

we parked at the park and went to get ice cream..

me : hay mam, can i have the chocolate flavour with chocolate sprinkles..

they agreed..

him : i will get the same please..

they nodded..

her : cup or cone??

me : cup..

him : same..

she nodded and went to make it..

me : copy cat...

him : i just wanna know which ice cream hits the spot.. and you always get this one so i wanted to try it..

me : hahaha.. lol..

they gave us the ice creams... we went to sit on the grass not far away from the car...

him : its really amazing.. it really hits the spot..

me : hahah.. i told you... by the time the ice cream melts in youe mouth, you forget everything...

him : i feel that..

we laughed...

we ate ice cream as we made some jokes and laughed..

after eating, he first lay on his back and looked up.. i
layed on my back too and placed my head on his
arm.. he then started playing with my hair...

me : may i ask you something??

him : sure..

me : its about nadia..

him :..... owk...

me : was nadia your soulmate??

him : (smiles).. firstly do you know whats a
soulmate??

me : isnt it someone who completes you??

him : just completes you??

me : yah.. thats what i think...

him : owk..

me : owk, then whats a soulmate to you??

him : its huh.... its like a bestfriend but more. its the
one person in the world who knows you better then
anyone else. someone who makes you a better

person. actually they dont make you a better person, you do that yourself because they inspire you. a soulmate is someone who you carry with you forever. its the one person who knew you and accepted you. believed in you before anyone else did, even though noone else would.. no matter what happens you will always love them. nothing can ever change that.

me :.....**sniff**

him : you crying??

me : sorry.. there way you were saying it.. shows you really hurt..

him : now back to your question... i believed that she was my soulmate, i still love her, i still care about her.. i still think about her..

me : but??

him : she doesnt inspire me to be a better person, she is not someone i want to carry forever.. well i just realised that now... she is like me, she is no different.. i think thats why she did what she did...

me :..... owk.. enough about nadia.. i see its

depressing you...

him : (smiles).. yah.. lets get you depressed...

me : ohhh boy...

him : so, how do you feel about smanga??

me : i have been with him, we have been together for this entire time...

him : so what happened??

me : well we found out that we cousins...

him : ouch... really??

me : yah... just to look at him mattered, just to smell him when i get a chance mattered, give him a hug, when i hugged him theres nothing else there, i just feel like am floating, when he kisses me, i feel like theres nothing that can hurt me. when he stands next to me, breaths, his cologn.. its just unexplainable..

him : mhm... i feel you...

me : yah.. bro.. love got us twisted..

him : yah.. bro.. it has...

me : i feel like am dead..

him : yah.. the feeling of being stuck because you fell inlove with the wrong person...

me : you know... when you have a genuine, genuine feeling that you get from somebody and you keep making that person your source of hapiness.. they become your drug...

him : true.. and smanga and nadia became our drug...

me : yah.. now we addicted..

him : and guess whats our rehab...

us : ice cream....

him : this calls for another round of ice cream..

me : true.. but this time we getting vanilla ice cream, with strawberry syrup and sweet sprinkles..

him : does it hit the spot like this one..

me : yep...

him : lets go then..

[12/14, 08:09] Zozaness: The villagegirl an the

playboy: arranged marriage

114

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

nonhlanhla

so it was 4pm and i just came out of classes..

this wouldve been better if my parents had allowed me to stay at the hostel.. i wouldnt have to worry uncle bongani with transport every saturday...

me : see yall on monday guys..

they said goodbye.. those were my classmate..

i dialed uncle bongani..

him : nhlanhla??

me : hay uncle.. how far are you??

him : ohhh shoot.. i havnt even finished at work yet.. but listen i will come pick you up owk?

me : owk uncle..

him : yah... i will be there in a few minues...

me : owk.. will be waiting...

he hung up and i went to sit down outside the gate..

after a while i felt someone tapping my shoulder, it was ayanda.. my king...

me : hao ayanda... were....? were do you come from??

him ; somewere...

me : were?? because you were not in class...

him : well, yes i didnt attend the classes but i was with the gents at the upper grounds..

me : so you were in school, but not in class??

him : yah..

me : i see your eyes are low and red.. you have been smoking right??

him : mhm... yah...

me : mara ayanda... you do science, you know what tobacco does to your body.. but you still smoking..

him : well, mrs medical doctor.. can we not talk about that now.. i miss you..

me : mxm.. dont come next to me smelling like weed.. i hate that smell..

him : i know you do.. thats why i bought my lotion, perfume and halls with me..

me : mhm... hai ayanda.. so how did you know i was here??

him : i saw our classmates going in the hostel so i ran because i knew you either here waiting for your transport or you have already left..

me : wow.. (smiled)...

we sat down and talked, flirted, playing lovey dovey, joking and laughing..

after a while uncle bongani was still not here...

me ; uncle bongani is taking time, plus am hungry now..

him ; lets go buy some food..

me : well what i want is far..

him : what do you want??

me : bunny...or fries..

him : owk.. the shop is rather far though..

me : i know...

him : well owk, lets go.. call your uncle and tell him to

pick you up there..

me : yah..

i dialed uncle bongani again..

him ; nhlanhla.. baby am running late, am sorry.. but i will be done in a minute, i will tell when i have arrived...

me : owk no problem, but please fetch me at the bunny shop, way before the school..

him : which shop??

me : the one were we bought fries the other day with mbali..

him : ohh that one??

me : yah..

him : owk... who you going with?

me : my friend..

when i said that ayanda gave me that "what??" look...

i giggled...

him : owk..

i hung up and we went...

we got to the shop, had our bunnies, and ate.. he was munching...

him : i was really hungry..

me : i could see that..

him ; hahaha... these bunnies are nice though..

me : thats why i was craving them...

him : whatever...

he raised his eyebrow and smiled looking away.. i looked at him and went in front of his face and stole a kiss from him..

him : an then ?

me : nothing...

i smiled..

he came close to me and pulled me close..

him : how a proper kiss..

he said this already planting the kiss...

we french kissed and guess what uncle bongani

pulled up and pressed the honk...

i pulled out quickly looking at the car...

uncle bongani just looked at me... i shyly looked at ayanda and moved away.. he was also embarrassed and moved away...

i got in the car...

me ; hay uncle..

him :.....

owk hes angry...

after a long drive we got home and he got in the house with me.. i was getting really hot because i knew he was about to tell mom and dad about this..

we got in the house and i greeted and went to my room..

mbali was studying.. which is a miracle..

me : you studying??

her : yah.. i decided to leave boys and parties and just focus on school..

me ; woooooow, great...

her : yah.. so please dont disturb..

me : well, can i please just disturb you a little...

her : what??

me : uncle bongani saw me kissing ayanda..

her : NO...

me : yes... and i think he is here to tell mom and dad...

her : woooooow... you in trouble sis...

me : i know...

before i even finished, mom called me..

her : oh oh.. shes about to give yall hell..

me : well wish me luck...

she smiled and gave me big eyes.. i sighed and went to the living room...

me : ma!!

mom : sit down..

i sat down...

mom : nonhlanhla, you do know that grade 12 is not childs play neh??

me : yes ma..

mom : and you do know that this is not the time to be playing around with boys and friends right??

me : yes ma..

mom : so this boy your seeing, it has to stop...

me :.....

mom : he doesnt love you, he is just using you.. i mean what does purpils like you know about love?? so please owk?

me :.....

mom : my child, i know you think you love this guy.. but truth be told he just wants what is in your panties..

dad : (clears throat)...

mom : so please focus owk... and leave that boy alone.. end things now rather than later..

my heart was sore, it was painful.. i just listened and agreed just so i dont make a big deal out of this.. when she was done, i felt like crying, so i decided to take a walk...

i went out and walked to the spaza down the street to buy myself sweets..

i got to the spaza, bought some sweets and came back..

on the way my phone rang.. its ayanda..

me : hay..

him : you sound so down.. are you owk...??

me : yah..

him : Queen, talk to me...

me : can i ask you something??

him : sure.. intoni??

me : well.....

immediatly a car pulled over and i was grabed...

i screamed as my phone fell on the ground.. the guys

at the shop tried to help but a gun was fired..

i screamed and cried so much that i didnt know what to do.. the guys kept telling me to shut up and hitting me..

i kept screaming and crying...

after a while they stoped the car and pulled me out...

i couldnt notice the place, but it was alot of trees and it was dark.. i was still crying but now my tears were dry, and my throat was also dry...

***narrator**

nonhlanhla tried fighting back and escaping but the power of 3 men couldnt overpower her.. they dragged her further in and one by one they raped her.. she was just there trying to fight back, screaming, shouting but all that was no use as no one helped her..

after the last guy raped her.. one guy pulled out a gun and shot nonhlanhla...

BOOM... the 3 guys then ran away leaving her laying, bleeding on the cold area alone.

[12/14, 08:10] Zozaness: The villagegirl an the
playboy: arranged marriage

115

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

****2 days later****

****nurse Gloria****

i got to the hospital to check on the lady i found laying on the street next to a small forest dumping site...

the view was disgusting.. the lady lay there helplessly, whoever did that was really disgusting and truly didnt have a heart... how does one shoot a person cold heartedly and leave them in the cold to die?? such brutally...

i signed in work at the hospital and went to the ward the lady was in..

i found the doctor in there...

me : hay doc.. hows it going with the patient..??

him : we seeing a little progress.. i must say gloria, you really found her in the luckiest times... if she stayed out there for any more minutes, she wouldve died..

me : i also thank God for making me late.. its only when am late that i risk my life and take the short cut to the rank...

him : well just promise to stay away from that site..

rather late then risk your life.. but am not saying be late...

me : hahaha.. i promise....

him : so, still the police have not reported anyone missing??

me : well, not yet.. but there are quite some girls who are missing that are posted on facebook..

him : any pic of this lady??

me : no... nothing yet..

him : well, i think its time we reported to the police about this ... mabye they would help locate the family to her..

me ; i think that might be the good thing to do.. i mean am sure her parents are very worried.. and who knows how long shes been missing...

him : true... i will get the receptionist to do it.. meanwhile you can have a moment with her if you want...

me : thank you...

the doctor left and i sighed brushing her head...

" i dont know who you are, i dont know were you from.. but what i do know is that you human, you deserve life, equality, respect, love and all those stuff.. death was not meant for you thats why i found you just in time... the world still wants to show you your purpose.. i dont know why the people who did this, did it.. but it doesnt matter.. what matters is you made it out..."

i brushed her forehead and kissed her...

i then held her hand... as i let go of her hand she squeezed my hand..

me : excuse me mam.. can you hear me??

she tried speaking but i could tell that she was in pain..

i ran to call the doctor and came in with him...

he checked her and examined her...

me : she ok??

doc : yes, she is doing good.. she just needs some taking care of.. should i trust you with that??

me : sure doc.. i mean am a nurse after all..

doc : good, i will have your shifts changed.. she will be your patient to take care of...

me : thank you doc.. am honoured....

he patted me on the shoulders and left...

i went to the lady and gave her a glass of water with a straw...

she drank and then layed back...

her ; were?? how??

me : shhhh. its owk.. you safe, you in a hospital...

her : a...a....ayanda....ayanda....

me : Ayanda?? is that your name??

she shook her head...

me : ohhh ayanda is someone you know?? like a family member??

she nodded...

me : so you want me to find ayanda for you??

she nodded again...

me : owk, i can do that.. but do you have like contacts or address??

she shook her head...

her : school... peters high school... ayanda..

me : i should go to peters high school to look for ayanda??

she nodded...

her : grade 12... ayanda ndamase...

me : oh owk.. i think i have every info i need to find the person..

her : today...

me : i dont think i might be able to go today.. peters high school is very far..

her : please...

she had tears in her eyes...

me : ****sigh**** oh owk.. owk...

she smiled at me but the smile didnt last for long,....

her : thank you..

me : wait!! who should i say is looking for him??

her : nonhlanhla..

me : nonhlanhla??

she nodded...

she then closed her eyes and tears flowed out her eyes...

i called another nurse to check on her as i went to the school...

doing this is not part of my job discription... but the tears of another woman becomes the tears of my own....

so around my lunch time, i asked one of my friends (also a nurse) to drive me at the school.. i had to promise to give her lunch every day for 2 weeks for her to agree...

we drove and got to the school..

me : i will be back, just few minutes..

her : be fast girl.. you still have food to buy for me..

me : hahah sure...

i went out and got to the schools reception..

me : goodmorning mam.... (it was around 11pm)..

her : goodmorning, how may i help you??

me : i am here to see ayanda ndamase, grade 12...

her : oh owk, for what if i may ask??

me : his sister or cousin has lended in hospital so we kinda need him for something...

her : owk... please wait a minute..

she made an intercom and called him..

later a young boy entered and went to the reception...

i wasnt sure he was the one but he was pointed to me..

he came and i stood up also going to him..

me : ayanda ndamase??

him : yes ma! thats me... do i know ma??

me : no.. i am nurse gloria.. i work at the hospital... a lady asked me to call you...

him : what lady??

me : a lady by the name nonhlanhla...

him : nonhlanhla?? were is she?? is she owk??

me : shes fine.. she was found shot and dumped at the dumping site.. but shes owk now and pleading to see you..

him : owk.. can you take me there now..

me : sure.. i will sign you out...

i spoke to the principle and indeed they let me sign him out..

i took him to the car and we drove back to the hospital..

i took the boy to the ladies ward...

Ayanda

i got in the ward and saw nonhlanhla laying on the bed..

i ran to her..

him : Queen?? Queen?? baby...

nurse : wait!! yall are dating??

him : huh.. yes.. shes my woman...

nurse : wow.. she must really love you.. to ask for you instead of her mom or dad... thats wow..

him : hahah.. i love her even more.. i was so worried when she didnt attend yesterday and today.. expecially becouse her phone was always off.. and mbali, her lil sister also have been not coming to school...

nurse : i will leave yall to it..

she left.. i held nonhlanhla's hand..

she slightly looked at me

her : you came..

me : for you.. i will always be here...

her : did i tell you that you look so handsome in school clothing??

me : hahaha.. well you look so beautiful in hospital gowns.

her : hahah (stops becouse of pain)...

me : easy babe.. take it easy..

her : water...

i helped her drink the water through the straw....

her : thank you...

me : sure... so what happened??

her :

she looked away and cried...

me : Queen...

her : ayanda, i... i... cant.. we...

me : what is it baby...??

her : i love you...(teary).. but.. am not.. am not (cries).

me : Queen.. i love you too.. and i will never stop loving you.. owk??

her : ayanda i was.... i was.... (cries)... i cant do this...
i am good enough for you.. you deserve... better...
am sorry... but i am not a girl for you... you dont
deserve me.. am dirty..

me : rubbish.... dont you ever think so low about
yourself.. you damn have a high value and dont you

forget that... you good enough for me..

her : you dont understand ayanda.. i.....

me : i dont give a damn what you did, what happened and why you feel like you not good enough for me..

you my woman nonhlanhla, i love you.. so if you thinking of leaving me, rather you kill me because am not going anywere..

her :.....

me : i love you Queen, i dont know what happened but all will be owk.. because am here...

she looked at me and cried even more.. i sat next to her and kissed her forehead, lips and hands...

me : we are about to wright finals.. then we will be done with school.. we will go to varsity and after that we will get married, and have many kids... owk...

she nodded still teary...

i smiled and layed on her hand as i looked in her eyes and whipping her tears as more just poured out her eyes.

[12/14, 08:11] Zozaness: Home

The villagegirl an the playboy: arranged marriage

116

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

****mbali****

3 days and still no word from the police or anyone....

i am in my room right now, my eyes are swallon, am looking at nonhlanhlas bed... "i know you gonna

come back sis... you will never leave us behind"...

i smile alone and smangas call came through...

wow.. so he decided to call me today.. really??

i picked up his call but didnt say a word...

me :.....

him : mbali??

me : am listening...

him : huh.. can we meet up??

me : no.....

him : please...

me : no....

him : i know you angry and you every right to be... but
i want us to talk...

me : are we not talking??

him : like face to face...

me : whats wrong talking on the phone??

him : mbali please..

me : are you done??

him : mbali... please just hear me out...

me : listen, i dont have the energy... my sister is missing at this moment so my energy should be on finding her not entertaining you...

him : wait!! nonhlanhla is missing??

me : am hanging up...

him : mbali please.. please i beg you...

me : that wont help, i have already made up my mind...

him :

me : i take it you done...

i hung up and just stared in space... after a while i got a facebook notification... it was from facebook from ayanda ndamase..

what would ayanda want??

well i logged in and found that it was a friend request.. i accepted and i saw i had a message.. i opened it..

it was ayanda...

.

.

.

****text conversation****

him : hay...

me : hay..

him : hud??

me : great you??

him : am good.. mbali, i know were nonhlanhla is...

me : what?? where??

him : shes in hospital, appearantly she got shot...

me : what? nonono.. will she be alright??

him : yes.. she will be fine..

me : but... how do know??

him : she asked a nurse to come fetch me from school yesterday.. she has been unconcouse for 2

days and woke up yesterday...

me : so the first thing she asked for when she woke up is you??

him : that does not matter, i just wanted to tell yall that she is safe...

me : owk...

i logged off and ran to the living room...

nompilo and siya were supposed to come back yesterday but they coming back tommorow.. its crazy.. it has only been like a month or 2 since they left and already theres a crisses...

this family is really cursed..

i ran in the living room where mom, dad and uncle bongani were sitting...

me : (clears throat)... mhm mom, dad, uncle bongani?? i have some good news and bad news...

bongani : what is it..??

me : good news is that nonhlanhla is safe...

mom stood up and looked at me with open eyes...

mom : what??

me : nonhlanhla is alive and safe...

dad : who told you?? did she call you??

me : no.. ayanda told me...

mom : so she actually ran to ayanda after i specifically told her to stay away from that boy??? kodwa baba do you see that this boy is not good.. i mean why is he telling us now?? after nonhlanhla has been at his house for days now? you know what, bring his numbers, let me give him a piece of my mind..

me : no ma! its not like that..

dad : relax honey...

mom : no.. am not gonna relax.. we are here worried sick and not able to eat or sleep and yena shes having fun with his no good boyfriend of hers.. i will not allow that behaviour in this house.. thats my daughter..

dad : sbongile..

mom : dont sbongile me.. now it looks like we taking

the cops for a joke because we reported her missing without thinking that maybe she might be by this ayanda..

me : mom.. shes in hospital..

they all looked at me shocked...

bongani : what??

me : she is in hospital, she was unconscious for 2 days and woke up yesterday.. ayanda didnt know nothing about this.. nonhlanhla didnt go to ayanda..

dad : if she didnt go to ayanda then how does ayanda know where she is?? and how did she end up there??

me : when she woke up the first thing she requested was to see ayanda.. so she sent a nurse to fetch ayanda from school..

mom : what?? thats a lie.. why would she ask for ayanda instead of a family member??

me : i dont know.. i mean she couldve asked for me because we all go to the same school but she didnt, she specifically asked for ayanda. and what got her

there was a bullet..

bongani : she was shot??

me : yes..

bongani : but were was she shot..?? becouse we didnt hear gunshots the day she went missing...

we all went silent for a minute...

mom : my baby called ayanda instead of any of us??

we didnt say anything.. we just looked at her as she cried...

bongani : i hate to say this but we might have underesteemated the love she had for that boy...

dad : what if she wanted to go to his house that day and on the way she got shot.??

bongani : yah, that would explain it...

dad : so did he say which hospital??

me : no.. i forgot to ask, but i will ask him right away...

dad : please do.. we need to go there right now...

i logged in and asked ayanda which hospital..

he told me and i told them... they prepared themselves and we got in the car and drove to the location...

.

.

.

****nonhlanhla****

i was in my room with ayanda when the police walked in....

detective : good morning mam.. my name is detective adams

me : good morning detective adams..

detective : may i ask you some questions??

me : sure...

they looked at ayanda....

ayanda : ohh, i will be outside..

me : no please... i would like him to stay please...

detective : owk..

ayanda came to sit next to me holding my hand...

detective : i am told by nurse gloria that she found you at the dumping site around east area... do you perhaps know how you got there??

me : mhm..well..i had a argument with my parents.. so i went out the spaza shop to get some air and also buy some sweets... then on my way back, i received a call from ayanda.. i answered the call and before i even ended the call, a car pulled over and a man pulled me in the car closing my mouth.. the people at the shop tried to help but the men pulled a gun and shot.. they drove with me in the car, all i could do was cry and scream... after a while they pulled me out and threw me on the ground...(starts crying)... as i was on the ground.. one by one... they...(cries)... they.... they.. (cries harder)...

detective : breath mam.. we are in no rush.. tell us everything...

me : (cries)... they raped me....

i looked down not wanting to see ayandas rection...

detective : how many guys raped you mam??

me : 3...

detective : so they took turns with you??

i nodded still keeping my head down....

detective : would you be able to describe these men??

did you see their faces??

i nodded still looking down..

detective : thank you for your time, we will get to the bottom of this.. those men will be found...

i didnt say anything, i still placed my face down..

they left and now i was left with ayanda...

i squeezed his hand waiting for him to say something...

i looked up to him and saw that he had his head buried in his hands..

i kept quite and just looked at him with tears slowly coming down...

me : ayanda??

he didnt say anything.. he kept his head down..

me : King please talk to me...

he looked up and his face was wet with tears..

i looked at him and i had no words to say.. i didnt expect him to be crying..

his eyes were red, and his face wet with tears and he looked at me with his low eyes..

him : i feel so weak right now.. yet very angry...

me ;.....

him : why didnt you tell me this??

me : i... i was scared.. i thought mabye you would leave me..

him : leave you?? why would i leave you??

me : becouse... becouse i was raped.. and that i was not a virgin anymore..

him : so you thought that i was only with you becouse i wanted to break your virginity??

me :.....

him : (churckles)... nonhlanhla...

me : you dont have to lie to me...

him :.....

me : so its true??

him :.....

me :..... owk.. i see....

him : i will see you tommorow.. your family is coming today..

me : ayanda.....

him : we will talk tommorow..

he said this holding himself from crying... then he left..

****nurse gloria****

i got in the ward..

me : (smiling)... mhm.. nonhlanhla, i see ayanda has left..

her : yah.. he told me that my little sister told him that they are coming so he wants to give me time alone with them

me : he must really love you....

her : i thought he did...

me : what do you mean??

her : after knowing that i was raped.. i dont think he still wants to be with me.. i guess all he wanted was to break my virginity and leave me..

me : did he say that??

her : he didnt have to...

me : have you never considered that mabye he is angry and weak that he never got to protect you??

her : huh??

me : men feel terrible when their loved once was hurt and he wasnt there to protect you.. they feel useless..

her : you think ayanda is going through that??

me ; I dont know.,. how was his reaction??

her : he cried...

me : now... a man cries and you think they dont love you??

her :.....

me : just think about it.. dont push him away owk..

her : owk...

at that moment my parents arrived....

[12/14, 08:12] Zozaness: The villagegirl an the
playboy: arranged marriage

117

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

****ayanda****

i was at home just having a cup of tea thinking about what nonhlanhla said..

it was vey upseting to know that the woman i truely love actually thinks i wanna play with her... like really?? and what makes me even more angry is the fact that i couldnt protect her..

i mean its really painful to have to be raped.. imagine being raped by 3 guys taking turns on you, worst part is that she was a virgin...

thinking about this, my heart starts tearing, my hands start shaking.. i swear if i ever know who did this, they are going to die in jail..

as i was sitting, my sister walked in also making breakfast...

her : hao, ayanda you already up??

me : no, ndisalele..(am still sleeping)...

her : oho.. i will.. (she then came close to me and aimed to hit me playfully)..

me : hahaha.. how can you ask me if am already up
whereas you can see am not sleeping..

her : mxm.. whatever..

she went to make coffee and i just sat there
thinking..

mom and dad also came down.. they were actually
heading out...

mom : i thought you said you not writing today...

me : morning to you too mom, am great thanks for
asking.. yes am not writing i have just run out of
sleep..

they laughed...

dad : somebody woke up a angry bird today...

me : gee thanks dad.. you know mabye if one of yall
had said goodmorning then mabye i wouldnt be an
angry bird...

mom : hai, tata, we better get going before we wake
the beast up..

they laughed as i just sipped in my tea...

mom : oh and please eat something.. you know what they say, "you not you when you hungry"..

me : hahaha.. ohhh mom you got jokes now?

dad : sthandwa asambe..(babe lets go)..

mom : hahaha.. stay well you 2. and please, no fighting, no rough games.. owk??

my sister and i looked at each and both sipped on our tea and coffee...

she didnt say anything, she just shook her head and left...

her : nonhlanhla??

me :.....(i actually didnt even hear her.. i was in my own zone)..

her : nonhlanhla!!

i looked at her...

her : is she the one stressing you like this??

me : eash.. but why does love have to be so painful??

her : well, i dont know.. what did she do??

me : nothing...

her : she left you again?? during finals??

me : no.. she didnt leave me...

her : what is it then? did that dimpho girl try any stunt??

me : no...

her : boy, you better tell me so that i sort it out for you...

me : hai, i will sort this out myself..

her : ayanda!!

me : ndithe i will sort it out..

her : dont do anything you will regret...

me : i will try...

her : can you atleast tell me, please..

me :.....

her : either that or am gonna lock you in your room and never let you out..

i looked at her and she looked dead serouse.. well

she was dead serouse...

me : owk..... nonhlanhla is in hospital.. she was shot..

her : what??

me : yes.. and she was also raped by 3 guys... they were taking turns on her..

her : ouch... thats terrible..

me : you know what hurt deep?? that she thinks that i was only with her to break her virginity...

her : so she was a virgin??

me : you thought i was joking??

her : no, i thought mabye she was lying in order to avoid sleeping with you...

me : well she was.. and now she believes am gonna leave her now that shes not a virgin and am not gonna be the first one to be in her..

her : well, in honesty.. was it all about that??

me : to be honest... at first it was all about that.. hitting a newly box and getting the praise.. but all that changed.. spending time with her and chilling

with her made me realise that shes actually different and she completes me.. so i dont care if she was raped and shes not a virgin anymore.. i still love her.. even more..

her : you know.. in all this year, i have never really thought i would hear you saying the love word towards a girl.. thats crazy..

me : yah.. people change..

her : who made you a whimp and died kanti?? because i need that person to also make me a whimp...

me : hahhaha.. you just have to stop being this boy and start being a girl, you will see..

her : what do you mean??

me : dude, you 100% a boy.. even boys think you lesbian.. like a butch... you play rough, you fight, you dress like a boy, talk like a boy, walk like a boy and also chill with boys.. so what does that tell you...

her : well, i might aswell just be lesbian then.. end of story..

me : hahahaha... hai owk...

so i know you might be thinking..." why your sister likes fighting your battles like you some mommies boy".. well when i was in primary.. there was a guy that once mess with me.. he would bump me for no reason, step on my toes, push me and even eat my lunch.. everyday..

i never said a word for weeks.. but one day i was not in a mood and i had already functioned in my mind that no one is messing with me today..

in the morning he wrote my book and the teacher hit me.. he kept provoking me.. till lunch time.. as he stepped on my toes, i punched him on the face.. he got angry and got ready to fight but i was already fuming..

as he came to fight i fought back. and this time i was hitting him for all the pain he caused me for those weeks.. i fought till i couldnt anymore..

even when our teacher tried to stop me, i unintentionally punched the teacher and she fell.. i didnt care i continued beating the boy even though

he was just laying there helplessly..

untill a sir came and held me tight away from the boy and i was taken to the principals office.. after a while i heard ambulances and at that moment i knew i had messed up..

i started regretting and actually cried.. the police were also called and they asked me questions.. i answered truely..

atleast in my corner i had alot of witnesses that spoke up about me being bullied by him.. but it didnt help becouse they said i shouldve talked to a teacher.. i had to spend weeks at some small prison like...

in there they told me to stop bottling things becouse if i did my anger arises and it becomes dangerous for myself and the person making me angry.. i dont get angry at everyone but specifically at the one who makes me angry..

so thats why we moved away from jhb to pe...

so here am trying to stay away from anger...

and here is these 3 guys... if i go to jail, atleast i would know that i went becouse i was fighting for someone i love, so it will be all worth it...

so my sister is actually always trying to make sure i dont bottle anything up and i relax from my anger.. she wouldnt want a brother who would go to jail for foolish doings.. well thats whats she always says..

well we had our conversation and i took a shower and she took me to the hospital.. she actually came with me.. she also wanted to see her..

we got to the ward and i see her with this guy.. this guy is actually holding her hand and they talking while laughing..

i look at my sister..

she pulls me back..

her : i think we need to go back.. clearly she has visitors..

me : a guy visiter??

her : cool down ayanda.. relax..

me : relax??

her : am not gonna let you enter in there while you fuming.. relax..

i breathed and stood out there for a long time...

i then walked in with my sister...

me : so, you tell me that i have agendas with you and that i dont love you but here you are.. getting visits from random guys.. did you tell him that i kill..

the guy just looked at me with a grin on his face.. i so wished to punch him...

nonhlanhla : ayanda.....

me : dont ayanda me.. i told you.. if you want to leave me, then you might aswell kill me.. well since am still alive, i might just go to jail for you then, because am about to kill someone..

sister : ayand, khaume...(just wait)...

me : wait..?? wait?? while seeing my woman with another man?? i should be the one making my baby happy not another man...

the guy : you got that right... i was wondering when i would meet you yaz... i actually thought that you

would be a little school boy with a school boy mentality..

me : well am a school boy, so why wouldnt i have a school boy mentality...

the guy : touche.... but am impressed.. let me leave yall to it.. when you have figured who i am before jumping the gun, tell her to call me.. i have some few pointers for you... oh and before i forget, you remind me of the younger me...

he stood up and left giving nonhlanhla a kiss on the forehead...

me : sis, can we be left alone, i will call you later to check on her..

sister : sure...

she left...

me : what was that??

her : wow... so you care so much for me??

me : i said who was that??

her : thats was my sisters husband.. siyabonga..

me : what?? so he wasnt some chancer??

her : no.. i love you King and i wouldnt do that to you..

me : ohh shucks.. now i look dump..

her : well atleast he has finally met you.. and if you really remind him of the younger him then clearly you in his good books..

me ; i feel so stupid..

her : and the lady??

me ; oh thats my sister...

her : oh...

me : let me text her to come.. she wanted to see you..

her : haha.. owk..

me : tjho Queen.. i messed up hay..

her : hahaha.. am actually touched.. like you would go to jail for me??

me : no...

she laughed...

after a while my sister came and they spoke and we

had a small fun time...

[12/14, 08:13] Zozaness: The villagegirl an the
playboy: arranged marriage

118

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

****mbali****

smangaliso has been really disturbing me for along

time now.. he calls non stop, cant he just go awol like he did months ago??

so my phone rings and i check the caller id, its smanga... i ignore it.. he calls multiple times and am still ignoring it..

now am fed up.. if he calls one more time i am gonna pick up and tell him a piece of my mind..

i wait and indeed a call comes through.. i pick up without checking the caller id...

me : smangaliso, what do you want?? huh?? wasnt it enough to drop me like a hot potatoe and leave me after finding out we cousins?? you didnt even want us to get closure about this yet you went to your dearest family and played happy family.. why dont you just scoop back becouse i have moved on..

him : really?? with who??

me : milo??

him : hahaha... wow.. do you ever check the caller id before answering or you just always asume that its smanga??

me : sorry... its just that he has been calling me the whole day and i was ignoring him so i decided to answer but it seems like you called at the wrong time..

him : ohhh owk... if its bad timing, i could call later..

me : no, its owk.. i am actually glad its your call...

him : glad??

me : yep...

him : wow....

me : mxm.. wena kodwa..hai... so what brings you to call me??

him : well is it wrong to check up on a friend??

me : a friend??

him : yah... i mean with smanga making returns, and nonhlanhla being in hospital.. its a mess...

me : dude.. its really a mess.. but we will pull through..

him : i know yall will...

me : hahaha..

him : send my sorry to nonhlanhla.. tell her i said she will be alright, god is not blind, justice will be done..

me : and say who said it??

him : milokuhle...

me : the only milokuhle she knows is her husband...

him : then tell her its her husband.....

me : do you want ayanda to kill you??

him : sharing is carying...

me : i see you have a death wish...

him : hahahahaha.. well i do know that siyabonga's kid is milokuhle... so is he the husband??

me : yes... and mine is thembalihle..

him : wait... kuhle and lihle.. they twins??

me : no, kuhle, lihle and sihle.. triplets..

him : damn... what??

me : yes..

him : woowoow....

me : wouldnt you want triplets??

him : wana give me a set??

me : mxm.. oh please..

him : hahahaha.. just jokes.. but carying 3 kids in one belly.. yhoouoooooooooooo how do woman do that??

me : hai.. amazing right...

him : woowoow.. i still cant believe i was once in my mothers belly.. like me.. little old me?? hai... its just un imaginable..

me : hahahahah.. well you come from there..

him : but how do you contain such.. like a whole head coming out of your private part.. really?? hai nyeke....

me : now imagine 3 heads coming out...

him : yhoouoooo, my blood is literaly flying away right now...

me : hahahah.. say thank god you not a girl..

him : hai we also have our off days that would make you say "i am glad am a girl"..

me : name 1...

him : owk wait.. am gonna make differences.. and you also make differences...

me : owk...

him : when girls are horny they dont show it.. they could literally walk around horny without even making it obviouse... but boys.. once we get horny.. our guns get hard and loaded.. then we have to walk like we just got circumsized...

me : hahaha... lol... sorry for laughing.. but the way you said it.. hai...

him : but its true.. so 1 point to the girls and 0 to the boys..

me : owk.. since we talking about 18+ stuff.. lets talk about intimacy.. we suffer becouse we feel the pain.. we the once arching our backs, spreading our legs, woman on top.. yall just penetrate and thats it, we need to be flexible now.. and if we not then you say

we dont know our way around the bed..

him : hahahaha... wooow, i so didnt expect that from you... are you sure you 15 bro...

me : hahaha.. yes hao.. why??

him : how many times have you done it?? with how many people??

me : huh.. 3 times with smangaliso...

him : thats all??

me : yes.. and am not doing it again untill am done with school..

him : you do know you cant taste a chocolate and think you will stay away..

me : me staying away from it is also staying away from boys..

him : oh owk.. smanga must have really roughed you up hai..

me : actually movies opened my mind more..

him : hai.. these night movies are messing with our kids...and when you mean movies.. is it movies or

porn??

me : hahaha.. purly movies..

him : wooow...hai.. owk..

me : so as you see.. boys 1 and girls 1...

him : owk.. now lets talk about puberty.. we go through stuff too.. even though its not painful but its irritating.. imagine waking up wet everymorning, having wet dreams, waking up with john also standing up.. hai..

me : you complain about small stuff.. we have to go through period pains every month.. like the pains are extream bro.. its like you got shot..

him : ouch.. nadia used to cry about those.. and if they start while shes still with me, she cries.. like real tears..

me : yah.. its really bad... milo..

him : yah..

me : have you gone to a shop to buy pads for any of your ex's??

him : yes...

me : nadia??

him : you jelouse??

me : why would i be?? we not even dating...

him : hahaha.. just asking..

me : so??

him : yes..for nadia...

me : have you ever bought panties for someone??

him : hahahah.. is this a tricky question??

me : what, am asking??

him : yes..

me : who??

him : hahaha.. nadia, you and a couple of other girls...

me : couple other girls.. ??

him : yes.. when they sleep over at my house.. they cant be repeating same panties again so i go buy it for them.. phela pep is not far from were i stay..

me : hahaha.. so every girl that comes to your house you distribute panties to them??

him : no.. to be specific, if they come and sleep over in my room with me.. i mean they served me the kitty so now i gotta take care of the kitty by giving it new covers..

me : hahahaha... hai milo.. hai.. wena you crazy.. i feel for your next girlfriend...

him : well dont becouse she will be dating the most handsome guy on earth..

me : oh please, you not the most handsome guy on earth.. my next will be more handsome then you...

him : ohhh please...

me : hahaha..

him : owk standwa.. mara girls win.. i wouldnt manage child birth, period pains and all that.. so am glad am a boy...

me : yah check..

him : yah.. well let me leave you to deal with smanga before am accused of being the object between 2

lovers..

me : come on we cousins.. i dont think we would ever come back together..

him : cousins do date..

me : not me and my cousin..

him : but its hard to believe yaz... i mean having your cousin take your viginity and being your first love.. jho...

me ; yah.. its really hard... but if we do date, would we bare ubnormal kids??

him : i dont know mahn.. you thinking of giving it a chance??

me : i love him.. i have been in denial for long now..

him : yah i also have a confession to make..

me : what??

him : i kinda forgave nadia.. things are not like before but we trying..

me : well i guess we really want season 2 of heartbreak and ice cream...

him : hahahaha.... vanilla ice cream with strawberry syrup and sweet sprinkles...or chocolate ice cream with chocolate sprinkles??

me : hahahahaha both....

him : hahahah... i second that... well i better get going or else we will never stop talking but this white lady is jelouse she is already telling me of one minute remaining...

me : she cant stand the heat..

him : hahaha.. neh! anyway goodbye.. before she cuts my call... she wants my gun this lady, she will learn to shut up...

me : hahaha.. you so nasty milo.. bye..

him : sure..

i laughed as i hung up...

i smiled and burried my head in my arms...

we writing fainals now.. i need to focus if i wanna see myself in grade 11 next year.. so i took my books and started staudying...

[12/14, 08:13] Zozaness: 119

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

****smangaliso****

i know what you all thinking.. "whats going on??" yah

well lets just say i made the most stupid thing ever thinking it was a good idea...

so after i found out that mbali is my cousin, they advised me to stay away.. which was something i couldnt do but i had to do it because really this was not good.. i mean my father and her mother are twins.. so we practically siblings nje..

so after that friday i decided to cut all contacts with her and that would include blocking her number.. even on facebook i ignored her..

as days went it got really hard ignoring her so i unblocked her number and attempted to call her and officially end the relationship.. but i couldnt bring myself to it..

so i asked my dad (bongani) to sign a leave for me.. i had decided to go back to jhb to also solve the mess that was there.. my mom, lebo and my child..

and thats why i am here.. i have tried calling her and trying to explain but shes not talking my calls... a part of me is actually sad that she isnt answering my calls and that shes moving on but at the same time i

am kinda pleased that shes moving on..

so i was home.. we have spoken with my mom about this bongani issue.,... she has admitted that indeed he is my father.. she explained everything to me.. she also told me about smangele.. that she knew about her and that lebo and her mom came here just after i left...

so yes i got angry at her but i cant be angry forever.. so we spoke things out and all was well..

so right now i try calling mbali again... finaly she pickes up...

her : smanga...

me ; hay.. mbali..

her : how can i help you??

me : huh... i wanted to check on you.. how are you??

her : great...

me : good.. listen.. can we talk once i get back??

her : mhm...

me : mbali??

her : i said owk...

me : are you angry at me??

her : no..

me : **sigh**....

we stayed silent for about 3 minutes...

me : mbali.. please shout, cry, do anything but please just speak to me like you always did...

her :..... am i not talking to you??

me : owk...

her : shap.. am hanging up...

me : owk..

she took long before she hung up then she did.. i sighed and scratched my head...

then there was a knock on the door..

i stood up and went to open, it was lebo.... she was alone and not with my child...

whenever she comes she comes with my child, i wonder what happened today..

me : and then?? weres my little angel??

her : i left her with mom..

me : why??

her : i want us to talk smanga.. you going back to pe anytime and i need to know whats up..

me : whats up with what??

her : are you gonna want to take smangele with you??

me : no.. even if i wanted to, i would never do that to you.. but i will come visit as often as possible...

her : oh owk...

i led her to sit on the couch and i went to pour us juice and i went to sit next to her...

we had our drink in silence..

her : you know... i hate saying this but, i miss the old days.. you know..

me : (clears throat)... ohhh..

her : yah.. since i had smangele it had my head thinking.. if i was loyal and sticked with you,

smangele would be in a healthy family...

me : right...

her : i am sorry smanga.. i did you dirty.. i made other guys disrespect you through me.. i guess i underestimated your love..

me :

her : so.... do you love her as much as you loved me??

me : lebo please... lets not do this...

her : am just seeking closure.. you know when you dumped me, i thought i would do without you.. i told myself that "there are many fishes in the water" but when i found out that am pregnant.. everything stroke back.. i wanted to tell you but i felt like mabye it would seem like am trying to trap you with a child... i had late nights with my tears, eating junk.. watching romatic comedy and just replaying our best moments in my head...

me : *sigh*..... i.....

her : you dont have to say anything.. i just need some answeres... so, do you love her more then you loved

me??

me : well.. yes i loved her so much..

her : have you slept with her??

me : yes...

her : are you planing on having kids with her and marrying her??

me : well, even if i wanted to.. i cant..

her : why?? whats stopping you?? she doesnt want??

me ; no.. we just found out that we cousins..

her : wooooooow... eash.. this thing of not knowing our fathers.. you end up dating family..

me : yah...

her : what would you do if it turns out that my dad is your dad??

me ; hahahah dont say that...

her : hahahha...

me : lebo, you just made me scared..

her ; hahaha.. no relax, i know my dad.. he left me

when i was a very young girl.. my mom says he lives in bloemfontein..

me : ohhh..

her : yah.. he is sotho...

me : ohhh owk...

her : hahahaha...

me : you nearly gave me a heart attack...

her : mhm....

a few minutes silence...

her ; i really miss you smanga.. i really do..and again am sorry...

me ; well, i miss the past too.. but its just that.. the past.. so am also sorry..

she smiled.. her nose ring had added some spark on her face.. she just lit up...

i kept looking at her and she fnally looked at me... we kept eye contact for long..

i leaned in and she leaned back...

her : what you doing smanga??

me : you said you miss the past, you miss me... so am taking you back to the past...

her : am not going to allow you to play with me smanga...

i went closer to her and breathed down her neck...

me : if you really dont want me to do this (kissed her neck) then tell me now and i will back out...

her : (swallowed)... (breathed heavy) (undecided)...

me : am waiting... (still kissing her neck)....

her : smanga i love you.. but i can not build my life with another womans tears, am sorry...

me : shes my cousin..

her : same difference...

me : you the mother of my child.. its not like we never did this before..

her : thats becouse then you were mine, now you not mine...

me : you welcome to make me yours...

her ; wasnt it you who just said this wont work??

me ; i know what i said, am i not supposed to change my mind??

her : smanga, i will not allow you to make me a rebound...

me : lebo.... i said if you dont want me to do this, just say i dont want and i will back out...now am listening..

i passionatley kissed her, she responded by kissing back but her hands were on my chest trying to push me back...

i continued kissing her.. i then ran my hands up her breast.. she tried moving back but she still kept kissing me.. i then pulled back and looked at her.,..

me : should i stop..

she shook her head as she had tears in her eyes...

i kissed her and picked her up taking her to my room.. i lay her on the bed on her back and went on top of her... i took out her shirt, and her bra.. i also

took out my shirt and kissed her...

i would have scenes in my head of the time i made love to mbali... i tried snapping out of it but they just kept popping up...

i brushed lebos hair as i would brush mbali's hair.. i also grabbed her waist as i would do to mbali...

[12/14, 08:14] Zozaness: continuation

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

****smangaliso****

after i had come i lay next to her looking up...

we stayed silent for some 10 minutes while looking up... well want to know what was in my mind at that time??

mbali is my cousin, i have to forget about her... and guess what i will.. what just happened here was a goodbye and hello... what i mean is making love with lebo while thinking of mbali was me saying goodbye to mbali and breaking everything we had.. and excepting lebo as my woman..

i mean what am saying is.. i dont want to lose lebo, shes a great person and hurting her is not ideal.. but also holding on mbali will hurt me and thats also not ideal.. so what am saying is, am planning on giving lebo another chance...

after a long silence.. i decide to break the silence..

me : lebo....

her : shhhhh... i know what you going to say..

me : really??

her : yah... this is a mistake right?? you were caught up by emotions, you were hurting.. i knew it.. i knew what i was getting myself into, so its owk... i wont take it to heart...

me : actually you should becouse all that you said was rubbish..

her : mhm??

me ; yes am hurting, but i would never play with you.. i would never hurt you..

her : what are you saying smanga..

me : what am going to say to you will hurt you but just know that its not a big deal and it actually helped...

her : what??

me : so, i was making love to you right??

her : yes...

me : but in my mind, i was making love to mbali... she looked down....

me : before you say anything please listen... this was

because i was saying goodbye and hello at the same time..

her :..... i dont understand..

me : i was saying goodbye to mbali in my mind and saying hallo to you.. meaning i was accepting you as my partner..

her : isnt that like too soon...

me : i know it feels like am rushing things but am done playing lebo.. i want a full family and a wife.. and i think i have that..

her :.....

i turned and looked at her..

me : trust me lebo i wanna fix things.. but the question is, do you want to fix things??

her : ofcouse, thats what i wanted all this time..

me :..... no hoeing around, no parting with other men, be loyal and trustworthy..

her : am sure i can do that.. because i love you..

me ; i..... i love you too..

she smiled and layed her head on my chest...

i sighed and looked up...

i then took my phone and texted mbali....

"its over, we done.. officially done.. but we will talk once i get back, just to start over as relatives.. goodluck with your exams.... i wish you all the best cuz"...

i then put my phone on silence and enjoyed the moment..

.

.

.

****nonhlanhla****

so today is my last day in hospital, tommorow am being discharged.. but alot needs to be done..

i have to undergo identification of the 3 men that raped me, i still need to go counsilling.. i keep telling them am owk but still they insist...

so today i called unce siya and ayanda together..

they both know that they meeting each other...

after a while nurse gloria walked in...

her : goodmorning nonhlanhla..

me : goodmorning aunty gloria..

her : i cant believe you finally being discharged.. i mean its a good thing but i really enjoyed your company..

me : really?? or is it uncle bongani you gonna miss...??

her : oh get out of here.... i am married remember??

me : mhm... i was just saying....

her : hahahaha... he is handsome though, i wont lie..

me : hahaha.. hai aunty gloria..

her : hahahaha...

me : so aunty gloria, you hardly talk about your family, why??

her : well.. you never ask about them...

me : so do you have kids??

her : huh.. yes...

me : how many??

her : 2... 2 boys..

me : wow... how old??

her : one is 16 and the other is 12...

me : ncooooo... thats so lovely.. am sure you happy
hai.. a whole family...

her : yah.. a whole family (fade smile)...

i smile back and i look at her as she walks around
tyding my room.. shes walking like she sprinked her
ankle or broke her leg... you could see she was trying
too much to hide it but she couldnt...

me : aunt gloria??

her : yes nhlanhla...

me : you look like you hurt yourself, are you owk??

her : huh..... yah... am great... am good...

me : but your leg...

her : i said am fine.. i happen to have triped on

something on my way to work.. but its all good.. as i get home i will rub my ankle..

me : or ask your husband to rub it for you ... i hear mens hands are magicall...

her : yah.. magical huh... more like should be cut off..

me : huh... i didnt get that..

her : huh... no i say you right...

me : i know...

she smiles and heads out..

minutes later ayanda walks in...

him : Queen..

me : King..

him : how are you??

me : i so cant wait for tommorow but i will miss aunt gloria..

him : mhm... great... i missed you..

me : i missed you too..

he leaned over to kiss me.. as we were kissing

someone cleared their throat.. ayanda moved and it was siya..

siya : love birds..

me : hay uncle...

siya : how you nonhlanhla??

me : am great..

siya came to kiss my forehead.. then he looked at ayanda who was a little nervouse...

siya : we meet again..

ayanda : huh.. yebo malume... i am sorry about the last time, i was just not thinking right...

siya : actually, that was a good move.. i wouldve done the same if i saw a guy alone with my woman.. that showed me that you would really love her.. so dont disapoint me boy...

ayanda : i wont...

siya : so, how many cows are we looking at??

ayanda : cows??

siya : you are dating for marriage right??

ayanda : ofcouse... but that would have to be discused with the family.. i dont know anything about lobola..

siya : lol.... just kidding but am not joking...

we laughed...

they sat down and we had a nice conversation.. they got to know each other and speak like big bro and little bro..

it was kinda cute though..

i so love my ayanda... so much... and uncle siya.. but i must say.. i am really worried about my little sister right now.. mbali is going through alot alone.. i hope she is doing great...

****1 year and few months later****

[12/14, 08:15] Zozaness: The villagegirl an the playboy: arranged marriage

120

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

****1 YEAR AND FEW MONTHS LATER****

****mbali****

i took the last line.... ****mhm mm mm mm**** exactly
what i needed

hay, dont be looking at me like that.. owk... 1stly you
dont know what am going through, you dont
understand my pain, so dont be judging me for only

god can do that...

life has really been unfair..

quick update... am in grade 12.. its around june now and we celebrating that we done with june exams..

"where is amanga?" lol.. he is still around, still working at siya's company and guess what?? he is now living with his dear girlfriend here in pe... yes uncle bongani bought a house for him to stay with his little family...

am not mad though.. am great, am fine...

nonhlanhla?? well she is alright.. she went councilling, she got done with exams and my sister passed.. she is now i varsity... doing second year... yes.. things between her and ayanda are great.. very well.. and you know what?? ayanda is even known at home.. yes mom and dad finally gave him a chance and now they even get to have dinner with him.. nonhlanhla also is known by ayandas family.. she also does dinner with them... LOVE IS IN THE AIR.. right??

nompilo?? well she has always been happy with

uncle siya.. they are the happy family... they even going to the states to have a few week baecation with the kids.. the little xulu fam...

well everything seems to be good for everyone.. life is amazing..

as for me?? i get told that am the odd one out.. that all my siblings were always narrow and obitient and never did these parties and were never so forward... that mina am moving aside from them.. "mbali, you not like your siblings", "you the first one to ever fail a term" yes i got progressed to grade 11, failed term 2 and 3 of my grade 11.. and got progressed to grade 12... so far in grade 12 i passed 1st term.. but then who doesnt??...

they always pick negative things about me and rub them in my face... who said oi want to be like nompilo?? like nonhlanhla?? who said am clever like them.. mabye if they could find my father they would see why am different.. mabye i took my dads stupidity.. mabye am hyper like this becouse of my father.. have they ever thought of that?? no..

but they keep shoving me... " i wonder what happened for mbali to be like this"... mbali this mbali that.. like really??

i mean my siblings love life is flourishing.. their career is booming, they social life is wack, and here i am.. social life booming, career is wack, love life is wack...

its clear that at home i am the little dissapointment.. i am the off one.. i am the outlayer, the foreighner.. so instead of giving them headache and giving myself pain, i turned to what i know best and that makes me stay away...

milo is also starting to bore me.. just becouse we friends he thinks he can have a say in my life.. dont do this or dont do that.. hell no.. i will do me and the way i see fit....

so today i walked out of the house... well i left them having breakfast like a happy family... like there is no problems, well i didnt want to mess the perfect family hai.. so i excused myself.. its not like they care much of what happens to me...

well you must be asking, "when did you start

using??" well when i failed in june last year.. my parents really got angry and they said words that are still with me right now.. their words really hurt me.. " useless, child becouse children are needed, stupid, dont know what i want, follower, dont think." to think that i actually tried...

well they appologised for saying all those things.. but truth be told, their words still strike at this moment...

so after all that were said... i cried to chanel and she told me that she has a secret.. she told me that she uses.. but anyone cant see becouse she has it under control.. and she is being real becouse indeed she doesnt show.. she is still beautiful and great.. even her boyfriend doesnt know..

she knows a supplier that supplys her with these stuff at a private place..

so i have been using for months now.. almost a year.. but still nobody sees anything and these things really make me forget and numb...

so chanel, pinky and i were in the bathroom.. we

had to pick a fix before starting this party, just to loosen up because right now am a little deppressed...

so after the last line, i lean back and look up...

me : that just hit the right spot...

chantel : yah.. now we gotta clean ourself before anyone comes in here..

pinky : dont worry i locked...

me : great pinky... you always think ahead..

chantel : yah great.. now lets make quick before they think something is fishy..

we got up cleaning the seat of the toilet and the baisins.. then we lotioned our faces and hands and applied some more make up..

chantel ; i think we ready to bounce now..

me : yah, lets show them..

pinky : mwa.. looking amazing..

we all smiled while looking at ourselves in the mirror...

we then got out and indeed the party was great..

chantel leaned towards me to tell me something...

chantel : am going to bae.. see you...

me : sure...

i was now left with pinky...

pinky and i went to sit on the couch.. we were talking and having fun... untill her boyfriend came and took her away...

now i was sitting alone...

i sat there having my drink while watching the people dance.. couples together and guys having some fun...

i went to the bathroom and locked my self in.. " one more line wont hurt".... i made a line and sniffed it up... wooooooow.. great...

i cleaned myself and then went out.. now this is what am talking about..i was now a bit dizzy.. a bit on the edge..

you know i have never really been laid for sometime now.. i guess today is the day..

i checked my bag and 3 condoms were in

there..."great"... i then went back to where i was sitting.. after a while of drinking.. i saw milo... agggggg he is so going to mess my plans..

he was walking with his girlfriend nadia... yah nadia and milo are happy..

so its good that he doesnt see me.. he actually just went to the kitchen.. after a while a guy walked to me.. tall, light, a little skinny like me but not really skinny.. he is buff skinny.. i dont know if that makes sense.. he looked really smart too...

him : hay.. may i sit??

me : sure...

him : i have been looking at you for the longest now, waiting for bae??

me : hahaha.. nice one.. no.. am just sitting and having fun...

him : sitting alone?? is that what you call having fun??

me : well, if thats what makes me happy then its fun...

him : so you happy sitting alone??

me : correct.. it gives me a moment to capture whats around me and read people from a distance..

him : woooow.. thats quite impressive..

me ; mhm...

him : well, were are my manners?? i am brian...

me : hay brian.. i am mbali...

him : huh... nice name..

me : thanks...

him : so.. huh,.. should i be worried that i might be beaten up any moment from now or you just single??

me : am single.. but not looking....

him : well what if someone is looking at you??

me : well they should look away becouse at this moment am not available..

him : single but not available??

me : yep...

him : too bad.. seems like i just lost..

me : mhm.. but that doesnt mean that we cant play...

him : play??

me : yes.. i always had some dark chocolate ice cream, i always wanted to taste some vanilla...

he bit his lips and licked them...

him ; well, i aim to please..

me : i dont hold emotions, i dont catch feelings, i dont play attachments, i pick, fuck and move on...

him : oooooouuuuuu.. straight to the point huh??

me : (smile).. i dont need drama, so if your girl or wife is around, make sure you cover up...

him : out of question becouse am single..

me : great...

him : so, should i??

me : yes sir...

he held my hand and i stood up.. he then lead me to one of the bedrooms..

we got in and he closed the door...

i went to sit in the bed and took off my shoes.. i had

pumps, a short dress and a cardigan...

i then sat on the bed crossing my legs...

he came close and started kissing my neck... he kept kissing my neck as he took his jacket off...

i then moved back on the bed and he layed on me as we kissed passionatly... he ran his hands on my thighs and i gave moans as his hand slowly went to my lady down there..

as he was about to get there the door opened.. he moved to see who it was and i also checked.. its milo...

jhooooooooo this guy mara....damnit...

milo : mbali??

me :.....

i looked down...

milo : and this, whats this??

brian : what does it look like bro..??

milo : please get out...

brian : bro, am busy with my girl, so you should be the one going out...

milo : mbali? dont do something you would regret...

brian : bro, can you please leave.. we trying to get busy here...

milo looked at me and i looked down without saying a word...

milo : mbali, tell me to leave and i will leave..

brian : mf2.....

milo : (interupted) i will only leave if mbali tells me to leave.. not you...

brian looked at me..

brian : babe... tell his guy to leave, so that (kiss me) we can continue...

me : please leave.....

milo looked down and turned...

me : not you milo... (looking at brian)... you...

brian ; bbe.. i thought....

me : we done here.. please go..

milo looked at me then at brian..

milo : you heard her, leave...

brian looked at me and took his tops..

milo grabed her and went out with him...

i layed on the bed and tears came out my eyes... i need a fix...

i locked the door and went to sniff up 2 more lines....

i layed up as they hit the spot... i gained form again..

but this time i was a mess, tears had ruined my make up.. now i look like i was crying for weeks..

someone knocked.. i cleaned and went to wash my face quickly and used my cardigan to whipe my face..

i then went to open..

milo ; you took long to open..

me :.....

milo : mbali whats up??

me : nothing.. am fine...

i went to sit on the bed...

milo came and also sat on the bed....

milo : i get that you hurting, and that you feel like the world should swallow you but please be strong and firm up...

me : firm up?? no.. i actually had enough...

tears were coming down..

milo : shhh dont cry.. whatever it is will be owwk...

he hugged me and rubbed my back.. i looked up and looked at him.. he looked at me..

i went up to him and kissed him, he moved back and stood up...

him : mbali no...

me : tell me you want to feel me?

him : mbali... mbali....

me : say that you dont love me.. say it and i will leave you alone...

him : mbali, please...

me : say it.. and i will let you be...

i was now close to him, looking in his eyes...

we looked at each other for a while then he kissed me..

we had a rough and passionate kiss... he ran his hands all over my body and my thighs..

my lady down there was very wet...

he placed me on the bed and pushed me back till we were fully on the bed.. he then kissed my neck as he unzipped my dress at the back..

after he pulled my dress out and i took his shirt out..

i grabed him and he pressed himself for me to feel how hard his mr was... i unbottened his jeans and he took it out.. i was now in only panties and he was in only boxers..

i looked down and damn, he was carrying a machine hai...

i rubed it as it was in the boxer and he continued kissing me.. i admired his abs, and up to his face.. his eyes were low and he had this lust on his face...

as he was pulling my panty off the door open and someone called milo...

voice : milo??

he jumped looking who it was and his face changed.. i saw regret... it was nadia...

me : baby... i.....

her : (cries)... no... am sorry.. you continue owk...

she left and milo buried his head in his hands... and i started regretting what just happened...

me : am.. am sorry...

him : its owk.. its not your fault.. its my fault.. i couldve known better and resisted...

he got off the bed and got dressed quickly and ran out...

woooooow... today i am being tested... first brian makes me hot then we disturbed.. then milo makes me hot and again we disturbed... woooooow...

i got in the sheets like that and layed...

after about 40 minutes i took my phone and went to

porn websites.. i guess if no one satisfy me then i have to satisfy myself... i hope i dont get disturbed..

i got up and locked the door.. then i watched the videos as i also circled my clit... then eventually i build up an orgasm and later came... i breathed and relaxed.. i think i did it for a good 3 times then i slept.. knock out...

[12/14, 08:16] Zozaness: The villagegirl an the playboy: arranged marriage

121

- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .

- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .

****milo****

me : baby listen, its not what what you think...

her : really?? so you were not about to sleep with another woman and cheat on me?? becouse thats what am thinking...

me :.....

her : mhm....

me : no but listen..

her (cries).. owk.. am listening... try to convince me that what just happened was a mistake...

me :.....

her : (cries) try... am listening....

me :.....**sigh**

her : you know why you cant speak?? because you know its not a mistake...

me :.....babe...

her : milo i have seen how you look at her.. how you become lit up when you with her, you chat so freely with her... you have fun when you with her.. i have seen it all... you know i was hoping that mabye its how you do with all your friends.. that mabye you were still angry that i slept with your friend... but truth be told, i was always ready for this day....

me : you been stalking me and reading my chats??

her : i had to... when i noticed the connection yall had, i had to make sure i knew who was challenging me.. when i saw that she gives you life, i actually accepted that one day yall would fall in each others hands....

me ; so you not angry??

her : i am... i am hurt, i am deeply hurt.. but i want

you to answer me on this question...

me : which question??

her : do you love her??

me : no...

her : milokuhle, do you love her??

me :

i looked down and sat on the couch...

her : judging by your actions i take it that you do....

but i want you to tell me.. do you love her??

me :y...yes..

she looked down and more tears poured out her eyes.. she tried hiding them and stoping them but she couldnt...

her : i have to go..

me : but i love you too nadia.. i really do...

her : (teary) no milo.... you just feeling sorry for me...you dont want to hurt me, you dont want to see me cry.. thats just what it is...

me :.....

her : milo... (smiles through her tears)... life is short to pretend and waste time.. right now i am not angry that you cheated.. i am angry that you wasted my time.. wasted my love.. wasted my efforts...

me : am sorry...

her : no... am sorry milo... am sorry that i loved you...

she walked out the door....

i sat there putting my face in my hand...

somehow nadia was correct...

i am going to take yall back to the first time i saw her.. the day at the park..

when i first saw her, i saw a dark chocolate queen, forward but very open and fun.. she was the kind to joke around with and she would never take it as an insult..

when she was drunk and ended at my place.. i would watch her while she was sleeping... i would even brush her hair with my fingers and watch her sleep so peacefully...

the moment we became friends, i enjoyed every conversation, every meet up was great.. i remember our ice cream dates.. amazing.. i can comfortably say that she loves ice cream more than anything...

and what happened at the party... well lets just say the reason why i didnt want to go ahead with it was because i didnt want to take advantage of her because she was emotional... but when she came close i couldnt really keep it anymore.. and it turned out to be magical.. everytouch, every kiss, every breath was just amazing.. too bad it was cut short...

now am here.. just lost nadia.. ****sigh****

i went to take a shower.. i need it...

.

.

.

****Bra G****

me : is it done??

scar : sure skhulsam (sure sir)...

me : good.. we need to move faster coming..

scar : sure.. huh boss i just want to know... does it mean that you taking up were you left off??

me : no.. i am opening my own business now.. i am done with that life...

scar : ohhh owk bra G.. i understand.. but then whos going to take over??

me : i dont know, and i dont care.. i have one mission and its to find my daughter.. now be on alert, i might need you for something...

scar : anytime..

me : great.. take this (giving him an evelope)...

scar : sure bra G...

me : you can go...

he left...

i sat down and gulped a cup of whisky....

i then sat back looking at my watch.. after a few minutes Tk walked in...

me : haiwena, were you not supposed to come 20 minutes ago??

him : sorry bra G.. i got caught up on the way..

me : nx... **sigh** did you get anything??

him : actually yes sir..

me : am listening....

him : she lives in pe.. close to the freedom park, she lives with her husband and kids.. one of her children is married and lives in kzn, appearantly her husband is the next chief of the village.. the other 2 are still schooling.. one is in varsity and the other in matric.. she also seems to have a twin brother who also lives in pe, he has a son and the son has a girlfriend and daughter....they work at xcc.. the twin brother is the manager there and the son is an intern..

me : intresting... but am not really interested in all the family memebers, just the last born of sbongile...

him : mbali??

me : yes... i want you to find out her everymove, get a guy you can use in pe to make sure she doesnt lack

anything and that shes always taken care of.. hire a teacher at that school to make sure she is given the best food one can find... and find someone to also take her shopping, hell everything...

him : but bra G, wont that raise suspicion??

me : well spoil her but dont make it obvious... it wouldve been better if we used someone she trusted, in that way it wouldnt be so suspicious..

him : why not make contact with her and send money in her account??

me : yahhh.. thats it..

him : so should i get her contacts??

me : no.. if yall can get her to open a bank account then it would be easy to put money in her account everymonth...

him : thats too risky...

me : damnit mahn.. kanti what am i supposed to do.??

him : may i ask bra G.. kanti why do you want to spoil the kid??

me : she is my daughter..

him ; ohhhhh.. i thought you didnt have kids...

me : well, one time long ago.. i was a drug lord, selling them on the streets.. i was just a one timer drug lord.. sbongile was a client.. but you see she couldnt pay.. so we talked and she payed by sleeping with me for a week.. unfortunately i shot a goal.. when she told me, i told her to cut contacts with me and never contact me again.. i also told her to never involve me in the childs life.. so i never got to know the name, birthdate, or anything.. i know that now its late to claim the daddy batch.. even if i wanted to, but now that am in hold of bra biza's operation, i should never even get close to her.. because now.. our enemies think that i have nothing to loose so they wont even try to come for me because all have families.. but if they get to know that i have a child, then they would know my weakness..

him : oi hear you bra G..

me : you better keep your mouth quite too.. just find

a way i can spoil my daughter without raising any suspicoun ... owk??

him : yes boss..

me : good.. and make it snappy..

him ; yes boss..

me : good.. but also get more info about her.. i want to know more about her..

him : yes boss..

me : sure ntokozi.. get on with it.. and take.. (giving him an envelope)..

him ; thanks bra G.. am on it..

i signaled for him to go.. i then went to pour myself more whisky.. i drank as i think about this situation..

it hasnt been long since i got out of prison.. its been only 3 months.. i took 2 months laying low and keeping a low profile to make the police think i really quite my ways.. but actually prison was not a punishment.. well at first it was but as years passed and it got owk...

after a while my phone rang.. it was my assistance...

me : tell me great news...

him : well... your papers were accepted.. you can now buy into max construction..

me : great.. now i can be able to clean my money..

him : how much are we talking bra G...??

me : 45 M

him : what??

me : yes.. and i cant just take all of it and put it in the bank.. it will raise suspicoun.. so if i buy the company and clean it through the company then it will be easy....

him : but do you know anything about construction??

me : no.. i will hire all the qualified to make it work...

him ; oh owk...

me : great.. keep me posted.. by the end of this year, i want my comapany up and running..

him : yes sir..

i hung up and sat on my couch looking up.. i sighed....

[12/14, 08:18] Zoaness: 122

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

****few weeks later****

****sbongile****

i was in bed facing up.. i guess i was in deep thought

about mbali.. she has really changed over these months... kelvin turned and looked at me, he just woke up...

him : work??

me : mhm??

him : you stressing.. is it work??

me : no.. its not work...

him : then what is it??

me : have you noticed something odd about mbali??

him : like what??

me : just anything odd or different??

him : well besides her changed attitude and behaviour, no...

me : have you ever wondered how she changed her behaviour and attitude all of a sudden??

him : kids change when puberty strikes.. its probably adolescence...

me : adolescence??

him : yah.. kanti what made you think theres something wrong??

me : 1stly shes becoming more thinner now.. like i can see her under neck bone... her face is becoming..... i dont know... she is constantly uncomfortable, shes mostly shaking and hides her hands under the table in dinner.. shes a mess mahn... even after taking a bath its like she never did...

him : what are you saying??

me : the last time i saw someone going through this, was myself..

him : am lost...

me : when i was a drug addict..

he stood up and looked at me...

him : what??

me : i am not saying that she is an addict, but shes giving signs that she is...

him : no.. thats just impossible.. mabye she is loosing weight becouse she hardly eats, and shes stressed.. mabye this smangaliso issue is still

bothering her..

me : what about the late nights outside and parting...

him : sweetie.. lets talk to her and hear what she has to say.. before we jump into conclusions..

me : owk...

.

.

.

****mbali****

i got up early and went to the bathroom.. nonhlanhla was still sleeping...

i locked the door and took out my pack.."damn this is my last pack, i need to call chantel so that she gets me another packet.. i wonder how 12 packets finished in just few weeks..

well i have a full packet now and this should last me about 3 days...

so i sniffed 2 lines and it hit just the spot...

i then cleaned up and went back to bed..

i took out my phone.. milo has been avoiding me...
yes these past weeks he has been telling me that
hes busy with school or he is spending his days with
family or he is out of town.. well thats just him
avoiding me...

well i have been feeling empty since my one and only
besty has been avoiding me...

so i dial his number.. he answers on the third ring...

milo : mbali...??

me : can we talk??

milo : huh... about what??

me : milo you know about what.. about what
happened weeks ago..

milo : ohhh.. i thought we moved passed that...

me : well??

milo : well i am kinda busy.....

me : milo please... if after this you decide to be busy
everytime i call then its owk.. but just this one shot..

please.. i miss my best friend..

milo :(sigh)... owk..

me : (breathed out).. thanks...

milo : i will come pick you up at 1pm...

me : can you please pick me up earlier.. i dont really feel home, so the sooner the better...

milo : i dont think i can.. my parents only leave at 12am...

me : well we can then have ice cream..

milo ; (churckled)... ice cream??

me : (smiles) yes...please...i need to get out of the house..

milo : owk, ice cream it is.. i will be there in about 2 hours..

me : thank you very much..

milo : owk.. let me leave you prepare owk..

me : ok.. bye..

milo ; bye..

i hung up and then got up to run the water in the shower.. i washed my face then got in the shower and showered.. after i lotioned myself and wrapped a towel and went to get dressed..

nonhlanhla was now awake, making the bed...

her : hao.. you already up and done showering??
were you going??

me : out for ice cream...

her : with??

me : milo....

her : is that guy giving you stress??

me ; no why??

her : not to offend you or something but you have lost weight mbali..

me : hou.. i have always been thin moss...

her : no... now you worse..

me : owk..

her : no like am worried mbali.. look at your face...

me : what about my face??

her : this is not the mbali i know..

me : well indeed i am not the mbali you know..
because the mbali you all knew died of pain and
depression.. so me?? am the new mbali..

her : MBALI??

me : its done.. i cant ressurect anyone..

she looked at me as i got dressed..

i got dressed, made my bed, cleaned and then left
her there and went in the kitchen...

i found my parents already in the kitchen preparing
breakfast.. as i walked in they looked at eash other
and looked away..

me : morning.,

them : morning..

i took a bowl, poured cornflakes...

mom : arnt you going to have a proper breakfast
with us??

me ; no thank you...

dad ; baby you need to eat...

me : why?? because you noticed that am loosing weight...??

they looked at each other and looked down and at me...

me : well i have also noticed.. and nonhlanhla has given me the little lecture about it, saying i have changed.. and if you wondering what i said to her, ask her she would be happy to tell yall..

dad : mbali vele whats wrong with you these days.. you disobidient, speak back, have an attitude and all those disgusting things..

me : i am sick of people thinking am selfish, am ruining my life.. well you right its my life now back off...

in just seconds i received a hot slap from my mom and my ears made sounds.. i held my cheek and stood still waiting for my ear to gain conscious...

mom : you dont speak to your father like that... you

not big enough for a hiding...

me :.....

they looked at me for a long time....

me : if i am not allowed to voice myself then dont ask me anything..

mom : as long as you live under this roof you will always do as we say.. if you feel like you old now.. leave my house...

me : you were never there for us as we grew up.. and guess what we survived.. i bet i can survive even now..

i then stormed up to my room.. i took out my bagback and packed some clothing..

nonhlanhla ; and then??

me :.....

mom barged in...

mom : you wanna leave?? leave.. but you leave everything thats not yours behind...

i looked at her....

mom : yes missy.. you leave your phone, clothes everything behind because they were bought with my money.. you dont work...

me : fine...

i quickly texted milo to get me at the park then i swiched my phone off and threw it on the bed..

i then took my bag... it had my stuff...

me ; should i leave the bag too?? and the clothes am wearing?

mom.....

i then walked passed her and walked to the door...

nonhlanhla : mbali dont do this.. mom please..

mom :.....

me ; its what she wants.. the new mbali is a DC.. dont care..

i then left going out..

i walked to the park...

.

.

.

****nonhlanhla****

me : ma!! ma!! you cant let her leave please..

mom : hai... she wants to be a grown up neh.. so let her be...

me : what if she doesnt come back...??

mom :

dad walked in...

dad : were is that child going??

me : mom challenged her to leave.. and i am scared, what if she doesnt come back.. she might sleep at the streets, get rapped or kidnapped.. gosh.. nooo we have to stop her..

i make my way out..

mom ; if you dare walk out that door, never come back.. you also follow her..

me :

i looked at mom, she was dead serous....

[12/14, 08:18] Zozaness: an the playboy: arranged marriage

continuation

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

****nonhlanhla****

its 10pm, we still sitting in the dining room... i am here in tears wondering were my sister would be..

me : (crying) she could be still wondering on the streets ma!!.... she could be raped, kidnaped, she could be dead....

mom : nonhlanhla would you stop...

me :.....(cries)...

dad : we need to go look for her... we need to know if shes owk... if what you said is true then we just made matters worse...

mom : i never thought of that when i chased her.. i was just so angry that i just spoke..

me : what are you talking about ma?

mom : nothing.. but we need to find mbali before she becomes a danger to herself...

they stood up and walked out...

me : am coming with yall..

dad : no.. its too dangerous.. you stay here...

me : but.....

mom : no buts nonhlanhla.. stay here and lock all doors and gates.. we have our own keys...

i sighed and watched them leave..

after they left, i went to my room and took a blanket and went to sit in the living room.. i watched tv as i wait..

after a while i remembered something..if mbali was to go to someone for help, it would be smanga..

i dialed smanga..

him : cuz...

me : hay.. that still sounds weird..

him : hahaha.. i know hai...

me : listen, is mbali with you??

him : no why??

me : she had a fight with mom and dad in the morning and mom chased her... and untill now she

hasnt returned..

him : what?? have you tried calling her??

me : she left her phone..

him : ohhh noo..

me : yah... so when last did you see her??

him : about months ago...

me : you should see her now.. shes not the same..
shes very different.. she even lost weight...

him : really??

me : yah... i cant recognise her anymore..

him : mhm.... am sorry..

me : owk.. bye..

i hung before he said anything...

at this moment there is only 2 people in my mind
that she can go to.. milo and chantel...

i get up and go look for mbalis phone in mom and
dads room...

i got in and rang her phone.. it rang and i found in

under the pillow...

i took out her sim card and put it in my phone.. i opened my phone..

after a whild i searched contacts and found milos contacts..."yes"..

i dialed him...

him : mbali... i am sorry i couldnt make it in time.. but i called later on and you were not answering my calls..

me : hay.. you speaking to nonhlanhla, mbalis sister..

him ; ohh hay...

me : i guess mbali is also not with you.....

him ; no... why??

me : huh.. nothing.. just asking..

him ; is she not home??

me : huh....

him : you need to tell me whats going on,.. please..

me : well... yes.. mbali is not home.. she left in the

morning...

him ; damn... did she say were she was going??

me : well mom..... actually no she didnt...

him ; oh owk...

me : huh... thanks for your time..

him ; sure...

i hung up and looked for chantels number... well there was no contact named chantel...

i guess she saved her on the phone...

i sighed and just lay on the couch...

after hours at around midnight mom and dad came....

me : and.. were is mbali..

i was looking around them and even looked outside and still there was no mbali...

mom started breaking down.,,

dad hugged her...

mom : (crying)... kelvin i have failed my daughter.. i

have failed her.. its all my fault.. its my fault..

dad : shhhhh.. dont blame yourself sweety..

shhhhhh...dont cry...

i sat there and cried.. dad came with mom and he hugged us both...

.

.

.

****bra G**..**

i was in deep sleep when my phone rang...

i woke up and checked my caller id.. its tk... i answered..

me ; this better be very important...

him : yes bra G, it is... its about your daughter...

i sat up straight...

me : what??

him : my people saw your daughter laying under the tree near the bridge... my guy went to try and see if

she was sleeping or she passed out...

me : and..??

him : she was sleeping... the guys called me to ask what to do with her..

me : i hope for your sake you didnt leave my daughter to sleep there..

him : no.. the moment my guys went to her.. a car parked and a guy walked out going to her.. he woke her up and took her to his car and they left...

me : who is that guy?? and were was he taking my daughter?? did your guys follow him??

him ; yes bra G... it looked like she knew him... and they went to a house near the school...

me : tell your guys to find that guy.. and what the hell was my daughter doing at night under the tree??

him : i dont know bra G...

me : was the guy from sbongiles household??

him ; no.. he is nowere related to anyone in that family.. well he doesnt even stay close to them...

me : damnit... sbongile is gonna pay for letting my daughter sleep under the tree at night.. arnt they even worried of were the child is??

him ; so sir.. do we take the guy and bring him to you??

me : yes... i want to know why he took my baby at that time with him and what he did to her...

him : yes bra G...

i hung up and sighed while thinking...

sbongile?? i will be damned....

[12/14, 08:19] Zozaness: The villagegirl an the playboy: arranged marriage

123

.

.

.

.

.

- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .

****mbali****

i woke up... milo was not in the room, but there was a tray of food already on the drawer..

immediatly i remembered the first time i slept here.. i smiled...

i then immediatly digged in my food without even washing my hands or face.. i ate like there was no tommorow.. i cleaned my plate clean and then took my "stuff" and went to the bathroom... i locked the bathroom door and went on my knees next to the closed toilet...

i poured some stuff on the toilet seat and made 3 lines.. i looked at them and smiled.. "my pain healer".. i sniffed them up and my shaking stopped and i layed back..

i felt out of space.. all my worries left my mind and all i thought about was fun and freedom.. i smiled as i rapped one of phora's song..

" i've been trying to stay away from mirrors.... guess i'm too scared to face my fears... there ain't nothing scarier then not knowing if you know yourself.... speak my emotions... i just hope it helps.... sometimes i think about my life and i searcg for the meaning... looking for temporary angels to permanent demons.... sometimes these people call me family just... for they convince... take me for granted while i'm here but get hurt when i'm leaving.... leaving all my reasons to kill in a box beside me.... if you choose to open it brace yourself but... dont try me... cause i dont want to turn to that person... thats so unlike me... but fuck with my family i guarantee i wont take it lightly.... i might be a lil different now... its different now... the love we

have was toxic so we keep our distance for now...
we used to want to ride for eachother, die for
eachother.... now we point the finger say names and
lie to eachother... so its fuck love and i numb the
pain with this....."

i looked up and smiled... normally the song says with
hennessy but i changed it becouse thats not what i
numb my pain with...

"so its fuck love and i numb the pain with this
drugs..."

i then laughed so hard that tears filled my eyes.. but
after a moment of laughing. my laughter changed
and turned to me crying...

i got up and looked at the mirror...

" mbali, you are useless.. you are stubborn, your
existence is nothing but a pain to everyone... make
everyone a favour and die.. come on.. you different
from everyone, you always been the forward one.. its
your fault that your life turned like this.. you not
loved becouse you dont love yourself... just die...
die....die.....die.....die.....die.....die.....die...."

these words were playing in my mind as i looked at the mirror... and wrote on the mirror with my lipstick... "numb"...

"useless"...."selfish"...."clueless"...."death"...."messed up"...."hell"... "demons".....

i stoped crying and stared at myself.. i looked in the mirror for a while but never really found even a piece of the mbali i am... i was just this child that is a disgrace to the community...

i took out my "stuff"... i need to really get out of this reality.. i want to go to the highest climax.. even if it means sniffing all this, i will....

i opened it and made lines... but before i actually sniffed, milo knocked on the door...

him : are you owk??

me : i ma fine thank you...

him : owk...

he left and i continued with what i was doing...

i sniffed the first line... looked up and felt it hit... i sniffed again and still same thing.. i sniffed again

and it hit differently but i guess its my climax..

"one last one".. i sniffed it up and looked up... as i open my eyes everything was blurry.. i tried moving back but i fell in the tub... i then opened the tap for cold water, mabye the cold water with help with the diziness and blurry vision...

i opened but i lost it... i started shaking....

.

.

.

****milo****

mom : milokuhle mazibuko... what is this that i hear you speak of?/

me ; ma!!

mom : dont "ma" me... we trusted you to stay with this house as we leave and what you do is bring street kids in the house..?/

me : shes not a street kid ma....

mom : didnt you say you found her sleeping under a

tree??

me : yes, but...

mom : no buts... get that floory street kid out of my house before she steals everything here and runs away with my stuff.. it took me years making international collections and i wont let some street kid ruin it by stealing them...

me : but ma, if you could just listen to me...

mom : owk then milo... what is it??

me : she is a friend.. i have known her for long now... over a year...

mom : doesnt she have a place to stay??

me : i dont know.. phela a year ago her sister got raped and shot.. so mabye she got kidnaped and thrown there...

mom :

me : dont look at me like that mom... am serous..

mom : owk.. call her... let me hear from her what happened...

me : thank you... am coming back...

i ran to my bedroom and still she was not out of the bathroom... and this time i heard the water going out of the tab..

milo : mbali??

there was no answer...

milo : mbali??

still no answer...

i tried opening the door but the door was locked...

milo : mbali??

still no responds...

i opened hard and banged the door...

i then kicked the door and ran to her as i saw her laying in the bathtub...

milo : mbali?? mbali??

she was foaming and just laying there not moving...

i picked her up and took her to my bedroom... and my mom walked in...

mom : milo, what..... (shocked).. and then??

me : i dont know mom.. i just found her laying in the tub...

she got in the bathroom and later called me... i went and stared at the mirror...

mom : milo what have you brought in this family??

me :.....

mom : this girl just committed suicide... and it wont even seem like it because she was here.. milo what have you done to us??

i looked around and saw a stash of drugs...i was shocked to the core...

me : no.... she didnt commit suicide... she might have overdose.. am calling the ambulance...

mom : dont be stupid... calling the ambulance will make be a risk...

me : how ma??

mom : if she doesnt make it, you will be their prime suspect..

me : but ma! i am innocent...

mom : do you know how many people go to jail and spend years in jail even though their innocent??

me :.....

mom : exactly... now let me call the family doctor... he will tell us what to do... and milo.. your father is going to kill you for this...

i sat on the tub, and looked down...

what worried me more was the fact that my best friend was feeling like this, going through this and i didnt even notice anything... nothing at all...

i looked at the mirror again.. all the words she wrote there were just so deep and heart breaking...

after a while the doctor came.. he exermined him and i stood there looking at her..

she lay there, lifeless....

i didnt have any bodies phone... but let me call mbalis phone mabye they will pick up...

i dialed.. it went straight to voicemail... i tried again

and still...

after about 5 times i gave up.. mabye its bately low...

doc : mhm....

mom : anything yet doc?? will she be owk??

doc : she had an overdose of drugs.. we need to get her to the hospital...

mom : no... we cant.. cant we make this room health friendly and treat her from here...please..

doc : bringing hospital equipments to the house?? i dont think so....

mom : please...

doc : well i could, but as soon as she gets to a point were she needs to go to the hospital, we taking her there...

mom : no problem...

doc made a call.... then came to us..

doc ; the equipments are coming.. for time being.. please change her out of the wet clothing and put her into something warm...

me : sure.. i dont mind...

mom ; no milo... she is a lady.. only a lady should do it...

me : *sigh*.. owk... but please dress her in this..

i took out my tracksuite.. it was a trackpants, jacket, shirt and socks..

mom ; owk... she must really be special to you hai??

me : i told you shes my friend...

she smiled and signaled for me to go...

i left and waited outside...

after a while mom got out and pulled me to the living room...

mom : i wont lie.. i am so dissapointed in you at this moment.,. but am also very proud of you for the humanity you showed...

me : so you not scared that this street kid would steal your collections?? (smile)..

mom : (chuckled).. am sorry... i was just worried nje....

me : i know...

mom : i have seen how you look at her.. even at her worst you still give her that look?? that means shes really special...

me : i dont know what you talking about ma!...

mom : dont deny it... i see you love that girl...

me : what does it matter?? she could leave me...

mom : or actually live....

me :

my dad then walked in... he walked in with the guys bringing in the equipment..

dad : and then.. whos sick??

me and mom looked at each other and looked at dad...

mom : sit down honey...

dad sat down and the fear took over...

.

.

.

****bra G****

i was sitting in the bulcony looking at the skies and the view as i sipped on my whisky...

my phone rang again.. its tk...

me : are you bringing the boy??

him : well.. we otside the house and we see there is a truck that is offloading hospital equipment to the house..

me : what?? why??

him : i think mabye the guy is harmless mabye he called in a home doctor to check on her..

me : but if the doctor is coming to check if shes owk, why would they brink equipments??

him ; i dont know bra G... so what do we do..

me : send me the location, am coming down... there is alot of missing pieces to all this...

him : owk bra G.. am on it...

me : make it snappy.. i want to be there tonight...

him ; yes sir...

i hung up...

i then stood up packing my stuff.. then i booked a guesthouse in pe...

i received a message from tk..

i then got prepared and called in other guys and we went down.. i left paballo to watch everything here as i leave...

[12/14, 08:20] Zoaness: ome

The villagegirl an the playboy: arranged marriage

124

.

.

.

.

.

- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .

****few days later****

****mbali****

i woke up and the sight i saw was rather a surprise...

as i opened my eyes i saw my mom, dad, nonhlanhla, nompilo, siyabonga, bongani and lastly siya... ohh i forgot lihle, kuhle and sihle....but they were playing and not minding me... but i was actually looking for milo.. i didnt see him...

i got teary at that moment and tears just came out... to think how disrespectful i was to them and how i

pushed them away, i didnt think for once i would ever see them happy aaround me..

my mom came to me and smiled..

mom : why?? why drugs mbali?? why?

me : am sorry mom.. they were just my way of escaping the world...

nompilo : why didnt you speak to anyone??

me : everyone was too busy with their lifes to even want to know how i was doing...

dad : mbali my child.. can i ask what made you go that route??

i looked away... i then looked at smanga and he looked down and then i looked at dad and looked down...

dad : is it the situation of me not being your father??

me :

siya : i think we should give her space and lets just support her and make sure she is owk.. the rest shall be solved after..

nonhlanhla : i missed you mbali... i missed the real you...

me : miss me?? pshhhh... girl you old now you should be missing ayanda.. not me.. i am not your girlfriend...

everyone giggled....

nompilo : stay strong girl...

me : dont worry, i am strong as a bull.. ngi hinkunzi...

everyone laughed....

nonhlanhla : now thats the mbali i know...

me : ohhh shut up...

she chuckled...

mom : we really missed you my child.. and i am sorry for how we last spoke.. i was angry...

me : i am also sorry for challenging you... guess i shouldve listened to uncle siya when he once said that i should act 13 not 31...

siya : yah.. but now i am going to update it.... act 18 not 81....

me : ooooooooouuuuuu.. i didnt know 81 year olds act so freshly like me?? i thought they be sitting and kneeting while having tea...

everyone laughed...

siya : you know what i mean...

me : dont worry uncle.. i get you...

i smiled...

me : thank you all for being here.. this sight here just melted my heart.. i want to say i am really sorry for everything i ever did to yall... causing yall stress and making yall crazy...

nonhlanhla : mom was litteraly getting crazy..

me : i see that....

we all laughed as mom playfully aimed to hit me and nonhlanhla...

mom : i still can beat yall up girls...

we laughed again...

me : **sigh** i am really sorry though...

bongani : well i guess we have our old mbali back even though i never got to see how the new mbali was...

siya : hai i also wanted to see hai...

mom : trust us you dont want her to go there...

me : i will role play for yall one day...

we all laughed...

me : i see my husband has devorced me and kuhle and sihle also dumped me...

they laughed looking at the 3 kids playing...

me : i really must thank god that milo helped me and brought all of yall here...

mom ; yah.. that young mahn really saved you and helped the old mbali back.. i owe him my life..

dad : i am just happy becouse all my son inlaws are just amazing and kind and loving...

me : dad... who said milo is your son inlaw...

dad : owk then, am apeaking into resistance...

we laughed...

mom : so do you have the erdge to do.... you know??

me : well..... drugs??..... huh... yes... sometimes i shake and crave for a fix.. but milo sits down with me and tries to distract me from thinking about it... he watches me cry and scream becouse i am really craving for some... he doesnt leave the room untill i am settles.. he feeds me, helpes me calm down..

mom : reminds me of what kevin also did for me...

me : huh??

mom : huh... nothing.. nvm....

i looked at smanga and i knew that there was a gab that needed to be filled.. there was something i should do to close this gab.. and its forgiveness..

me : huh.. fam.. cani please speak to smanga.. alone...

they nodded and left... i was then left with smanga alone...

me : hay...

him : hay...

me : hows smangele??

him : growing.. she can walk and talk and that a worry becouse she is very naughty..

me : haha... sounds sweet...

him : yah...

me : and lebo??

him : shes owk.. she has been of help...

me : thats great...

him : yah...

me : smanga i.....

him : can i go first??

me : owk...

him : i know what i did was wrong.. telling you its over and not giving you a chance to express your feelings was selfish of me... i was just hurt to see you leave and thought that mabye if i just leave you without thinking about it then io would feel better but

in true fact i was wrong.. and i am sorry.. i know if i had handled it better you would have never turned to drugs...

me : thats rubbish... i turned to drugs because i was forward and liked things... with the stress of school, my father, and life.. i really thought i could excape it... i searched for healing and love in wrong places.. so dont blame yourself for it....

him : i guess so...

me : i just wanted to say am also sorry.. its just that i really had my whole heart on you... your were my source of happines, my life.. and the fact that you took my innocence away.. that made me even more angry...

him ; am sorry...

me : its owk.. no worries.. its all in the past now.. i guess this gab has finally closed...

him : can i give you a hug cuz..?

me ; sure you can cuz...

we hugged and i was teary..

after a while we broke the hug...

me : thank you...

him : no.. thank you...

me : cousin for life??

him ; cousin for life...

we laughed...

.

.

.

****milo****

i was in the living room with the rest of mbalis family... as i was busy on my phone, my mom tapped my shoulder..

i turned...

me ; mom?

mom : we cant allow them to leave without feeding them or taking care of them.. so i still have my cookies so here go buy drinks..

me ; they so damn lucky huh.. i mean my stingy mom never gave me money for drinks...

she playfully hit me and smiled...

me : ouch ma...hahah...

mom ; go buy the drinks....

me : yes mam...

i walked out and before i even got out siya came to me..

him ; going somewere??

me : haha.. yah, my mom kinda sent me to the shop...

him : ohhh owk... can i have few minutes of your time??

me : if you not gonna scare me this time then sure...

him ; hahah... owk...

we walked to the gate...

siya ; i want to say thank you... i see you took my advice that you should treat mbali as you would like your sister to be treated...

me : yah.. i had to take that advice, i didnt want to be killed by you hai...

him : hahaha... wow...

me : hahaha.. am just kidding... but i will always treat her great.. she is my bestfriend and i care about her.. i just didnt know she was a user.. if i had known, i would have done something sooner..

him ; yah.. we all had that wish...

me ; i feel bad becouse we were bestfriends..

him : its all good.. atleast you saved her.. i heard you keep seeing her miserable...

me : yah.. i keep seeing her crying, screaming, in her worst.. sometimes we dont sleep whole night becouse she is searching and wanting a fix...

him : she looks owk now..

me ; wait till it starts creeping in.. she turns whiled.. i sometimes even have to climb on her and lay on her and hug her so that she doesnt stand up and run to get a fix..

him ; eash.. must be draining,...

me : i actually dont mind.. i care for her.. so everything i do, i do it because i care...

him ; or because you love her..

me ; now you sound like my mom... come on, shes just my bestfriend... cant a guy and a girl be friends??

him : mhm.. i was also once my wifes bestfriend.. actually in the begining i didnt want her.. then we became friends, now we happily married and i dont want nothing ngaye...

me : woow... how is that possible??

him : well it was an arrainged marriedg...

me : those things still exist kanti??

him : yep..

me : hahaha... lol... well i better go to the shop before my mom comes out here and sees that am still here..

him ; sure.. let me not keep you...

i smiled and left to go to the nearest shop...

as i came back i was attacked by 2 men.. they

.

.

****milo****

they took me to a car and shoved me inside..

milo : hay.. what do yall want?? please.. let me go...

i turned and someone got in the back seat.. he looked like he was the boss...

i moved very close to the door...

him : am sorry i scared you... its just that i need answers and this is the only way i know how to get them...

me : what do you want from me?

him : just answers... you promise to answer me and do as i say, then i will promise to let you go.. how about that??

me : (swallowed)... owk....

him ; good... lets begin.. i am sure that there is a girl in your house named mbali... true or false??

me : what do you want from her??

him : see, this is how you fail at school... i said true or false??

me ; false...

him : mhm... i am going to give you one last chance...true or false..??

me :.....owk... owk... true... but what do you want from her...?? huh?? ohhh i see, you are her dealer right?? well i have something for you.. kill me but you will stay away from mbali...

him : huh??

me : how much does she owe you?? huh?? how much..?? name your price and i will pay and after that you shall set foot away from her.. you here me..

him : dont speak to me like that....

me :.....

him : mbali is a user??

me : kanti vele who are you?? and what do you want??

him : i am goerge dlamini... mbali's biological father...

me : what??

him : yes.. thats who io am.. but people call me bra G.. from years back while i used to be a drug dealer...

me : huh?? you were a drug dealer??

him : yes...

me : i dont believe you... no... i dont...

him : her mother is sbongile right....

me : right... but how..?? how did you find her and where were yall all the time... i thought mbalis mom didnt know the father...

him : is that what she said??

me : no.. mbali said her mom said it...

him : ohhh..

me : so why did you bring me here?/

him : i need a favour from you....

me : what favour??

him : i need to see mbali...

me : and what do i have to do??

him : get her to agree to meet me an let me meet her...

me : as in like bring you in the house??

him ; is there any other way to meet her??

me :.....(i looked away)....

him : so you will do that...

me : only if you tell me how you met with her mom, when you knew about mbali and why you left her, how you found her and why you are back... if you not gonna say anything then you would rather forget because i will not put mbalis life in dangour...

him : (chuckled).... a man that would rather die then put her lady in risk... i am impressed.. my daughter has found herself a diamond...

me : she is my bestfriend...

him : ofcouse...

me : so?.. i am waiting...

him ; owk... so 19 years ago.. sbongile was at some house and i was supplying drugs to her...

me : sbongile was a drug addict??

him : yes.. and i was her supplier....

me : what??

him ; yah.. so one time she couldnt pay her dept as she was always crediting from me.. so i said that she should sleep with me for a week to settle her dept...

me : what??

him ; i know i know.. it sounds crazy.. but she had to pay in a way and she didnt have money.. i wasnt about to let her go without paying.. plus i didnt rape her.. it was agreed on...

me : woooooow...

him ; so months later, i was told that shes pregnant with my child.. she also came to tell me.. i told her to abort the child and leave me out of it.. and if she decides to keep the baby, then she should keep me out of it..

me : why??

him : come on... if cosmo and gadaffi had kids.. dont

you think it would be dangerous for the kids in this world?? i mean all your enemies would use them as an advantage to getting you to be weak... i mean look at jack.. his enemies go after his family to get to him..

me : but you were not a big time thug mos??

him : still, i wasnt fit to be a father... having a kid meant me leaving what i knew all my life and starting a clean life.. and that was going to be a hard thing for me...

me : so have you started thinking of starting a new life?? thats why you back...?? wont your enemies come for mbali now??

him : well no.. i kinda still live that life.. am only here to look in my daughters eyes and let her know that her father still thinks of her.. thats all.. after that i will be going back to were i came from...

me : you had 18 years to do that? why didnt you come years ago.??

him : i was in prison.. i recently just came out about 3/4 months ago...

me : prison??

him ; yes.. so months after mbali was born, i was caught.. i had alot of drugs that i had to move in my car and i was caught with it.. so they gave me 16 years...

me : 16 years??

him : well inside i would still have excess to them and i also go caught.. so first they gave me 12 years but as they caught me again they added 4 more years...

me : ohhh...

him : so i spent 16 years in prison... the 1st year i was just bullied, and being beaten.. being shown the inside of prison but as years passed i began showing them what i am capable of and met brothers in there.... and that changed me.. hearing them talk about their families made me think about my unknown daughter.. whether she is alive or not... untill one time i asked on of my friends in the outworld to check if sbongile kept the baby.. and word came that indeed she kept her.. that moment i

startd praying... it had been a while since i actually prayed but i did.. i was thanking god for convincing sbongile to keeping the baby....

me : you never used to pray when you were young??

him : no.. see i grew up on the streets.. when i was 7.. we were thrown off the streets by my fathers uncle... they said that my mother killed my father so they killed her and threw us out.. but truth is they just wanted my fathers monies and companies...

me : what? how do you know its them??

him : i just assumed becouse my brother also believed that..

me : were is your brother now??

him ; died...

me : am sorry..

him ; dont be.. he probably decerved it.. as many would say..

me : why do you say that??

him ; so as we lived on the streets.. he would leave

me at our sleeping gave and promise to come back with food.. which he did.. for 2/3 years he did that... but one day they went to break in a house.. i went with him but i was told to wait at a distance.. saw them go in and break in.. after a while i heard gunshots.. they came running but one bullet reached my brother right at the back and he fell down.. the other guys left him there and ran to me pulling me to run with.. i refused.. so they left me aswell and i ran to my brother..the guy who shot him came to me and looked at me so dirty i will never forget the look.. then went back in the house.. it took hours before ambulances and polices came..

me : jho.. thats sad..

him : yah.. from there on i was alone now.. so i had to keep myself strong.. and thats when i found my first job... selling drugs around... i worked for a guy named scar.. all the years that he even took me as a brother.. the drugs i was moving, were his..

me : did he visit you in prison? or try to bail you out??

him : well he tried helping me but he couldnt do

much.. but yes he kept visiting me.. and everytime i used to tell him how much i wish years would pass so that i would meet my daughter.. just to say hallo...

me :

him : scar asked why dont i ask sbongile to bring her here...

me : and??

him : i didnt want my baby to see me like this, in prison.. no.. it wouldve left a scar on her..

me : i see..

him : so i finally got out.. my first thought was my daughter.. but i really couldnt say much becouse i didnt know were she was, what she does and so on...

me : mhm...

him ; so i hired some people to tail her down and thats how i knew that she is here..

me : which you right she is..

him : and thats why i need you to speak to her first.. prepare her to seing me.. please.. you the only one

that can help..

me : and what if she doesnt want?/

him : then i will walk away and continue with my life..
i mean she wouldnt be wrong to be angry right.?? i
disowned her.. but i had my reasons.. so now its up
to you..

me : me??

him : yes.. if whether you help me or not..

me : do i really have a choice??

him : (chuckles).. yes you do.. again am sorry for the
violent act.. its just all i am used to.. kind and polite
is not something am used to.. they make me look
weak..

me : (smile)... well who am i to keep a daughter away
from her father?? yes i will help.. if only you promise
not to be showing guns and knives..

him ; i will try...

me : owk... right now her family is there so i cant
quite say anything at the moment..

him : its owwk.. i will wait for your call..

he gave me a card with his numbers on and his name "bra G"...

me : sure...

him : ohh and here..(giving me R100)...

me : for??

him : i am aware i messes up your drinks.. so you can buy the drinks again.. and please buy mbali ice cream.. chocolate with chocolate sprinkles, or vanilla with strawberry syrup and sweet sprinkles....

me : how did you.....??

him ; smiles).. have a great day.. i will await for your call...

i got out the car and the car drove away.. i then ran to the shop and bought drinks.. unfortunatly here they dont sell icecream so i just bought some snacks....

i ran home and got in.. my mom walked towards me..

mom : were have you been??

me : sorry ma.. got held up...

mom : i almost got worried.. you took very long
mahn.. i even made tea for them..

me : sorry ma...

she hit me on the head...

me : mom!!

mom : you almost got my BP on a high.. i thought
something bad happened to you...

me : haha.. i am fine..

mom ; am glad you find it funny...

i smiled and looked down..

i then placed the juice down..

[12/14, 08:22] Zozaness: 125

.

.

.

.

- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .

****milo****

i was sitting on the couch watching tv... it was about 4am in the morning... i didnt actually sleep becouse mbali was going through the moment.. and i had to help her.. couldnt have left her alone...

so she just cooled down and fell asleep so i came here to relax and think...

i am caught in a situation were i dont know what to do.. i mean i know what bra G went through and i understand that indeed it was not easy for him.. he never had love.. so since he never received love, how was he going to love another person.??

i mean think about this.. you are a drug dealer who grew up on the streets and saw your brother shot.. you grew up being told to toughen up and be hardcore.. then suddenly one day you hear that a lady who you are not dating and who you dont love or see a future with is pregnant..

you know for sure that, that lady is an addict, and you are a drug dealer, how will a child be healthy in a environment like that..?? you know you cant take care of the child because of the life you living and you cant just change because its all you knew all your life.. wouldnt you advice the lady to not keep the baby?? wouldnt you want to distance yourself?? phela no one gave him a pep talk about parenthood, no one taught him to be a parent.. so him deciding to not want to be part of it was a way to save himself from hurting the baby and the lady..

but as he went to prison thats when his cell mates made him understand the importance of parenthood... the importance of love, of a child.. and that when he realised that he was wrong.. so he waited till he got out of prison to actually come back and see his

daughter.. but still no one gave him a manual of how to approach this situation.. he approached it the way he knew how.. which is by the streets rule...

"blackmail, and violence"...

so frankly i dont blame him.. he never had it easy.. he was actually being thoughtful.. imagin if he stepped up and fathered his daughter... the daughter would have been living in fear and still he would be blamed.. mbali would have gone through being kidnaped and violenced and gone through the most, maybe even died.. so i think he was being thoughtful...

but now.. i dont know what to do...

mbalis mom was an addict, and mbali doesnt know that.. her father is a drug dealer, and mbali doesnt know..

if i tell mbali the whole truth, mbali might fight with her mom and i would be blamed for the devision.. and right now i dont know who to talk to.. i mean i could speak to uncle bongani, uncle siya, or kelvin but what if they dont know and i bring caose....

i heard the door open and dad walked in....

dad : son... why you sitting here alone in the mist of the morning??

me : i just calmed mbali down so i am just here to relax and catch some breath then i will go sleep...

dad : have you considered taking her to rehab...??

me : yes.. i spoke to the people there but they need her mothers consent.. so i spoke to her mother.. she is going there today..

dad : good.. she will be better, dont worry...

me : i know she will

he went to the fridge. got some water and came to sit next to me...

dad : its really a brave thing you are doing.. i myself am glad i gave your mother a brave boy...

me : (smile..) ... thanks dad...

dad : but you cant neglect school...

me : i didnt... i will go back after mbali has gone to rehab...

dad : owk... may i ask.. what did she do that you feel you need to take care of her instead of her family taking care of her??

me : her family wont be able to help her.. she needs someone who is patient enough to hold her down and tell her everything is going to be owk...

dad : and her family cant do that??

me :

dad ; (chuckled)... dont worry, i am not complaining... i just know how loving and protective we are over our loved once...

me : mhm....

dad : owk..

he pat me on the shoulder and stood up..

me : dad??

dad : yes??

me : can i please ask you something??

dad ; sure...

he sat down again...

me : so... lets say mom didnt know her father and it happened that the father was a very bad character but his reasons for leaving mom were reasonable.. and mom was also a bad character before... and then moms dad comes to you and asks you to tell mom that he wants to see her and tell her why he left... would you??

dad : when you say bad character, what do you mean?? like a thug??

me : well somehow yes.. like a drug dealer...

dad : so the dad and the mom were drug dealers but the child didnt know??

me ; no.. the dad was a drug dealer and mom was a drug addict... and the child didnt know becouse she grew with her step dad....

dad : who is this exactly??

me : dad please.. just tell me what you would do as the middle person in this??

dad : i dont know son... this is harder then it seems..

because if i tell the mother.. she might stop the father from coming and talking... and if you tell the child you cause division...

me : **sigh**

dad : so who is it that wants you to do that for them??

me : huh... just a friend from school.. his father wants me to talk to him and knowing him, he might go crazy...

dad : rather stay away boy.. move yourself out of this...

me : owk.. thanks dad...

dad : owk.. stay well and get some rest...

i nodded and he left...

i sat there still thinking... wooooooow... what a mess..

right now the only person that seems to care from mbalis family is siya.. he looks like a guy with piece or maybe bongani... hai, this could bring problems. what if they not as piecemakers as they seem... (breathout).... WHYME??

i then switched of the tv and layed right there on the couch.. i didnt have strength to go to the guestroom...

.

.

.

****nonhlanhla****

i was sleeping in my room.. i really miss mbali..

that crazy soul... i know by now she would still be sleeping.. then when i wake her up, she goes "2 minutes"... (smiles)...

life can be really unfair....

i layed in my bed for a little while and my phone rang.... its ayanda...

me : King??

him : good morning my Queen.. how are you??

me : i am owk.. and you??

him : i am not good...

me : why?? what happened??

him : its becouse my Queen is lying to me saying she is owk knowing she is not...

me : (giggles).. really ayanda?

him : what??

me : owk.. i am keeping strong then..

him : i know you are... how is mbali??

me : she is doing alright.. i cant believe i didnt know or notice that she is on drugs.. i feel like i failed her..

him : dont stress yourself.. its not like she was obvouse.. she was just good at hiding it.. but now that its revealed and you know.. its how you support her that matters..

me : yah.. mom is even signing up for her to go to rehab...

him ; thats a good thing...

me ; yah.. but thats years of no mbali next to me.. i already feel empty with few days.. what about years??

him ; its owk.. donty worry.. she will be fine.. we will

visit her as much as possible owk..

me : owk...

him ; so dont stress, what ever you need i am here..
always.

me : thank you...

him ; no.. thank you...

we continued talking and talking on the phone...

.

.

.

****milo****

so its about 10am now and i have finally found
something i am going to do...

i have invited mbalis mom and bra G to the house...
mom and dad are not around so its good.. i have
planned on putting them in my guestroom and
locking the door untill they have done talking and
screaming...

i just hope bra G doesnt hurt mbalis mom or uncle siya becouse he is coming aswell...

a knock came and mbalis mom walked in...i invited them on different times...

her : i am here.. what is happening..?? you made it sound like an emengency...

me : this way...

i lead her to the guestroom...

me : please stay here, i am fetching mbali...

her : owk...

i left her in there... i brought her juice and told her that am locking the door.. she looked very confused but i just hoped for the best...

after a while bra G came in...

him : i knew you would do the right thing....

me : yes... most definatly.. now please no weapons...

him ; am unarmed...

me : can i check?? for mbalis safty...

him : i would never hurt my daughter...

me : its either that or no mbali...

he let me search him and indeed he was unarmed..

and mind you i said all this shaking in my boots..

me : this way...

i lead him also in the guestroom and as he walked in
i pushed the door and locked it....

her : hai wena mfana.. open this door...

me : (speaking from outside of the door)... please
sort it out.. for the sake of mbali... please...

him ; i am not afraid to break this door boy.. open
this door...

me : break it.. i call the cops...

they then went silent and the door bell rang.. am
sure its siya..

i go and open...

him ; owk.. whats so important??

me : mbalis mom and dad are in that room.. they will

need a mediator and am way too weak and small for that...

him : why would they need a mediator??

me : its not mbalis step dad.. its mbalis biological dad...

him ; what?? how did you.....??

he had this shocked conserved look on his face.. so clearly he knew something...

me : wait please.. dont let them come out of there without having to come to terms.. please.. for mbalis sake..

we then heard things break.. i quickly led siya there..

they were shouting at eachother and breaking stuff around...

me : please..

him ; owk open...

i opened and gave him the key...

me ; i trust you will think of mbali... shes my everything.. please...

he looked at me and smiled.. then closed the door and locked it...

i went to my room and mbali was trying to get out of bed...

me : and were do you think you going??

her : i heard bangs and things breaking and people shouting.. i wanted to check if you owk..

me : am good.. now get back in bed...

her : owk... but who is that.. its still going on..

me ; my.... huh... my friends.. they drunk...

her : ohhh.. owk...

me : now lets lay and watch a movie on my tablet owk...

her : owk....

i went to get snacks and we watched a move...i used my bluetooth speaker to produce sound so that she doesnt get diatracted by what is going on the other side....

i pray and hope i made the right decision...

[12/14, 12:41] Zozaness: The villagegirl an the
playboy: arranged marriage

126

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

****nurse gloria****

i just came from fetching the kids.. i get in the house

and take all their washing in the basket and take them out to the tap...

i came back and made them lunch..

me : sthembiso?? lethukuhle?? hai nina??

them : ma!!

me : where were yall?? i have been calling yall..

sthe : we were in the bedroom mama.. lethu was still getting dressed..

me : owk.. here sit.. and have your food.. dont mess owk??

them : yes mom...

i left them there and went to wash their washing outside under the tap... i use my hands.. i was also washing my husbands clothing and my clothing...

as i was removing things in my husbands trousers pockets, i found an open condom in his pocket.. at that moment i became so angry..i took the packet and put it in my pocket and continued washing..

after a while i got done hanging them..

i then went back in the house and cleaned the house,
and packing everything in order...

i then started cooking dinner...

time passed and still my husband was not here..

its now 9pm and still nothing...

lethu : mama.. is daddy coming home??

me : i dont know my boy...

sthe : i just wish he doesnt come back because he
hits you mammy...

me ;..... i know baby...

sthe : come sleep with us mammy...

lethu : yes.. then daddy wont hit you...

me : he wont hit me owk.. now you go
sleep...

they looked at me and left to sleep in their room...

i switched the lights of and went to my bedroom...i
wore my pjs and got in bed.. i couldnt sleep though...

after a while i heard the door... it means he is here...

i kept listening carefully as things kept making noise.. great.. hes drunk...

he gets in the room and i closed my eyes and covered my self with blankets so that he would think am sleeping...

i heard him stuttle as he mummbled alone and busy saying "mpumi wooooo" ... all the time.. my eyes even got teary and i cried...

him : hah.... gloria.. gloria.... hai you woman.. get your feet up right now..

i ignored him...

him : nx... its about time you leave my house.. mpumi must have a place to stay.. (talking in a drunk manner)... you must voetsek..

i still ignored him and continued crying....

him ; tadaaaatata... dumdum..... eash... mpumi.....

i forced sleep to come but it didnt...

he then started humming and humming and finally got in the bed leaving the lights on...

i waited for sometime for him to be deep in sleep
then i slowly walked out and switched the lights and
came back to sleep..

i think it took me about an hour before i actually
slept...

.
. .
. . .

****siya****

me : can yall stop acting like kids and sit down
talking about this??

they both looked at me... sbongile sat on one side of
the bed and this guy on the other side.. there was a
huge gab between them...

me : so please.. without throwing stuff around and
messing someones stuff can yall talk this through...

her : theres nothing to talk about.. this man can take
a bus to hell, i will pay...

him : actually you already too late.. i come from

there, lucifer said i should come fetch you.. its free....

me : yall are now starting to act like a bunch of kids...

him : watch what you say boy.. am way older then you...

me : then please act like it....

him :.....

me : i think i deserve to know the fathers story since i already know your story ma!.. right??

her :..... fine...

me : now baba... may you please tell me why you didnt want mbali in the first place...

he looked at me as though he wasnt going to participate...

him : owk owk.... **sigh**.....

he then started telling me everything from the time they got kicked out to his brother being shot, to him getting a job as a drug dealer and grew in that industry, to him growing in that industry, to him sleeping with mbalis mom, to him refusing to take

responsibility, and him going to prison and finally him coming out and coming here... ohh and to him involving milo in this mess...

me : *sigh*... woow...

her : thats just pity.. answer me this, why did you want me to kill the baby?? huh?

him : sbongile.. i was a drug dealer.. if my enemies or competitors new that i had a child wouldnt they want to get to her to get to me??

her : so in other words you did that to save us?? huh?? mxm.. you just using words nje.. just admit you have no right to come here claiming your child...

him : i have every right... shes my daughter...

her : the daughter you wanted me to abort??

him : **sigh** ohhhh mahn... are you ever gonna stop using that against me... lady i was still young... clueless.. hallo....

her : young my foot....

me : owk owk.... the fact here is not about who did what or who said what.. its about mabli... whats best

for her...

they both looked at each other....

her : vele vele, after meeting your daughter, what are you gonna do?? go away again??

him ;.....

her : i asked you a question... i mean if you wont be in her life after this then you might aswell just leave and skype her...

him I;.....

me : well baba... are you planning on staying after this??

him : no... well i am not sure yet.. i didnt come here to split the family.. i am also not going to take mbali from you.... i just want to get to know her for these few weeks and thats it...

me : just a few weeks...??

him ; yes.. then i will go and continue with my life... i will still be intouch with her on the phone and still come on her important days.. like christmas, newyear, her birthday, and graduations.. yah and all

that...

me : well ma... remember when you came back from jhb to take care of your kids.. nompilo was already old and nonhlanhla... they didnt even want to speak to you becouse you were hardly there for them.. they hated you becouse they thought you had aborndoned them..

her : yah...

me : well this is the same situation.. mbali might also hate her father for aborndoning her until all is explained... so this means she must know the truth.. actually its time for your kids to know the truth...

her : what?? of my past??

me : yes.. its time.. you have hidden this for long now.. rather tell them this and let them get around it.. then only after this family will have piece...

she looked down and rubbed her head...

me : so, 1st thing first... this must be done before she leaves for rehab...

her : they coming to take her today... (looked at bra

G).. did you know that she is an addict aswell??

him : i recently found out...

her : yah... your drugs.. that you sell, finally landed on your daughters nose and almost killed her.. she almost overdosed on them..

he looked shocked and looked down...

me : owk.. owk... mbali...

they both went silent...you know its really a shame that instead of them sitting us down as grownups we are the once sitting them down as if they kids... mxm...

me : since they fetching her tommorow, yall will tell her today.. i will call kevin and the rest of the family.. this must be the last time we make milos familys house a place for gatherings.. i dont like this..

her : owk..

me : so now, please go and freshen up and prepare.. we shall meet here tonight.. but first i will ask milos parents to see if they agree...

they nodded....

i unlocked the door and went out going into were mbali was..

i called milo, greeted mbali...

milo ; uncle siya.. how did it go??

me : well.. but its still about to get worse.. becouse once uncle kevin sees uncle goege.. its war...

milo : you think??

me : i know...

milo : so what now??

me : well firstly i must admit, you are very brave and i admire what you did... all this trouble just for "your everything"??

milo : haha... yah... i care..

me : well mbali is leaving for rehab tomorrow.. so i will speak to your parents about us crashing in your house just for tonight so that we sort this mess, but we will be gone by 10pm.. i hope.. then tommorow, mbali leaves knowing the whole truth about his mom and dad...

milo : woow.. owk..

me : you look down..

milo ; nah.. i just didnt expect her to be leaving so much...

me : hahah... just an advice.. better tell mbali how you feel about her before she leaves.. we dont know how long she might be in there..

milo :

me : love is never easy.. but its strong.. if its truely love then you will overcome the distance.. owk?

milo : yes uncle...

me : uncle?? hahahaha.... wow....

milo : (smile).. have you ever thought of being a therapist? or councillor??

me : hhahahah.. no... i love cars so i stay there.. plus am an upcoming chief...

milo : yah... the kindom must rejoice becouse its chief will only bring piece..

me : hahah.. yah...

milo : your wife is lucky to have you.. you a good mahn...

me : yah... mbali is also lucky to have you.. you a brave mahn...

milo : hahaha...

me : i must admit.. uncle kelvin and aunt sbongile are the luckiest people on earth.. to get the best sons in laws...

milo ; hahaha.. yah.. guess its all Gods work...

me : i would say their grandmother has something to do with this...

milo : hahaha... you think...

me : mbali told you about her??

milo : yes... amazing grandmother....

me : yah... the reason i am married to nompilo... we laughed...

[12/14, 12:42] Zozaness: The villagegirl an the playboy: arranged marriage

127

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

****siya****

right.. so milos parents have accepted for us to meet here for the last time...

so we all were sitting in the living room waiting for uncle Goerge... milo was in the room with mbali...

the family didnt know that we waiting for mbalis biological father....

kevin : so, since we all here, can we be told what we doing here??

bongani : yah.. i mean i have paperwork to finish...

me : yes.. about that.. we still short of one person..

kevin : who??

everyone looked at me waiting for me to answer.. and i looked at aunt sbongile...

me : yall will see when the person arrives..

after a while the door bell rang and milos mom went to open...

bra G : huh.... sanbonani...

everyone greeted back except uncle kevin..... unckle kevin stood up and looked at uncle Goerge...

kevin : what the hell are you doing here??

uncle didnt say anything.. instead he just looked at kevin...

kevin : i said, what are you doing here??

goerge : same reason you here.... to confess..

kevin : confess?? what do you think this is?? huh... the babtism church??

goerge : if i had thought that, i would have brought my changing clothing to change, dont you think??

kevin : you son of a

kevin rushed to him and landed a fist on goerges face and goerge landed a fist back at kevin.. and they started fighting... the ladies were making noices and screaming... milos dad, bongani and myself tried to stop them...

i held goerge and bongani held kevin.. milos dad was in the middle..

me : men.. please stop..

bongani : kevin, calmed down..

kevin : calm down?? this bastard here messed up my wife and i must calm down??

goerge : you punch like a girl.. try harder next time..

me : goerge please.. you pouring fuel on fire...

kevin : well if i punch like a girl, tell bongani to let me go and i will show you how girly i can be...

goerge : ohh bongani please let him go.. i would like to see this...

milos dad : if yall dont calm down at this minute.. i will ask all of yall to leave my house..

they didnt say anything but kept looking at each other...

milos dad : there is a soul in here that needs help and yall are here acting like teenagers.. i would understand if milo was the fighting with one of his mates.. but not you grown man... come on.. not in my house.. if yall wanna fight.. then youi welcome to go out...

they calmed down still having anger on their faces...

we let them go and we sat down...

me : thank you... now before we all go in the room were mbali is we are going to make everyone aware of what is happening... so this man you see here is mbalis biological father..

everyone was shocked.. except for me and sbongile ofcourse..

me : so we all know that mbali is going to rehab tomorrow morning and will only come out waaaaaaaay later.. so we here today to give her the right goodbye even though we will still visit her.. then nompilo, nonhlanhla finally your mom will be opening up to you about what actually happened for her to abandoned yall... now please. lets be civil...

kevin looked at sbongile...

kevin : you sure??

sbongile : its time...

me : owk.. lets go...

we all went in.. nompilo, nonhlanhla, bongani, sbongile, kevin, goerge and myself...

milos dad : will you call milo for me??

me : sure...

i smiled at him and we went in sitting down.. i didnt even have to call milo becouse he just excused himself..

milo : i will be with my parents.. (looking at mbali).. calm down owk.??

he then left...

mbali : hay fam... i have heard that am going to rehab tomorrow.. will yall miss me??

mom : never....

we all laughed...

she started getting teary...

me : i am going to miss yall...

dad : hay no tears baby.. we will always visit..

me : (smiled)... so fam.. whos getting married??

me : huh??

she looked at goerge...

sbongile : ohhhh... this is goerge...

mbali : ohh hay uncle goerge.....

sbongile : he is your father...

mbalis facial expression changed and she was shocked...

mbali : what?? ma!! i thought you said.....

sbongile : i know... which is why i want to come clean today...

mbali : come clean??

he calmed mbali down and they started speaking...

sbongile, kevin and goerge started talking and all this got nompilo, nonhlanhla and mbali in tears...

i had mbali in my arms trying to comfort her and make her cool down.. bongani had nonhlanhla and nompilo in his arms trying to comfort them...

after a while there was a silence... everything was out.. no more secrets.. no more skeletons...

mbali : is there any other secrets we should know about, before i leave??

sbongile : no.. this is the last straw...

nompilo : why didnt you say anything sooner ma??

sbongile : i was scared.. there was not a easy way of telling yall all this.....

mbali : so, i am indirectly walking in my fathers footsteps??

it was not a joke but when she smiled we all laughed...

mbali : i really wanna be angry at this moment.. but i got few hours to be angry and happy again so that i dont stress at the rehabilitation center...

we laughed.. mbali can be a joke sometimes...

mbali : i am happy that i found my father.. actually that he found me... i am also happy that you came clean to us mommy..

sbongile : so you not angry??

mbali : i want to be... but yall lucky your mother is taking that anger away from me...

me : now that all is well... we will leave mbali and goerge to talk alone then we will come and say our last goodbyes....

everyone agreed and we left..

as we got to the living room i gathered everyone....

me : owk everyone, we only have few minutes to make something small for our little girl..

nompilo : a little small party??

me : yah..

nompilo : oooooouuu..

milos mom : wow.. you have great minds son...

nompilo ; hay... i am the manufacture of that mind...

we all laughed..

we started coming up with something small...

.

.

.

****mbali****

him : i am glad i finally found you...

me : yah... even though we met in such situations..

him : it doesnt matter.. i just wanted to meet you..

me : yah... so are you going to go back to that life??

him : thats the only life i know.. i know nothing apart from that life...

me : but you could try nje....

him ; (chuckles).... i dont know....

me : just try daddy.. for me.. please...

him :.....

after a while.. we walked out and went to the living room.. i was leaning on uncle goerge...

dont look at me like that.. i mean i grew calling my dad "dad" and he will always be my dad.. so with uncle goerge in the picture i will call him uncle..

we walked in and they had made a little dinner for me..

me : ncoooooo.... thank you...

we sat down and had our fun.....

.

.

.

****milo****

we were having fun and suddenly mbali started again.,. it wasnt something massive.. just shaking and sweating..

me : owk.. i will take mbali to bed now..

i picked her up and layed her there.. i then took a cloth and put it in cold water and started whipping her sweat...

siya then walked in...

him : this is what happenes everyday??

me : yes...

she began shaking hard and started making sounds...

siya : let me help..

he went to get water and tried givin her water, i helped her calmed down...

after a while she relaxed and slept...

siya : its time for us to leave now.. thank you and goodnight..

me : goodnight...

we fist bumped and he left.. then later mbalis mom and dad came in...

her : hay milokuhle.. we meet again...

me : hay ma!!

him : we are really greatfull for what you did for our daughter young man..

me : its not a big deal baba.. i just care..

him : you know i always tell my woman over here that we are the lukiest parents alive.. to have best inlaws...

me : hahah.. god has really blessed yall...

her : so you finally admit that this thing between you and mbali is more then just friendship??

me : i didnt admit anything ma...

we laughed..

her : haha.. anyway goodnight...

me : night.. have a safetrip...

they all left ... they had already helped clean so we had no cleaning to do...

my parents went to bed and i went to sit next to mbali...

****hours later****

i woke up and realised that i had follen asleep sitting on the chair next to mbali... and she was awake..

me : hay.. i thought you would still be sleeping..

mbali : i feel weaker by the day.. it feels like now am dying..

me : dont worry.. once you are healed, you will feel strong again...

mbali : i wish...

me : hah... listen, theres something i need to tell you...

mbali : ohhh another secret...

me : yah.. and i hope this one wont stress you up...

mbali : oooouuuu now am scared...

me : stop, you making me nervouse...

mbali : haha.. owk.. i will shut up...

me : haha... can i??

mbali : mhm...

me : owk.. so... mbali... i.... i..... i love you...

mbali : huh??

me : i know we friends but i really truely love you..
like really...

mbali :.....

me : please say something....

mbali : do you know how long i have been waiting for
you to say that??

me : hahaha really??

mbali : its been a whole year...

me : hahaha.. am i that slow??

mbali : very dude...

we laughed..

mbali : but i am going to rehab.. how are we.....?

me : not to worry.. i will visit as much as i can.. owk??

mbali : owk..

we had our own night talk and later slept...

in the morning the rehab people came to fetch her
and she left...

ohhh she will be in there for some time... depending
on her...

4 years later

[12/14, 12:43] Zozaness: The villagegirl an the
playboy: arranged marriage

128 (croptop... bonganis life update)

- .
- .
- .

- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .

****bongani****

me : mamakhe.. what did i say about walking on the stairs without me..

her : hao baba.. i wont fall.. i am being extra careful hao...

me : i am still not comfortable with you walking on the stairs alone.. i mean you have a human in you..

her : i guess theres nothing i can say to win this argument right??

me : true.. now please call me when you want to do

ups and downs on the stairs or call mama bree... she is here to help you vele...

her : kodwa baba.. hai...

i helped her down and lead her to the couch... i then gave her the remote and fetched a soft blanket for her...

me : here you go...

her : thank you babakhe..

me : now please be careful and eat.. i already made breakfast.. healthy and a little bit of your favourits..

her : ncooo.. thank you...

me : sure.. as usual mama bree will fetch lethu..
owk.??

her : yes yes.. babakhe.. go now before you be late for work...

me : hahah.. owk.. goodbye and have a great day..

i baby kissed her on the lips....

me : i love you...

her : i love you more...

i smiled and headed out...

a little update on whats happening in my life...

so about 3 years ago and few months, i met a lady called Gloria at the hospital... thing is nonhlanhla always talked about her at home and said she was an amazing woman but suspected that she was abused..

so she asked us to help her..

she and sbongile went to visit her in hospital and spoke to her.. then she indeed told them what was exactly going on.. and that the husband keeps bringing his other woman at home even if she is there and sometimes was told to sleep in the childrens bedroom...

but she couldnt move out becouse she didnt have a place to go.. so sbongile offered her a room... at first she didnt want to but eventually she is accepted...

so she moved in with sbongile and thats when i saw her... appearently they say she was the nurse that

was taking care of nonhlanhla the time she got raped and shot.. but to be honest, i didnt recognise her... i only saw her when she started living with sbongile..

she had 2 boys.. right now one is 20 and the other one is 16..

sthembiso is in varsity also studying medicine.. and lethu is in grade 9... yep he failed grade 8...

at this moment.... i am a married man.. yes you read right.. me and gloria are married.. she devorced her husband and i paid lobola to her husband..

we have been together for 3 years and have been married for 1 year and few months.. and already i am about to be a father, again... lol.

yes she is expecting a baby girl... i am super happy..

she still works as a nurse and i am still a manager at XCC...

owk we done with the update.,..

i got to work, went to my office and did my work...

.

.

.

****hours later****

its now time to call it a day.. i packed all my stuff and head out..

i got in my car, drove to the garage and filled my tank.. i then went home.. it was around 4pm...

as i got in the house i found sthembiso and lethu sitting on the couch playing racing games.. they were being so competant...

me : hay boys.. already racing away??

sthe : hay baba...

lethu : baba look.. i am winning...

me : great work lethu.. show sthe how to drive... give him pointers man...

sthe : ohh please baba.. i am just letting him win nje.. because when i win he becomes moody..

me : hahaha... were is your mother..

sthe : upstairs with mama bree... she said she was feeling pains..

me : owk.. let me go check on them...

i went up to our room...

me : hay mamakhe.. are you alright?? saubona mama bree..

mama bree : saubona nomzane..

gloria : i am owk babakhe.. just normal pains.. now get out, mama bree wants to rub me..

me : get out??

gloria : goooooooo babakhe...

me ; owk owk... hahaha..

i went back to the living room... lethu was rejoicing and jumping around dancing...

me : hai hai hai.. whats the celebration about??

lethu ; i beat him.. i won baba... 3 times..

me ; whats the score??

lethu : he only won once...

sthe : i just let him... i bet if i could play with you baba... i could win...

me ; me?? dude, they dont call me vin diesel for nothing...

sthe : hahaha.. baba they dont even call you vin diesel...

me : and how would you know??

sthe : hahha.. owk ke baba van diesel... come show me if you really know how to race..

me ; owk.. lets do this...

lethu : go baba go... show him baba...

we started the game and we started racing...

we played and he won....

sthe : haaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaa.. see i told you old man..

me : me?? old man?? oh please.. i couldve won but you see am tired.. thats why...

sthe : excuses, excuses...

lethu : let me play with you baba...

me : did you do your homework??

lethu : i dont have homework...

me : sthe?? true??

sthe : he has tons.. expecially maths.. he has few pages to fill on the DBE book...

me : get your books so that your brother and i can help you fast...

lethu : but baba....

me : either that.. or no games for the whole week...

he walked out a little irritated...

me : how was classes??

sthe : just owk.. nothing much...

me ; oh owk... help me make dinner..

sthe : make dinner and help lethu at the same time??

me : multitasking... it will teach you how to help 2 patience at once..

sthe : nice reason baba... you sure decerve a medal for best manipulator ever..

me : hahaha.. mxm...

we got up.. made dinner and helped lethu...

that right there is my little perfect

[12/14, 12:43] Zozaness: 129 (croptop... sbongile & kevins life update)

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

****sbongile****

me : mpilo no...no boy...

i picked him up...he started crying because he really wanted to play with water...

i took him to the bedroom... kevin was still laying on the bed...

him : hahaha... giving you trouble again??

me : eash.. he wants to play with water and i need to finish...

him : hai.. my laaity.. kom by my seun...

me ; hahaha... i forgot how coloured you can be..

him : hai i am coloured arnt i??

me : hahah true...

him : and since i couldnt get my girls to speak coloured, am so teaching jayden here...

me ; wow... hahaha.... good luck...

him : haha.. so what we doing today??

me : well, we could go have a picnic at the park and show mpilo around....

him : when you say mpilo, i keep thinking you talking

about nompilo.. because we also say mpilo when we cut her name short...

me : hhahaha.. i was thinking of nompilo when i named him.. i mean isnt it great to have your first born and last born to have kinda same names?

him : woooooow i never thought of that.. that was clever.. but who said mpilo is our last born??

me : hahaha.. what are you saying?? come on, am done.. i have enough kids, plus am not growing younger hai...

him : haha.. just joke my lady.. ek joke ma net...

me : you sound so cute...

him : i know...hahahah

me : mxm.. anyway please keep mpilo busy while i finish of.. if you leave her playing alone, you will find him gone and back playing with water...

him ; haha owk.. i will do that...

me : owk thanks.. will do....

him : owk go and get done.. because i know you

going to take hours...

me : lol...mxm..

i went back in the bedroom... i continued doing what i was doing...

after a while we got done prepared ourselves and prepared mpilo...

we got to the park and we sat our blanket and sat down unpacking our stuff..

me : beautiful day huh?

him : very.. right mpilo??

he just nodded and laughed...

mpilo was also a dark handsome boy...

me : well i must say,, i miss my girls...

him : hai... i also miss them.. but they grown ups now and live together..

me : is it a good idea though??

him : they not young anymore, plus they said they wanted to move out... i mean nonhlanhla is working

now and mbali is also working...

me : eash... i guess....

a little update about us...

kevin and i are now married...

his family still dont approve of me but atleast they keep checking on his kids.. they finally agreed on paying lobola even though its not something they used to..

my brothers and bongani were the once doing negotiations and all went well.. hard but well..

after we then got married and i was pregnant at that time...

we got married 3 years ago and already i was about 6 months pregnant.. mpilo is 2 years and few months now and he is a very naughty boy...

.

.

.

****hours later****

we got back in the house...

mpilo was sleeping.. we layed him in his room
(which used to be nonhlanhla and mbalis room)...

then i went to lay in my room...

i threw myself on the bed and kevin also lay next to
me..

him : shower??

me : nop... tired..

him : yah.. i think i will also pass...

me : hahaha...

he kissed me and we layed with our eyes closed..

now this is my family update with kevin...

[12/14, 12:44] Zozaness: The villagegirl an the
playboy: arranged marriage

130 (croptop...Goerges life update)

- .
- .
- .

- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .

****Bra G****

well my quick update...

i successfully bought into the max construction and changed the name to G construction.. very catchy if you ask me..

as yall know, i dont know much about construction.. the only reason why i wanted to open the business is to clear my dirty money that i made before going to prison, so that i can use it legally...

am sure you asking whether i listened to my

daughter and stoped selling drugs..

well yes.. i did... it wasnt hard though becouse i still had 37 million worth of products.. so for the first months i tried fast selling them for less.. but in thouse months i only managed to sell 12 million worth of products the rest i had to burn them...

so i burned 15 million worth of products.. 15 m? that was the biggest heartbreak of my life.. but it was worth it..

so i am staying in a nice house in jhb, randburg.. i live alone... oh yes i am a lonly man..

i spend my time at the offices checking on my staff.. sometimes spent time at the constarustion site.... otherwise i spend pool with my brothers (friends that are close to me like brothers)...

we mostly have cigars, drink wiskey and play pool with them so my day never gets borying... unless they start giving me the pep talk about me finding myself a wife..

i hate topics like that.... i mean am old now and have alot to think about already...

so done with the update....

so i was busy playing pool in my house with my brothers when my phone rang..

me : please excuse me..

they nodded...

i picked up...

me : princess..

her : hey daddy2...

me : hahaha.. how you doing my princess??

her : am good daddy2.. how are you??

me : am great.. you know i have been always great...

her : yes, i know...

me : hahaha... so what do you want princess??

her : come on daddy2.. cant i call my dad just to hear his voice??

me : mhm.. and you think i buy that??

her : well its true.. i dont want anything..i just miss you...

me : mhm... come on sinyorita, i know you...

her : owk owk... daddy2.. i surrender..

me : i knew it.. so what do you want??

her : so... i am planning on starting my own gym company.. but with the money i am earning i really cant afford to buy land and equipments.. so i was thinking.. mabye my daddy2 would really help me..

me : mhm.. i am impressed.. well starting your own business takes courage so i salut you for that.. but just becouse you have a rich daddy that can make things easy doesnt mean you shouldnt know the struggles of life..

her : what do you mean daddy2...??

me ; i mean.. your daddy2 will give you money to buy whatever you need...

her : ooooouuuuu... yaaaaahhhhhhhh.... thank you, thank you, thank you... daddy2...

me ; but.. but sinyorita.. this is be a loan.. so you have to sign a formal contract stating that this is a loan and you need to start paying it 1 year after you

have received it...

her : wait... so if i receive it now.. then i have to start paying it a year after??

me : yes...

her : but daddy2.. why should it be a load??

me : see.. if i give it to you just like that.. you wont get the struggle of life and you might just be a spoilt business owner that runs to her daddy2 everytime she faces financial strain.. so i wont be a father if i do that...

her : owk.. i understand.. i will take it as a loan then..

me : good.. my lawyers will be in touch.. so how much we talking??

her : i am not sure as yet...

me : princessor, how do you approach a sponsor without full information??

her : well i was just trying my luck..

me : second lesson.. always have your info at hand before approaching a sponsor..

her : oh owhk daddy2... but what was lesson number 1...??

me : hahaha... never think you can get an easy way out... theres easy way in life... no matter how rich your parents are...

her : ohhh.. i mustve skipped that lesson...

me : haha.. princessor i will hurt you..hahaha

her : hahaha.. just jokes daddy2.. i totally get it..

me : good... and good luck on your project..

her : owk daddy2.. i will await for your lawyers..

me : no.. untill you give me a proper proposal with all info, you not getting the loan..

her : mhm... daddy2.. lesson number 3, no changing minds..

me : well i have already said it..

her :..... owk... i will prepare the proposal...

me : good.. thats what i want to hear...

her : owk daddy2.. you always say you know nothing

business but you doing preddy good..

me : ohh thank you my princessor..

her : sho daddy2...

me : the way you keep saying daddy2.. hahaha.. its helarious...

her : hahaha...

me : how is my son in law?? milokuhle??

her : hes great.. hes owk..

me : mhm... greet him for me..

her : will do daddy2... owk.. bye..

me : bye sinyorita..

her : mwa mwa mwa.. love you...

me : love you 2 sinyorita...

her : sinyorita...hahah...

she hung up...

i laughed shaking my head...

guy 1 : that daughter of yours needs a step mom

mahn...

me : say one word about a stepmom or a wife and
am chucking you out..

they all laughed and we continued playing..

thats how my life has turned out in this 4 years...

[12/14, 12:45] Zoaness: 131(croptop smangaliso &
lebos life update)

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

****smangaliso****

me : smangele, i thought i told you not to play with daddies laptop..

smangele : sorry daddy..

me : ****sigh**** lets hope you didnt mess up my things or deleted anything... were is mommy??

smangele shrunk her shoulders and pulled a sad face and sat down playing with her fingers...

i looked at her and i sighed.. shes sad that i shouted at her...

me : baby girl.. come here...

she walked to me... i then picked her up and placed her on my lap...

me : listen, i am very sorry owk.. but you must leave daddies things alone owk.. its not a toy, its daddies working thing owk??

she nodded...

me : so am i forgiven for shouting at you??

smangele : only if i am forgiven for playing with your work thing daddy..

me : you forgiven my angel..

smangele : you forgiven too daddy..

me : mhm... you little blackmaler...

i tickled her and she laughed so hard that she ended up farting...

me : oooouuuu, who was that??

i held my nose...

smangele : hahaha.. its me daddy..

me : mhm... you just did a poo poo...

smangele : no daddy it was a fart.. if i want to make a poo poo, i go to the toilet..

me : huhhhh big girl..

smangele : yes daddy i am a big girl.. even tumi says so...

me : whos tumi??

smangele : this other boy from my school..

me : my angel... huuuuuu.. you have a boyfriend now??

smangele : no daddy, he is my friend.. hahaha...

we laughed and lebo walked in with only a towel wrapped around her waist...

smangele : mommy...mommy..

lebo : yes baby...

smangele : daddy says tumi is my boyfriend...

hahahah(she placed her hand on her mouth as she laughs)...

lebo : ohh no daddy.. you are very nosey...

smangele : hahaha... daddy, mommy says you nosey...

i played shocked at mommy...

smangele laughed...

smangele : mommy, daddy is nosey... no no no.. hes naughty...

we all laughed...

me : am naughty?? woooooow...

we laughed again..

lebo : sma baby.. did you show daddy your drawing??

smangele : ohhh no.. let me go fetch it mommy...

she ran up...

me : such a drama queen.. takes after her mom...

lebo : hai.. watch it...

i laughed..

me : you know smangele needs a baby brother dont you think??

her : not even going to answer... stop rught there...

me : hahaha.. still not ready?? come on babe its been 4 years...

her : i dont care.. baby i still need to be officially independent.. then we can talk..

me : i am working, you are studying and working.. so?? we stable..

before she could say anything smangele ran back shouting...

smangele : here, here, here..

i took it...

me : woooooow... so this is me, you and mommy??

smangele : yes.. and that is my big castle.. like the one barbie has..

me : ohhhh, so we also have a castle??

smangele : no daddy.. this is my castle... you only visiting me..

we laughed...

after a while lebo took smangele to bath and i headed to finish my work on the laptop...

so update..

as you can see.. smangele, lebo and i are very happy.. no we not married... but we living together and are happy...

well if you asking why we not married.. thing is.. we not at that stage yet.. i mean we dont need a paper

to actually define our love.. aslong as we genuinly happy then we good...

i am no more an intern.. but i still work at the XCC.. i mean it is the best car company in africa, so why not...

i still strip cars and rebuild them in new form.. but we have brought something new.. as uncle siya knows all about cars, he decided to also try resporting taxis.. like for example sporting a caracara and make it the most sexiast and flexible caracara around..

so business is good...

my woman here is studying events management.. she wants to be an events manager.. well she is studying towards a masters.. and she is actually doing practicals on the side... she plans evants and stuff but she is still on small evants, she hasnt really done something big yet...

and my little angel smangele.. well she is in crech and propably the most talkative and forward kid in that school.. she loves pink and barbies.. she is into

drawing alot... she spends most of her time just drawing.. you should see her room...full of her drawings...

well thats just my little family update...

.

.

.

****hours later****

lebo : smangele wont sleep..

me : why whats wrong??

she looked behind and smangele walked in slowly

me : why wont you sleep angel??

smangele : daddy didnt read me a story yet.. (she pulled a sad face)

me : owk, owk, lets go to your room and i will read it for you...

smangele : no.. today i want mommy and daddy to read me a story together..

me : owk.. we will...

she ran to her room and we followed.. as we got to her room she handed us a book..

me : the princess and the frog...

smangele : yes..

she got on the bed and layed ready to hear the story...

me : owk.. i will start them mommy will finish of owk?

smangele : owk..

me : once aporn a time.....

i read to her and lebo finished of.. then we hummed a little and she slept...

we tiptoed back to our room...

me : she is gonna be so smart... i heard kids who read tend to be very smart..

her : hahaha.. i wish...

we got in the blanket and had

[12/14, 12:47] Zoaness: 132 (croptop nompilo and

siyas life update)

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

****nompilo****

my babies are in grade 3.. like i cant believe it yall..

grade 3... hai.. but they are not in one class like all of them were in different classes...

we have hired a private teacher for them to help them with homeworks and assignments.. her name is naina...

me : i hope they are not being difficult..

naina : no.. not at all.. just a little patience, thats all..

me : oh owk.. guys?? are you all doing great??

them : yes mommy...

lihle : mom.. i got this one right.. look..

i went to check..

me : ohhh.. give me high 5..

lihle : no mom fist bump..

me : oh owk..

sihle : high 5 me mom...

me : ofcouse...

i high 5ed her and looked at kuhle.. kuhle looked like he was just thinking "sqedanini kanti?"...

me : kuhle?? kuhle??

kuhle : ma!

me : are you even concentrating??

kuhle : yes ma! right mam (looking at naina)..

naina : hahah... yes boy. you concentrating..

kuhle : see....

i attempted laughing but i kept myself still...

me : owk.. i came to tell yall that food is ready..

naina : huh.. thank you mrs xulu, but i had already brought lunch..

me : i have already setted the table.. you can have your lunch later.. its a way to say thank you..

naina : ohh thank you..

i smiled...siya walked in...

me : just in time papas.. food is ready..

siya : huh... i can smell it way from the gate..

me : hahah.. oh please...

siya : haha.. how are you mamas??

me : great.. just missed you..

siya : i just needed a walk.. just to cool down..

me : you will be owk.. ist not the end but the start..
your dad will forever look down on you and be
happy..

siya : i know.. did i tell you how i love you mamas..

me : everyday..

he leaned to kiss me and the kids went
"eeeeewwww..."..

we laughed...

kuhle started kissing air to immitate us and laughed..

siya : hai wena...hahah

he ran away hiding behind a chair... we laughed...

siya : how my kids doing teacher?? was anyone
being naughty so that i can give them a hiding?

sihle : are you the principal daddy?

siya : yes baby girl..

kuhle came back to sit...

kuhle : i am done with homework, daddy can we play games??

me : if teacher naina says so..

they started begging naina.. she laughed as she agreed.. they rejoiced...

siya : before the game, i have surprices for everyone..
they cheered..

kuhle : is it a new game??

lihle : or a bycicle??

sihle ; or a motorbike..

i know you thinking.." why would sihle want a motorbike instead of a doll or something..

well your little princess sihle is very hardcore because of her brothers.. they sometimes tease her or play rough with her and most of the time cry because they hurt her but she will still go back..
thats sihle for you...

me : or mabye books..

i was teasing them...

them : aaaaaaaahhhhhhhh..(they complaint....)...

we laughed..

siya : owk everyone lets go out to my car to get the presents...

sihle : even teacher??

siya : too bad i didnt get anything for her... but i will surely do next time...

they nodded and ran to the car...

siya took out a soccer shoes and a collection of superheroes...

siya : this is for you lihle and kuhle..

lihle : soccer boots!!

kuhle : superheroes!!

they cheared but already fighting about who takes which pack..

me : owk owk.. lets do this.. this is yours and this is yours..

they accepted and cheered running in the house going to show their teacher..

siya : for you princess.. this is for you...

she bought her a hockey set and rollerskaters.. she always wanted those..

sihle : yay... rollerskaters...

me ; since you bought them, you are teaching her how to skate..

siya : but mamas.. i...

me : hahah.. you teaching her..

siya : plus she will wake up early in the morning and come want us to teach her..

me ; mhm..

we laughed...

sihle also ran in the house..

me : i wonder what you got me..

siya : and this is for you...

he handed me a wrapped box with tiny holes around..

me : whats this??

siya : hold it with care... please...

me : what is it??

siya : open...

i opened and it was a small puppy with an envelope in there...

me : ncooooo.. look at this.. its a puppy...

siya : yah.. i know how you have always wanted dogs after you got to like them instead of being scared of them... its a boy and i havent named him...

me : well, how about sandy...

siya : you watched annie right??

me : hahaha.. but he is also a sandy colour so yah..

siya : ok sandy it is..

me : whats in here??

siya : look..

i opened and it was the tickets to a classic jazz launch...

me : get out of here..

siya : haha.. true..

me : how did you??

siya ; i am a chief right.. so i managed..

i hugged him and kissed him...

me : thank you papas..

siya : its a pleasure mamas...

so quick update..

siyas father has passed away.. its been 2 months since he passed.. my kids are in grade 1.. lihle and kuhle play soccer and sihle plays hockey.. she says netball is a girly sport...hahaha...

siya is now the chief.. and thats just about it about us..

my little happy family....

[12/14, 12:48] Zozaness: 133 (croptop nonhlanhla and ayanda's life update)

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

****nonhlanhla****

a little update..

so mbali and i moved out of our parents house and found a room to rent together.. well we needed

some freedom and fresh air but also some disciplin of life..

so i am now an artichecter and i work solo.. meaning companies call me if they want an artichector, i am not under a company.. i am also still furthering my studies.. i want to have a PHD if possible..

so far so good.. i have been booked by 2 companies so it means the money is great.. my job is very exciting.. i am very excited for more opportunities...

so today ayanda was having dinner with me at my place.. mbali is sleeping over at milos place so its all sorted...

ayanda still lives with his parents but he is also thinking of moving.. but his moving means going to cape town.. the news upsetted me but i guess we can try the distance relationship...

ayanda is on the route of law.. and he is doing his artickles...

finally i am done making dinner and the door bell rang..

i went to get the door..

me : ahhh king...

him ; roses for my Queen...

me : mhm... smells very nice.. thank you..

him : my pleasure..

i opened for him and he came in..

me : did you steal them from someones garden?/

him ; jahaha.. Queen.. am offended (he playfully touched his chest)...

me : hahaha.. with you, we never know..

him ; mxm...

he went to sit on the couch...

him ; i also brought movies.. wouldnt be a friday night without a movie right??

me : correct.. so what we watching??

him : i am a action person so mabye the equiliser or taken..

me : huh.. how about some chickflicks??

him : i knew you would say that.. thats why oi brought these..

me : ohh.. is that bad boys??

him : never watched these 2??

me : no.. plus will smith is my crush so ooouuu, can we watch it??

him : do i need to hit someone or you just joking??

we laughed...

he played it and we started watching...

the movie was great.. there were some romance, comedy and action so this was great...

we were also having some popcorns..

so after the movie i asked for part 2.. but he didnt have it..

me : am angry..

him : eat some popcorns you will be owk..

he laughed and i uninterntionally laughed..

me : anyway, hope you hungry becouse i made

dinner..

him ; i am indeed starving. but you know what am thinking??

i smiled as i saw him coming towards me and kissed me..

me : what were you thinking??

we were now speaking in kisses and him rubbing his hands on my thighs.. my blood rushed up and i knew that i wanted him now..

him : how about some energy boosters..

me : mhm...

him : like...(kissing my neck)...

me ; hahah.. owk mr.. behave.. i am hungry..

i stood up leaving him sitting on the couch..

him ; yaz intoni.. ndiyakthanda mahn..

me : ndiyaz.. nam ndiyakthanda..

him : hehe.. look whos learning xhosa...

me : meeeeeee...

he shook his head and laughed coming to the dining table...

i dished up and we sat down having dinner...

him : did you cook or bought takeaways??

me : cooked..

him ; u yaxoka...

me : thank you...

him ; did you even know what i said??

me ; you said its nice..

him ; hahahaha.. no.. i said you lying...

me : haha.. ohhhhhh mxm.. now i feel stupid..

him ; thats becouse you are..haha..

i looked at him smiling as he laughed and took a little piece of my meat and threw it at him...

him ; Queen.. you wasting...

me : am stupid, arnt i??

him : haha, no you not..

me ; mxm..

he laughed...

me : if am stupid wena you dome..

him ; me dome?... hahaha..you wish..

me : i wished and santa said wish granted and look at you today..

i laughed as he pulled a shocked face...

he stood up and tried catching me.. i ran for my life.. as i got to the stairs he caught me and picked me up like i was a sack of potatoe..

he took me to the bedroom and threw me on the bed.. then layed on me..

him : you really sticking to me being dome??

me : mhm...(i nodded)..

he tickled me a little and then planted kisses on me..

[12/14, 12:49] Zoaness: The villagegirl an the playboy: arranged marriage

134 (croptop mbali and milos life update)

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

****mbali****

me : milo, guess what??

him : mhm.??

me : daddy goerge has agreed to fund my gym project...

him : really??

me : yah... but he is only doing that as a loan.. so i have to pay him back at some point...

him : i think thats wise.. i mean it would teach you how to be responsible...

me : i am already responsible...

him : hao.??

me : mxm... anyway, i need to start making a formal proposal..

him ; and ??

me ; i need you to please help me with it...

him : owk.. i will help but not do it for you...

me : i was hoping you would do it for me..

him : hahah.. nop... i can only help..

me : owk if you do it then we will be partners.. 50/50

him : lesson number 1.. always think solo before just giving shares... shares are very valuable...

me : thats like lesson number 4 in my books..

him : hahaha.. hai mbali...

me : what?? haha..

him : anyway.. guess what??

me : you going to do the proposal for me??

him : mbali ??

me : you said guess.. so i was guessing...

him : hahaha.. tjo, whos child are you mara?? haha'

me : i am my mothers child..

him : hahahaha...

me : owk owk.. what then??

he gave me an envelope...

me : what is this??

him : open it...

i opened it and OMG... someone tell me this is not a dream...

me : get out of here...

him : hahaha... you like it??

me : i have never been overseas?? what??

him : well thanks to my lovely parents i managed to get them...

me : woowooooow babe.. i dont believe it.. like we going to UK??

him : yes..

me : aaaaaaaaaaaaaahhhhhhhhhhhhhhh.... thank you, thank you, thank you, thank you... i love you...

him : i love you too babe....

me : oh my word, i so cant wait....

him : i also cant wait.. i mean having you be the last thing i see before i sleep and the first thing i see when i wake up for 12 days...

me : great.. i also would enjoy that..

him : you know what else i am going to enjoy??

me : what??

i said that smiling and giving him the seductive look at he came close to me. and came to my ears to wisper...

him : FOOD!!

me : nx..

i slapped him as he laughed and ran away..

him : speaking of food, dinner is ready..

i stood up going to help him dish up..

so update...

i live with nonhlanhla.. as you all know...

at this moment i am a personal trainer, radio presenter at 947 and a waitress (for now).... with waitressing i am just working my way up to ending up working at private lodges and all...

milo is a doctor.. he is doing practices now.. and i think its his last year....

we have been together for about 4 years now and all he just does for me and bring me happiness.. i just love him..

our dream was always to travel and now we are starting..

this uk trip is one of many trips...

and thats my life update....

[12/14, 12:50] Zozaness: The villagegirl an the
playboy: arranged marriage

semi final

135

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

****weeks after****

****nompilo****

me : stop running around guys.. remember we have guests coming owk..

lihle : its kuhle.. he wants to hit me..

me : kuhle??

kuhle : i was playing with him.. you can ask sihle..

me : owk you 2.. no fighting or playing rough.. you getting yourselves dirty...

them : owk mommy..

siya : owk owk.. bus coming through...

sihle : go daddy go...

me : papas... uzowisa umtwana..

siya : hahaha... i wont.. right sihle??

sihle : right.. daddy is strong and big...

me : hahaha...

kuhle : me too daddy.. pick me up like sihle..

lihle : and me and me...

siya : all of yall?? daddy is not that strong...

they sobbed...

me : dont worry my babies.. he is going to pick all of yall up.. angithi hes strong and big...

they cheared... siya looked at me..

me : hahaha.. pick the kids up "strong, big daddy"...

siya : i am going to get you...

i smiled and went to prepare the table..

after a while i heard people talking.. i am sure they here...

me : ohhhh nonhlanhla... mbali..... how are yall??

nonhlanhla : very tired.. i mean the drive is super long hai...

me : hai.. atleast you here for 3 days, so you will have time to relax owk...

nonhlanhla : i wish...

mbali : hahaha... you just sad you are going to be sleeping in a different room with ayanda for 3 days..

me : vele how are things with you and ayanda??

nonhlanhla : amazing..

me : i am glad... and you mbali.. hows milo..

mbali : hes brown in color and tall...

me : hahaha.. yah neh.. i forgot that you are mbali...

mbali : hahaha.. i shall never change..

me : ahaha.. i missed yall guys..

we hugged... then milo, ayanda, smanga, lebo and smangele walked in...

me : smangele!!

smangele : aunty nompilo!!

she came running to hug me..

me : how are you little princess??

smangele : i am great aunty..

me : good.. owk.. i will take you to sihle and the others owk??

smangele : owk...

smanga : are you gonna let us in??

me : ohhh.. the way i am so happy to see all my family at once, i even forgot that am keeping yall at the door...

i lead them to the living room... we had a nice conversation then siya walked in with lihle on his shoulders, kuhle on his back and sihle on his front...

me : SIYA!! yaz you really gonna see my other side..

ayanda : hao uncle siya.. i think you better put the kohans down before your wife turns to goukhu...

i grabed a pillow and threw at ayanda and everyone laughed....

milo : hai.. i think goukhu is already here...

i looked at milo and smiled at him still acting angry..

me : you wanna be next..??

he shook his head.,..

me : sihle, kuhle, lihle get off your father and come play with smangele..

lihle : shes a girl...

me : sihle is also a girl...

they kept quite as they looked at each other...

sihle : huh smangele.. do you wanna play race cars?? or mabye superheroes..

smangele : huh.. owk.. we will also play barbies right?

lihle and kuhle laughed as sihle smiled...

they then left to their room....

smanga : yah neh... triplets..

me : tell me about it.. then i have a husband who is rough with them..

mbali : i see sihle is slowly turning into a boy..

nonhlanhla : i saw that...

siya : trust me i have been telling my wife that she should let me shoot another goal and mabye we

might get a girl.. in that way sihle might just behave like a girl..

everyone laughed....

milo : ngathi nyiyabona, you shoot a goal and realise its triplets again..

me : yhhhooo... you see...??

siya : hahaha.. that would be great...

we all laughed...

after a while mom,dad, mpilo, bongani,gloria,lethu and sthembiso came in...

me ; mpilo...

he smiled at me as i picked him up..

me : i will take him to the kids room...

kevin : owk..

i went and came back...

bongani : hao hao hao.. full house...

kevin : i see all my sons inlaw are here and they are happy.. wooow... merry christmas...

me : christmas is only next months dad...

kevin : well i feel like its today..

bongani : it is..

nonhlanhla : hay mama gloria.. hows the little one in there??

gloria : shes doing owk.. but giving me too much weight...

we laughed...

me : sthembiso.. no girlfriend yet or is uncle bongani and aunt gloria being hard on you??

sthe : no comment..

we laughed..

me : lethu.. i dont know wether to take you to the kids room or let you stay..

lethu : can i stay??

me : huh.....

kevin : yah.. its time he learned about marriage too...

we laughed....

me : owk.. since we all here.. lets move to the dining table.. and feast..

ayanda : hai.. uthe ukutja??

me : yebo... i am mother christmas...

milo ; i guess siya is father christmas??

siya : hoooh hoooh hoooh...

we laughed...

we sat at the table..

family by family...

we prayed and started digging in..

this family doesnt know about table manners.. they keep laughing and talking while eating...

now we at the debate about who does what and who makes what..

we had dinner then had a little talk...

kevin : so, my dearest ayanda and nonhlanhla...

when am i getting my grandchild?

we laughed as ayanda an nonhlanhla kept still

looking down

me : on to them daddy...

nonhlanhla : wena nompilo.. mhm..

kevin : am waiting...ayanda?

ayanda : huh.. soon baba.. soon...

kevin : owk.. i accept that.. and marriage better be soon too..

nonhlanhla : sure dad...

kevin : mhm..... mbali and milo??

mbali : i so knew i was next..

we laughed...

kevin ; haha.. and??

milo : dont worry baba.. marriage soon and grandchild soon to..

kevin ; just what i wnt to hear..

bongani : and you smanga and lebo??

smanga : not in a rush..

bongani : owk...

siya : owk.. so are we next or we safe??

we all laughed...

ayanda : aaaa bafuwi..

siya : yebo gizara..

we laughed so hard...

my family has been through a lot yes.. but then i am happy to be here...

if gatherings means this much fun... then i am happy.. actually we all happy

[12/14, 12:55] Zozaness: The villagegirl an the playboy: arranged marriage

136

.

.

.

.

.

- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .

****siya****

we had so much fun having dinner as a family...

am sure you asking, "were is your mom and her sister wifes and were is bra G?" well i heard they told me bra G couldnt make it yersterday but he is coming today... my mom and her youngest sister wife went to a vacation.. they needed it becouse after my fathers passing they became very sad and miserable.. so they took a short vacation and coming back tommorow.. as for the middle sister wife.. she left for good.. after the funeral she told us

she is no more coming back..

well and small update mamas forgot to mention is that she is one of the best doctors in this village.. yes she is working as a doctor now, that's why we employed naina to baby sit my kids and help with homework...

so us the guys are sitting in one room since we all slept together, and the ladies slept together in another room and the kids slept together in their room, even though they keep disturbing and coming to our room...

.
. .
. .

****hours later****

we out in the background having a braai, while the ladies cooked pap and some cravy in the kitchen and some snacks...

me : sho milo... so when are you leaving for UK??

milo : mhm.. december 5th...

me : so we spending christmas without yall.??

milo : no, we will be back on the 17th..

me : owk....

kevin : siya almost got a heartattack thinking his partner wont be here for christmas..

they laughed..

me : huh.. baba....hahahaha....

ayanda : i think nompilo must be told that shes sharing a husband with milo...

they laughed...

kevin : actually siya, milo and ayanda are married to each other..

ayanda : what did i do??

bongani : you talk too much...

we laughed...

smanga : so whos the husband here??

kevin : siya... because hes the oldest of them all.. the 2 are woman..

we all laughed...

siya : hahaha.. hao my lovie..

ayanda : (speaking like a girl).. yes baba...

we cracked ourself with laugher...

smanga : wena ayanda.. i knew you were gay...

ayanda : mxm.. watch it...

we laughed..

siya : i wonder who you heard speak like that...??

bongani : nonhlanhla ??

ayanda : hahaha.. no... my Queen speaks like a queen...

we laughed...

siya : nina.. you are all not owk...

bongani : actually siya must have been a lady.. this guy has been always gay.,...

siya : haha.. grootman... want a kiss..?

smanga : hahah.. these two... hai hai hai....

milo : are they always like these??

smanga : always ...

kevin : hai... woooow... i am just glad all my boys are married... sthe?? you should learn from them boy.. you will learn alot from these crazy guys.. i mean they all survived 4 years so far.. which is a good start...

siya : more then 4 years baba..

kevin : wena your situation is out.. yall were arranged to marry...

sthe : will do baba...

milo : how did it work out though?? like most of these marriages never work out.. well they not stable expecially sticking to one wife.. or is another one coming soon since you are a chief??

me : no.. i am sticking to mamas alone and thats it... and our marriage was so different and very crazy... like the first time we started met, we were already married by tradition becouse lobola was already paid.. and trust me it was rough...

ayanda : how??

me : first day.. she found me with a woman....

kevin : siya??

me : dont be angry baba.. its all in the past moss...

kevin : after telling this story remind me to kill you...

me : well dont kill me alone becouse grootman was the one helping me sneak in girls while mamas was in the house...

kevin : bongani??

bongani : did you really have to involve me siya??

we laughed..

me : i cant be killed alone..

milo : owk.. carry on....

me ; our relationship was like pregnancy trimesters..

ayanda : huh...

me : pregnancy has 3 trimesters right?? 1st trimeser things are not great, alot of vomiting, cravings, mood swings and nothing is showing yet... 2nd trimester

theres pain, and all but the belly is now showing a little.. then the 3rd trimester.. you happy, the little one is coming and all is forgotten.. well thats how we were..

smanga : still lost...

me : 1st trimester, i would insult her, call her names, cheat with other girls while shes there.. she never actually cared until she read my diary once and saw how i really felt about her.. she read that i didnt like her, she was unattractive and all..

kevin : what??

me ; wait baba.. hold on...

kevin : am so gonna make you pay..

we laughed..

bongani : you right diaries?? i knew you have a girl in you....

me ; mxm.. i used to...

ayanda ; please stop disturbing siya.. i cant wait to hear what changed...

me : thanks ayanda.. now as i was saying, before i was RUDLY interrupted..

everyone laughed and bongany aimed me with the tool he was holding..

me : owk so after sometime we blended to being friends.. i took her to school just becouse i was feeling guilty for mistreating her.. so we became friends and i was still busy with other girls but one day i build love for her.. i helped her gym, and all that.. and i told her that i love her..

milo : and she agreed??

me : no.. she gave me a run arround for some time..

ayanda : but yall were already married..

me ; its crazy right.. but it didnt seem like it to us.. we were married in the families eyes but once we alone, we siblings or friends...

smanga : tjho... wow,.. what a story...

milo : i understand, we were also friends before we became a couple...

me : yah...

kevn : you done.. becouse i wanna whip you and bonganis ears...

me ; question is can you run grandpa...

we laughed..

kevin : i am the next caster simenya.. dont underestimate me..

me : nahh.. have you seen how cartoons run?? they leave dust.. they even run faster then cars.. so yah caster semenya doesnt scare me..

i wanted to turn the meat then i saw kevin run to me.. i ran away almost falling as the other guys laughhed.. he turned to bongani an bongani also ran away...

hao granpa mara....

.

.

.

****nompilo****

me : is the pap ready??

nonhlanhla : yah.. mbali please put it on that cold plate..

mbali : sho...

gloria : i must say nompilo.. your love story is great.. very awesome.. if you could right a book about it, it would sell hai...

me : you think??

mbali : whoooo... if you think of really doing it.. please dont forget to add my story inside.. except the drug issue...

me : your story involves the drug issue so.. if we right your story we put everything and how forward you are..

mbali : moss you gonna make the readers hate me before they even meet me...

lebo ; when they read the end, they will know that indeed you forward but you a fun being to hang around...

nonhlanhla : why dont we right all our stories together and make it one book instead of just

making one one books..??

gloria : great.. maybe my abuse story and finding love will touch someone...

nonhlanhla : and maybe my rape story and being shot might just help someone even though i wont go into detail with it..

me : why?? i mean you got counseling moss??

nonhlanhla : counseling or not.. talking about that day and how i coped after that just brings raw feelings so no...

mbali : maybe my story of being forward and wanting everything and following friends might also touch someone...

lebo : yah.. also my story of trying to keep my baby daddy away from his daughter, even though its embarasing but its owk...

me : great.. mom??

mom : i dont think i want my drug issues in the book...

me ; we dont have to right exactly what went down..

we can just tell your story as you told siya..

mom : well i guess so then... but i feel like i would be judged.. i mean imagin being judged by thousands of people..

me ; only god shall judge.. so dont worry... everyone here might be judged on something..

after a while the guys walked in.... bra G was still not here... and siyas mom was with the kids.. she also came..

they sat down and we dished up and gave everyone their plate... bra G walked in...

kevin : huh.... just in time..

bra G : mhm.. i smell food... good thing becouse i brought more meat, some icecream, some golf sets for the guys...

they cheared...

ayanda : all i know is soccer..

bra G : the legends will teach you.. ohh heres some goodies for the kids...

we thanked him and finished dishing up...

we all sat down eating our food with the kids sitting down...

me : so everyone.. we have thought of something...

gloria : nompilo will be wrighting a book about all of us here...

they looked abit shocked...

me : like our stories... how we found each other...

ayanda : woow.. thats great...

milo : yah.. cool...

sthe : i dont have a story to tell nje...

me : dont worry, but through your mom you will be in the book...

sthe : lol....

me : so, what does everyone say??

siyas mom : but how will we get siyas dads feelings in all this??

siya : believe it or not.. i recently found out that my

dad had a diary.. he wrote all his feelings down.. so we might use it to get how he felt on some occasions..

mom : plus he always told me how he felt in some situations so i too will add..

smanga : so is it a book book, or what??

me : book...

smanga : so we also going to get money once its sold??

me : hahaha.. sure..

bra G : well.. owk...

lebo : what is the book going to be called though??

gloria : from what i know, we all together becouse of nompilo and siya right??

kevin : true

sbongile : true

bongani : true

nonhlanhla : true

mbali : true

ayanda : how??

milo : how??

siya : true... if nompilo hadnt gotten married to me.. they wouldnt have moved to pe.. and yall know what that means..

ayanda ; yah.. nonhlanhla wouldnt have been in that school...

siya ; yah.. and and bongani wouldve not known who his parents are and smanga wouldnt be with us now..

milo ; so the book will be nompilo and siya's love story...

sbongile : its good, but not catchy...

kevin : wait.. nompilo was a village girl at first right?

milo : and siya a, playboy...

sphe : so it could be THE VILLAGE GIRL AND THE PLAYBOY : ARRANGED MARRIAGE

me : ahahahahah.. thats very exposing us from the start...

nonhlanhla thats quite great becouse you not the only village girl.. we all village girls.. well me you and mbali...

me : was ayanda and milo playboys??

milo ; to be honest.. i was..

ayanda : yah . me too...

me : woow... the nhlapo siblings with playboys...

sbongile : yall are actually the pieteron siblings.. remember we married..

me : actually i am a xulu..

siya : i was about to correct you vele...

ayanda : well queen is soon to be ndamase so theres no need to change to pieteron and change again.. too many changed....

we laughed...

me : good...

we looked at milo and he just pretended to not even notice us..

siya : milo??

milo : can i help you??

siya : dont you something to say??

milo : huh.. no i dont...

mbali took a pillow and threw it to him and we laughed...

milo : hahaha.. well mbali should also not change.. shes going to be mrs Mazibuko anytime soon... sooner then you think...

we laughed...

we sat down eating and having fun...

years later

[12/14, 12:56] Zozaness: FINAL

.

.

.

.

.

- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .

****nompilo****

its 3pm in the afternoon.. my kids just droped my grandkids and greatgrandkids... hahahaha i cant believe i could be a mother of so many ofsprings...

i was sitting down with them telling them about a book i wrote... the thing is i didnt right a book and publish it.. i actually wrote a facebook diary...

so i was telling them about it and why they should read it...

so i am 65 right now and the family has grown so much..

my grandkids from milokuhle are siyabonga, sboniso and amanda.. from thembelihle are fezokuhle and sanelisiwe... from sphesihle are sbusiso and nompilo... from minentle its nokukhanyiso... my other two kids philasande and sphelele dont have kids...

then i have 4 greatgrand kids from siyabonga (tumisang and bontle), fezokuhle (lelo) and nokukhanyiso (temoho)...

see how big we have grown?? hahaha... crazy...

me : see?? gogo knows alot about life.. so gogo doesnt juge.. unty mbali and aunty nonhlanhla also went through alot aswell....

bontle : gogo!! can you read the book for us as a bedtime story??

me : well bontle.. mabye, i will try...

at that time siya walked in...

all my greatgrandkids ran to him...

them : grandpa!!!

siya : ohhhh.. full house i see..

lelo : gogo was telling us about a book she wrote on facebook...

siya : really?? did any of yall read it yet??

sboniso : i am actually checking it right now.. i mean i never read facebook diaries but with 19 000 likes i am sure its great hay..

me : it is.. you should read the comments.. they think i am funny like a comedian and they always tell me that they love me.. they were very sad that i had to close and finish the page.. some were even asking for season 2...

sboniso : why dont you right season 2.. combine all our stories as your children??

me : have you counted how many yall are?? the book would never end..

we laughed..

fezo : i also just checked it.. i am going to read it.. i really want to know the history of granny and grandpas undying love...

me : yes.. while it still was mamas and papas.. and

its still mamas and papas..

we laughed...

amanda : tjho its on page 136.. yho... will i be able to go back and read?? gogo dont you have a full book written in your laptop or phone??

me : you mean a PDF??

amanda : i didnt make a PDF but all the inserts are in the laptop so you have read from it...

nompilo : am just glad i am the main character...

we laughed..

sanelisiwe : you just named after gogo.. hao...

siyabonga : and i am named after grandpa.. so nompilo we should date...

we laughed..

me : inestet...

we laughed...

siya (papas) : just go read and learn from it owk?

they all agreed....

me : owk my grandkids.. i am going to take a quick nap so that when your aunties and other grandchildren come then i am refreshed...

nokukhanyiso : owk gogo.. so long we will use your laptop to start reading...

me : go ahead..

amanda : and we will share with our friends and ask them to share.. in no time the page will be having 100 000 likes...

me : hahahha... so many likes...

sbusiso : how long did it take you to write the story??

nompilo : must be 136 days.. i know of other stories were admins post 1 insert a day.. sometimes stay away for few days and come back a week after or a month after..

me : well i started the page on the 26th of April, but started righting on the 8th of june... with 100 likes.... and ended the page on the 16th of september same year...

sanelisiwe : so it took you 3 months and 8 days??

me : if you do the maths yes...

amanda : so you were consistence and loyal to your readers??

me : yes.. they motivated me and i loved writing for them becouse i loved the story so i couldnt stay away.. i would even post 12 inserts in one day...

them : 12??

me : yes...

siya (papas) : she was always on her laptop.. everytime.. i also saw the passion she had doing it.. and i would also sit with her and read as she types...

me : and when we get inboxes from our readers, i would literaly be super happy... my readers even loved me to the point that they would buy me data or airtime for me to keep going.. i never felt so appreciated by someone who i dont know...

siya : i sometimes felt jelouse becouse they were betching her...

they laughed...

sbusiso : wow gogo... you mustve been a very loyal

and good writer to get 19 000 likes in just 3 months and 8 days...

me : yah.. i also dont believe that me nompilo, actually wrote that diary.. i really dont believe.. but you know what would really make me happy??

they shook their heads...

me : if every insert could have more then 10k likes since i have 19000 page likes.. just 10k likes a insert...

fezokuhle : it will happen gogo.. have faith..

me : i always had faith....hhaha.. owk.. papas..

papas : yes..

me : please help me up.. i want to go rest..

papas : owk...

he helped me up and walked to my room..

fezokuhle : we will prepare you food gogo...

papas : make porridge.. owk

they agreed...

we got in the room...and sat on the bed...

me : (smiles)... we have really made it papas..

him : yes... we have...

me : mhm... were is milokuhle??

him : i left him outside..

me : owk.. how is lihle doing as a chief??

him : he is doing owk,.. as long as he listens to kuhle then all will be owk..

me : owk...

him : rest mamas, i told the grandkids to make porridge for you and i...

me : hahaha.. you miss the first days of our love story hay...

him : very.. but i am more happy at where we are now..

me : life really moves on and i cant believe it got us here.. i just love GOD...

him : hahaha.. i love sending time with my

greatgrandkids and grandkids... even though i am old now..

me : the bones dont allow us now...

him ; lol....hahaha..

i got in my blanket and went to sleep...

he kissed me on the forehead and put the blanket right over my body... and walked out...

.

.

i am happy to have shared my journey with yall and so happy that you have enjoyed...

.

.

LOVE YOU ALL....

.